

THE
NEW TESTAMENT
of our Lord and
Saviour IESVS
CHRIST.

Newly translated out of
the Originall Greeke : -
with the former Translation
diligently compared and
revised, by his Maie-
sties speciall com-
mandement.

Imprinted at London by
Bouham Norton and John
Bill, Printers to the
Kings most Excel-
lent Majestie.
1625.

Come Princelie.



¶ THE ORDER OF THE
Bookes of the New Testament,
with their proper names, and
number of Chapters.

The Gospel written by Matthew,	
hath Chapters	28
By Marke,	16
By Luke,	24
By Iohn,	21
The Actes of the Apostles,	28

The Epistles.

Paul to the Romanes,	16
The first to the Corinthians,	16
The second to the Corinthians,	13
To the Galatians,	6
To the Ephesians,	6
To the Philippians,	4
To the Colosians,	4
The first to the Thessalonians,	5
The second to the Thessalonians,	3
The first to Timothy,	6
The second to Timothy,	4
To Titus,	3
To Philemon,	one
The Epistle to the Hebrewes,	13
The Epistle of James,	5
The first Epistle of Peter,	5
The second Epistle of Peter,	3
The first Epistle of Iohn,	5
The second Epistle of Iohn,	one
The third Epistle of Iohn,	one
The Epistle of Jude,	one
The Reuelation of Iohn,	22

¶ THE

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO SAINT MATTHEW,

CHAP. I.

1 The genealogie of Christ. 18 His conception and birth. 21 His names.

He booke of the generation of Iesus Christ, the sonne of David, the sonne of Abraham.

2 Abraham begat Isaac, and Isaac begate Jacob, and Jacob begate Iudas, and his brethren.

3 And Iudas begate Pharez and Zara of Thamar, and Pharez begat Esrom, and Esrom begate Aram,

4 And Aram begat Aminadab, and Aminadab begat Naasson, and Naasson begat Salmon.

5 And Salmon begat Boes of Rachab, and Boes begat Obed of Ruth, and Obed begat lesie.

6 And lesie begat David the King, and David the King begat Solomon, of her whos had beene the wife of Vrias.

7 And Solomon begat Roboam, and Roboam begat Abia, and Abia begat Asa.

8 And Asa begat Iesaphat, and Iesaphat begat Iermain, and Iermain begat Ozias.

9 And Ozias begat Joatham, and Joatham begat Achas, and Achas begat Ezekias.

10 And Ezekias begat Manasses, and Manasses begat Amon, and Amon begat Iosias.

11 And Iosias begat Iechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon.

12 And after they were brought to Babylon, Iechonias begat Salathiel, and Salathiel begat Zorobabel.

13 And Zorobabel begat Abind, and Abind begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begat Azor.

14 And Azor begat Zadoc, and Zadoc begat Achim, and Achim begat Eliud.

15 And Eliud begat Eleazar, and Eleazar begat Mattthan, and Mattthan begat Jacob.

16 And Jacob begat Ioseph the husband of Mary, of whom was borne Iesus, who is called Christ.

S. M A T T H E W.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to Dauid are fourteene generations : And from Dauid, vntill the carrying away into Babylon are fourteene generations : and from the carrying away into Babylon vnto Christ, are soureteene generations.

18 ¶ Now the birth of Iesus Christ was on this wise : when as his mother Mary was espoused to Ioseph (before they came together) she was found with child of the holy Ghost.

19 Then Ioseph her husband being a just man, and not willing to make her a publike example, was minded to put her away priuily.

20 But while he thought on these things, behold, the Angel of y^e Lord appeared vnto him in a dreame, saying, Ioseph, thou sonne of Dauid, feare not to take vnto thee Mary thy wife : for that which is con-cerned in her, is of the holy Ghost.

21 And shee shall bring forth a sonne, and thou shalt call his Name Iesus : for he shall save his people from their sinnes.

22 ¶ Now all this was done, that it might bee fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying,

23 Behold, a virgine shall be with childe, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his Name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with vs.)

24 Then Ioseph being raised from sleepe, did as the Angel of the Lord had bidden him, and tooke vnto him his wife :

25 And knew her not till she had brought forth her first borne son, and he called his Name Iesus.

C H A P. 11.

1 The wise men come to Christ, & worship him.

14 Ioseph fleeth into Egypt.

NOW when Iesus was borne in Bethlehem of Iudea, in the daies of Herod the king, behold there came WISEMEN from the East to Jerusalem,

3 Saying, Where is he that is borne King of the Lewes ? for we have seene his starre in the East, and are come to worship him.

3 When Herod the king had heard these things he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him.

4 And when hee had gathered all the chiefe Priests and Scribes of the people together, hee demanded

C H A P. II.

manded of them where Christ shouold be borne.

5 And they said vnto him, In Bethlehem of Iudea : for thus it is written by the Prophet.

6 And thou Bethlehem is the land of Iuda, art not the least among the Princes of Iuda : for out of thee shall come a Gouvernour, that shall rule my people Israel.

7 Then Herod when hee had prynily called the Wisedome, enquired of them diligently what tyme the Starre appeared :

8 And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Goe, and search diligently for the young child, and when ye haue found him, bring mee word againe, that I may come, and worship him also.

9 When they had heard the king, they departed, and loe, the Starre which they saw in the East, went before them, till it came and stoo d ouer where the yong child was.

10 When they saw the Starre, they rejoyced with exceeding great joy.

11 ¶ And when they were come into the house : they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell downe, and worshipped him : and when they had opened their treasures, they presented vnto him gifts, gold, and frankincense, and myrrhe.

12 And being warned of God in a dreame, that they shoulde not returne to Herod, they departed into their owne countrey another way.

13 And whrn they were depar ted, behold, the Angel of the Lord appeareth to Ioseph in a dreame, saying, Arise, and take the young child, and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there vntill I bring thee word : for Herod will secke the young child to destroy him.

14 When he arose, he tooke the young child, and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt :

15 And was there vntill the death of Herod, that it might bee fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the Prophet, saying, Out of Egypt haue I called my Sonne.

16 ¶ Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the Wisedome, was exceeding wroth, and sent foorth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two yeres

M A T T H E W.

old, and wider, according to the time, which she had diligently enquired of the Wisemen.

17 Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the Prophet, saying,

18 In Rima was there a voyce heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning; Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not.

19 ¶ But when Herod was dead, b-holden an Angel of y Lerd appeareth in a dreame to Joseph in Egypt,

20 Saying, Arise, and take the yong child and his mother, and goe into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the yong child's life.

21 And he arose, and tooke the yong childe, and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

22 But when he heard that Archelans did reigne in Iudea in the roome of his father Herod, hee was afraid to goe thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in adreame, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee.

23 And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

C H A P. III.

1 John preacheþ 4 His apparel and meate. 5 Hee baptizeth. 8 the fruct of penitance.

IN those dayes came John the Baptist preaching in the wildernes of Iudea.

2 And saying, Repent ye: for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

3 For this is he that was spoken of by the Prophet Elias, saying, The voyce of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 And the same John had his rayment of camels haire, and a leatherne girdle about his loynes, and his meat was locuts and wild hony.

5 Then went out to him Hierusalem and all Iudea, and all the region round about Iordan.

6 And were baptizèd of him in Iordan, confessing their sinnes.

7 ¶ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadduces come to his Baptisme, he said vnto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee

C H A P. III.

flee from the wrath to come ?

8. Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance.

9. And thinke not to say within your selues, Wee
have Abraham to our father: for I say vnto you, that
God is able of these stones to raise vp children vnto
Abraham.

10. And now also the axe is laid to the roote of
the trees: Therefore every tree which bringeth not
forth good fruit, is hewen downe & cast into the fire.

11. I indeed baptize you with water vnto repen-
tance: but he that commeth after mee is mightier
then I, whose shooes I am not worthy to beare, he
shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire.

12. Whose fanne is his hand, & he will thorowly
purge his floore, & gather his wheat into the garner:
but will burne vp the chaffe with vnguentable fire.

13. ¶ Then commeth Iesus from Galilee to Ior-
dan vnto Iohn, to be baptized of him:

14. But Iohn forbad him, saying, I haue neede to
be baptized of thee, and comwest thou to me?

15. And Iesus answering, said vnto him, Suffer it
to be so now: for thus it becommeth vs to fulfill all
righteousnesse. Then he suffered him.

16. And Iesus when hee was baptized, went vp
straightway out of the water, and loe, the heauens
were opened vnto him, and he saw the Spirit of God
descending like a dove, and lighting vpon him.

17. And loe, a voyce from heauen, saying, This is
my beloved Sonne, in whom I am well pleased.

C H A P. IIII.

¶ Christ is tempted and overcometh. 17 Begynneth
to preach, 18 Calleth his disciples.

T

hen was Iesus led vp of the Spirit into the wil-
dernes to be tempted of the deuell.

2. And when he had falleon forty dayes and fourty
nights, he was afterward an hungred.

3. And when the Tountre came to him, hee said,
If thou be the Sonne of God, command that these
stones be made bread.

4. But he answered and said, It is written, Man
shall not live by bread alone, but by euery word
that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

5. Then the deuell take ihim vp into the holy
Cittie, and sette ihim on a pinnacle of the Temple.

S. M A T T H E W.

6 And faith vnto him, If thou bee the Sonne of God, Cast thy selfe downe : For it is written, He shall gine his Angels charge concerning thee, and in their hands they shall beate thee vp, leit at any time thou dath thy foot against a stome.

7 Iesus said vnto him, It is written againe, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

8 Againe the devill taketh him vp into an exceeding high mountaine, and sheweth him all the kingdomes of the world, and the glory of them :

9 And faith vnto him, All these things will I giue thee, if thou wilt fall downe and worship me.

10 Then saith Iesus vnto him, Get thee hence, Sa-tan : for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him onely shalt thou serue.

11 Then the devill leaueth him, and behold, An-gels came, and ministred vnto him.

12 ¶ Now when Iesus had heard that John was cast into prison, he departed into Galilee.

13 And leauing Nazareth, hee came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is vpon the sea coast, in the bor-ders of Zabulon and Naphthali :

14 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying,

15 The land of Zabulon, and the land of Neph-thali, by the way of the Sea beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles :

16 The people that sate in darkeuenesse saw great light : and to them that sate in the region and sha-dow of death, light is sprung vp.

17 ¶ From that time Iesus began to preach, and to say, Repeat, for the kingdome of heauen is at hand.

18 ¶ And Iesus walking by the Sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the Sea, (for they were fishers.)

19 And he saith vnto them, Follow me: and I will make you fishers of men.

20 And they straightway left their nets, and fol-lowed him.

21 And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, Iames the sonne of Zebdee, and Iohn his brother, in a shipp with Zebdee their father, men-ding their nets: and he called them.

22 And

C H A P. V.

22 And they immediately left the ship, and their father, and followed him.

23 ¶ And Iesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their Synagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease among the people.

24 And his fame went throughtwout all Syria : and they brought vnto him all sicke people that were taken with diuers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunaticke, and those that had the palse, and he healed them.

25 And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, & from Decapolis, & from Hierusalem, and from Iudea, and from beyond Iordan.

C H A P. V.

3 Who are blessed. 13 The Apostles are the salt and light of the world.

A nd seeing the multitudes, hee went vp into a mountaine : and when he was set, his disciples came vnto him.

2 And hee opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,

3 Blessed are the poore in spirit : for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

4 Blessed are they that mourne : for they shall be comforted.

5 Blessed are the meek : for they shall inherite the earth.

6 Blessed are they which doe hunger and thirst after rigthenesse for they shall be filled.

7 Blessed are the mercifull ; for they shall obtaine mercy.

8 Blessed are they pure in heart for they shal see God.

9 Blessed are the peacemakers : for they shall be called the children of God.

10 Blessed are they which are persecuted for rigtheousnesse sake for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

11 Blessed are ye when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of euill against you falsly for my sake.

12 Reioyce and be exceeding glad : for great is your reward in heaven : For so persecuted they the Prophets which were before you.

S. M A T T H E W.

13 ¶ Yee are the salt of the earth: but if the salt haue lost his savor, wherewith shall it bee salted? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to bee cast out, and to be troden vnder foot of men.

14 Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on a hill, cannot be hid.

15 Neither doe men light a candle, and put it vnder a bushell: but on a candlestick, and it giueth light vnto all that are in the house.

16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good workes, and gloriſe your Father which is in heauen.

17 ¶ Thinke not that I am come to destroy the Law or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy but to fulfill.

18 For verely I say vnto you, Till heauen and earth passe, one iote, or one tittle shall in no wise passe from the Law, till all be fulfilled.

19 Whosoever therefore shall breake one of these least Commandements, and shall teach men so, hee shall be called the least in the kingdome of heauen: but whosoever shall doe, and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdome of heauen.

20 For I say vnto you, That except your rightewſnesſe shall exceede the rightewſnesſe of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdome of heauen.

21 ¶ Yee haue heard, that it was ſaid by them of old time, thou shalt not kill, and, Whosoever shall kill, ſhall be in danger of the iudgement.

22 But I ſay vnto you, y whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, ſhall be in danger of the iudgement: and whosoever ſhall ſay to his brother, Racha, ſhall be in danger of the counſell: but whosoever ſhall ſay, Thou foole, ſhalbe in danger of hell fire.

23 Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the Altar, and there remembreſt that thy brother hath ought againſt thee:

24 Leave therethy gift before the Altar, and goe thy way, firſt be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

25 Agree with thine aduersary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him: leaſt at any time the aduersary deliuer thee to the Judge, and the Judge deliuer

C H A P. V.

deliver thee to the Officer, & thou be cast into prison;

26 Verely, I say vnto thee, thou shalt by no meaens come out thence, till y^e hast paid the vtmost farthing.

27 ¶ Yee haue heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery.

28 But I say vnto you, That whosoeuer looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.

29 And if thy right eye offend thee, plucke it out, and cast it from thee: For it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

30 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: For it is profitable for thee, that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

31 It hath beeene said, Whosoeuer shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of diuorcement.

32 But I say vnto you, That whosoeuer shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoeuer shall marry her that is diuorced, committeth adultery.

33 ¶ Againe, ye haue heard that it hath been said by them of olde time, Thou shalt not sware thy selfe, but shalt performe vnto the Lord thine othes.

34 But I say vnto you, Sware not at all, neither by heauen, for it is Gods thone:

35 Nor by the earth, for it is his footstoole: neither by Hierusalem, for it is the citie of the great King:

36 Neither shalt thou sware by thy head, because thou canst not make one haire, white or blacke.

37 But let your communication be Yes, yea: Nay, nay: for whatioever is more then these, commeth of euill.

38 ¶ Yee haue heard that it hath beeene said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.

39 But I say vnto you, That yee resist not euill: but whosoeuer shall smite thee on the right cheeke turne to him the other also.

40 And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him haue thy cloake also.

41 And whosoeuer shall compell thee to goe a mile, goe with him twaine.

42 Give to him that asketh thee: and from him that

S. M A T T H E W.

that would borrow of thee, turne not thou away.

43 ¶ Ye haue heard that it hath beeene said, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour and hate thine enemie:

44 But I say vnto you, loue your enemies, blesse them that curse you, doe good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully vsē you, and persecute you.

45 That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heauen: for he maketh his Sunne to rise on the euill and on the good, and sendeth raine on the iust, and on the vnjust.

46 For if ye loue them which loue you, what reward haue ye? doe not even the Publicanes ſame?

47 And if ye ſalute your brethren ouely, what do you more then others? Doe not even the Publicanes ſo?

48 Be ye therefore perfect, euen as your Father which is in heauen is perfect.

C H A P. VI.

4 Of almes, 5 Prayer, 14 Forgiuing, 19 Our adu-
ſure, 24 God and Mammon.

Take heede that ye doe not your almes before men, to be ſcene of them: otherwise yee haue no reward of your Father which is in heauen.

2 Therefore when thou doeft thinke almes, doe not ſound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites doe in the Synagogues, and in the ſtreetes, that they may haue glory of men. Verily, I ſay vnto you, they haue their reward.

3 But when thou doeft almes, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth:

4 That thine almes may be in ſecret: And thy Father which ſeeth in ſecret, himſelfe ſhall reward thee openly.

5 ¶ And when thou prayeft, thou ſhalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they loue to pray ſtanding in the Synagogues, and in the corners of the ſtreets, that they may bee ſcene of men. Verily, I ſay vnto you, they haue their reward.

6 But thou when thou prayeft, enter into thy cloſet, and when thou haſt ſlid the doore, pray to thy Father which is in ſecret, and thy Father which ſeeth in ſecret ſhall reward thee openly.

7 But when yee pray, vſe not vaine repetitions, as

the

C H A P. VI.

the heathen doe. For they thinke that they shall be heard for their much speaking.

8 Be not ye therefore like vnto them : for your Father knoweth what things yee haue neede of before yee aske him.

9 After this manner therefore pray ye : Our Fa-
ther, which art in heauen, hallowed be thy Name.

10 Thy kingdome come , Thy will be done , in
earth as it is in heauen.

11 Give vs this day our daily bread.

12 And forgive vs our debts , as we forgive our
debtors.

13 And lead vs not into temptation , but deliue
us from euill : for thine is the kingdome , and the
power, and the glory, for euer . Amen.

14 For if yee forgive men their trespasses, your
heauenly Father will also forgive you.

15 But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, nei-
ther will your Father forgive your trespasses.

16 ¶ Moreover, when ye fast, be not as the hypo-
crites, of a sad countenance : for they disfigure their
faces, that they may appeare vnto men to fast : Ver-
sely, I say vnto you, they haue their reward.

17 But thou when thou fastest, annoyle thine head
and wash thy face:

18 That thou appeare not vnto men to fast, but
vnto thy Father which is in secret : and thy Father
which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

19 ¶ Lay not vp for your selues treasures vpon
earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where
theenes breaketh row, and steale.

20 But lay vp for your selues treasures in heauen,
where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, & where
theenes doe not breaketh row nor steale.

21 For where your treasure is, there will your
heart be also.

22 The light of the body is the eye : if there-
fore thine eye be fingle, thy whole body shall be full
of light.

23 But if thine eye be euill, thy whole body shall
be full of darknesse. If therefore the light that is in
thee be darknesse : how great is that darknesse ?

24 ¶ No man can serue two masters : for either
he will hate the one and loue the other, or els he will
hold

S. M A T T H E W.

hold to the one, & despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and Mammon.

25 Therefore, I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shal eat, or what ye shal drinke, nor yet for your body what yee shall put on: Is not the life more then meat? and the body then raiment?

26 Behold the foules of the ayre: for they sow not, neither doe they reape, nor gather into barnes, yet your heauenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better then they?

27 Which of you by taking thought, can adde one cubite to his stature?

28 And why take yee thought for raiment? Consider the lillies of the field, how they grow: they toile not, neither doe they spinne.

29 And yet I say unto you, that euen Solomon in all his glory, was not arrayed like one of these.

30 Wherefore if God so clothe y^e grasse of y^e field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oen, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?

31 Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or what shall we drinke? or wherewithall shall we be clothed?

32 (For after all these things do the Gentiles seeke;) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.

33 But seeke yee first the kingdome of God, and his righteousness, and all these things shall be added vnto you.

34 Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of it selfe; sufficient vnto the day, is the euill thereof.

C H A P. V I I.

1 Christ reproacheth rash judgement, & forbiddeth so cast holy things to dogs. 13 The wide and strait gao.

I Vdge not, that ye be not iudged.

2 For with what judgement yee judge, ye shall be iudged: and with what measure ye mette, it shall be measured to you againe.

3 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brothers eye, but considerest not the beamie that is in thine owne eye?

4 Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let mee pull out the mote out of thine eye, and behold, a beamie is in thine owne eye? 5 Then

CHAP. VII.

5 Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine owne eye: and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brothers eye.

6 ¶ Give not that which is holy vnto the dogs, neither cast yee your pearles before swine, lest they trample them vnder their feet, and curne againe and tent you.

7 ¶ Ask, and it shall be givene you: seek, and ye shall finde: knocke, and it shall be opened vnto you.

8 For every one that asketh, receiueth: and hee that seeketh findeth: and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

9 Or what man is there of you, whom if his sonne aske bread, will he giue him a stone?

10 Or if he aske a fish, will he giue him a serpent?

11 If ye then being euill, know how to giue good gifts vnto your childeuen, how much more shall your Father which is in heauen giue good things to them that aske him?

12 Therefore all things whatsoeuer yee would that men shoulde doe to you, do ye euен so to them: for this is the Law and the Prophets.

13 ¶ Enter ye in at the strait gate, for wide is the gate, and broad is the way that leadeth to destruction, and many there be that goe in thereat:

14 Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way which leadeth vnto life, & few there be that find it.

15 ¶ Beware of false Prophets which come to you in theapes clothing, but inwardly they are rauening wolves.

16 Ye shall know them by their fruits: Doe men gather grapes of thornes, or figs of thistles?

17 Euen so euery good tree bringeth forth good fruit: but a corrupt tree bringeth forth euill fruit.

18 A good tree cannot bring forth euill fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

19 Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen downe and cast into the fire.

20 Wherfore by their fruits ye shall know them.

21 ¶ Not euery one that saith vnto mee, Lord, Lord, shal enter into the kingdome of heauen: but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heauen.

22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, bane we not prophesied in thy Name? and in thy Name

Name

S. M A T T H E W.

Name hane cast out deuils? and in thy Name done
many wonderfull workes?

23 And then will I professe vnto them, I never
knew you: depart from me, ye that worke iniuity,

24 ¶ Therefore, whosoever heareth these sayings
of mine, and doth them, I will liken him to a wise
man, which built his house vpon a rocke:

25 And the raine descended, and the floods came,
and the winds blew, and beat vpon that house: and
it fell not, for it was founded vpon a rocke;

26 And every one that heareth these sayings of
mine, and doth them not, shall be likened vnto a
foolish man, which built his house vpon the sand:

27 And the raine descended, and the floods came,
and the winds blew and beat vpon that house, and
it fell, and great was the fall of it.

28 And it came to passe, when Iesus had ended
these sayings, the people were astonisched at his
doctrine:

29 For he taught them as one hauing authoritie,
and not as the Scribes.

C H A P. V I I I.

2 Christ cleanseth the Leper. 28 The deuils driven
out of two men, 31 goe into the swine.

W Hen he was come downe from the mountaine,
great multitudes followed him.

2 And behold, there came a leper, & worshipped
him, saying, Lord, if y' wilt, thou canst make me cleane

3 And Iesus put forth his hand, and touched
him, saying, I w'll, be thou cleane. And immediatly
his leprosie was cleansed.

4 And Iesus saith vnto him, see thou tell no
man, but goe thy way, shew thy selfe to the Priest,
and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a te-
stimony vnto them.

5 ¶ And when Iesus was entred into Capernaum,
there came vnto him a Centurion, beseeching him,

6 And saying, Lord, my seruant lyeth at home
sick of the palsey, grieuously tormented.

7 And Iesus saith vnto him, I will come, and
heale him.

8 The Centurion answered, and said, Lord I am
not worthy y thou shouldeit come vnder my roose:
but speake y word only, & my seruant shalbe healed.

9 For

CHAP. VIII.

9 For I am a man vnder authority, having soule-s vnder me, and I say to this man, Goe, and he goeth: and to another, Come, and he commeth: and to my servant, Doe this, and he doth it.

10 When Iesus heard it, he marueiled, and said, to them that followed, Verely I say vnto you, I have not found so great faith, no not in Israel.

11 And I say vnto you, that many shall come from the East and West, and shall sit downe with Abraham, and Isaac, & Jacob, in the kingdome of heauens.

12 But the children of the kingdome shall be cast out into outer darknesse: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

13 And Iesus said vnto the Centurion, Go thy way, and as thou hast beleeved, so be it done vnto thee. And his servant was healed in the selfsame houre.

14 ¶ And when Iesus was come into Peters house, he saw his wifes mother laid, and sickle of a feuer:

15 And hee touched her hand, and the feuer left her: and she arose and ministred vnto them.

16 ¶ When the euene was come, they brought into him many that were possessed with devils, and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sickle:

17 That it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by Elias the Prophet, saying, Himselfe tooke our infirmitie, and bare our sicknesse.

18 ¶ Now, when Iesus saw great multitudes about him, he gaue commandement to depart vnto the other side.

19 And a certayne Scribe came, and said vnto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.

20 And Iesus saith vnto him, The foxes haue holes, and the birds of the ayre haue nests: but the Sonne of man hath not where to lay his head.

21 And another of his discipiles said vnto him, Lord, suffer me first to goe, and bury my father.

22 But Iesus said vnto him, Follow me, and let the dead bury the dead.

23 ¶ And when he was entred into a ship, his discipiles followed him.

24 And behold, there arose a great tempeste in the Sea, insomuch that the ship was couered with the wawes: but he was asleepe,

25 And

S. M A T T H E W.

25 And his disciples came to him, & awoke him, saying, Lord save vs we perish.

26 And he saith vnto them, Why are ye scarefull, O ye of little faith? Then he arose and rebuked the winds and the sea, and there was a great calme.

27 But the men marueled, saying, What maner of man is this, yea euен the winds and the sea obey him?

28 ¶ And when he was come to the other side, into the countrey of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with deuils coming out of the Tombes, excreting fierce, so that no man might passe by sy way.

29 And behold, they cryed out laying, What haue we to do with thee, Iesus thou Sonne of God: Art thou come hither to torment vs before thy time?

30 And there was a good way off from them, an herd of many swine feeding.

31 So the deuils besought him, laying, If thou cast vs out, suffer vs to goe away into the herd of swine.

32 And he said vnto them, Go. And when they were come out, they went into the herd of swine, and behold, the whole heard of swine ran violently down a steepe place into the sea, & perished in the waters.

33 And they that kept them, fled, and went their wayes into the citie, and told every thing, and what was befallen to the possessed of the deuils.

34 And behold, the whole citie came out to meet Iesus: and when they saw him, they besought him that he would depart out of their coasts.

C H A P. I X.

¶ Christ curreth the pathie: 9 calleth Matthew, 10 satesh with Publicanes and sinners.²

¶ And he entred into a ship, and passed ouer, and came into his owne citie.

3 And behold, they brought to him a man sicke of the palsey, lying on a bed: and Iesus seeing their faith, laid vnto the sickle of the palsey, Sonne, be of good cheere, thy sinnes bee forgiuen thee.

4 And behold, certaine of the Scribes said within themse ^{is}, This man blasphemeth.

4 And Iesus knowing their thoughts said, Wherefore thinke ye evill in your hearts?

5 For whiche is easier to say, Thy sinnes be forgiuen thee, or to say, Arise, and walke?

6 But that yee may know that the Sonne of man hath

C H A P. IX.

bath power on earth to forgive sines, (Then saith he to the sickle of the palse) Arise , take vp thy bed, and goe vnto thine houle.

7 And he arose, and departed to his houle.

8 But whew the multitude saw it, they marveiled, & glorified God, which had given such power vnto men

9 ¶ And as Iesu palled soorth from thence , hee saw a man named Matthew , sitting at the receiue of caittaine : and he saith vnto him, Follow me, and he arose and followed him .

10 ¶ And it came to passe as Iesu satte at meat in the houle, behold, many Publicanes and sinners came and satte downe with him and his discipules.

11 And when the Pharisées saw is , they said vnto his discipules, Why eateth your Master with Publicanes and sinners ?

12 But when Iesu heard that, he said vnto them, They that be whole , need not a Phisician, but they that are sickle.

13 But goe yee and learne what that meaneth, I will haue mercy and not sacrifice : for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinnes to repenteance.

14 ¶ Then came to him the discipules of Iohn, saying, Whys doe we and the Pharisées faste, but thy discipules faste not ?

15 And Iesu said vnto them, Can the children of the bride chamber mourne , as long as the bridegroome is with them? But the dayes will come when the bridegroome shall bee taken from them, and then shall they faste.

16 No man putteth a piece of new cloth vnto an old garment : for that which is put in to fill it vp, taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse.

17 Neither doe men put new wine into old bottels : else the bottels breake, and the wine runneth out, and the bottels perish : but they put new wine into new bottels, and both are preserved.

18 ¶ While he spake these things vnto them , behold, there came a certaine ruler & worshipped him, saying, My daughter is enen now dead ; but come & lay thy hand vpon her, and thee shall live.

19 And Iesu arose, and followed him, and so did his discipules.

20 ¶ (And behold , a woman which was diseased with

S. M A T T H E W.

with an issue of blood twelve yeeres , came behinde him and touched the hemme of his garment.

21 For she said within her selfe, If I may but touch his garment, I shalbe whole.

22 But Iesus turned him about , and when he saw her, he said, Daughter be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole from that houre.)

23 And when Iesus came into the rulers house, and saw the minstrels, & the people making a noise,

24 He said vnto them, Giue place, for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorne.

25 But when the people were put forth, he went in, and tooke her by the hand, and the maid arose.

26 And the same thereto went abroad into all that land.

27 ¶ And when Iesns departed thence. two blind men followed him, crying, and saying, Thou sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on vs.

28 And when he was come into the house , the blind men came to him : and Iesus saith vnto them, Beleeue ye that I am able to doe this ? They said vnto him, Yea, Lord.

29 Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it vnto you.

30 And their eyes were opened, and Iesus straitly charged them, saying, See that no man know it.

31 But they, when they were departed , spread abroad his fame in all that countrey.

32 ¶ As they went out , b-hold, they brought to him a dumbe man possessed with a deuill.

33 And when the deuill was cast out the dumbe spake, and the multitudes marueiled, saying, It was never so seene in Israel.

34 But the Pharisees said, Hee casteth out the deuils through the prince of the deuils.

35 And Iesus went about all the cities and vilages, teaching in their Syuagogues, and preaching the Gospel of the kingdome, and healing euery sicknesse, and euery disease among the people.

36 ¶ But when he saw ſ multitudes he was moued with compassion on them, becaſe they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as ſheep having no ſhepherd.

37 Then ſaith hee vnto his Disciples , The har-
vest

C H A P. X.

Muchly is plenteous, but the labourers are few.

38 Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

C H A P. X.

1 The apostles are sent to do miracles. 5 & to preach

A nd when hee had called vnto him his twelue disciples, hee gaue them power against uncleane spirits to cast them out, and to heale all manner of sickenesse, and all manner of disease.

2 Now the names of the twelue Apostles are these: the first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, Iames the sonne of Zebedee, and John his brother.

3 Philip, and Bartholomew, Thomas and Matthew the Publicane, Iames the sonne of Alpheus, and Lebbeas, whose forname was Thaddeus:

4 Simon the Canaanite, and Iudas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

5 These twelue Iesus sent foorth, and commanded them, saying, Goe not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any citie of the Samaritanes enter ye not:

6 But goe rather to the lost sheepe of the house of Israel.

7 And as yee goe, preach, saying, The kingdome of heaven is at hand:

8 Heale the sicke, cleanse the lepers, rais the dead, cast out deuils: freely ye haue receiuied freely give.

9 Provide neither gold, nor siluer, nor brasie in your purses:

10 Nor scrip for your iourney, neither two coates, neither shooes, nor yet stanes: (for the workeman is worthy of his meate.)

11 And into whatsoeuer citie or towne yee shall enter, inquire who in it is worthy, and there abide till yee goe thence.

12 And when yee come into an house, salute it.

13 And if the house bee worthy, let your peace come vpon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace retorne to you.

14 And whosoeuer shall not receive you, nor heare your words: when yee depart out of that house or citie, shake off the dust of your feet.

15 Verily I say vnto you, it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodome and Gomorrah in the day of judgement.

S. M A T T H E W.

judgement, then for that city.

16 ¶ Behold, I send you forth as sheepe in the midst of wolues: bee yee therefore wise as serpents, and harmelesse as doves.

17 But beware of men: for they will deliver you vp to the Councells, and they will scourge you in their Synagogues.

18 And yee shall be brought before gouernours and Kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles.

19 But when they deliver you vp, take no thought how or what yee shall speake: for it shall be given you in that same houre what yee shall speake.

20 For it is not yee that speake, but the spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.

21 And the brother shall deliver vp the brother to death, & yee father & child: & the children shall rise vp against their parents, & caule them to be put to death.

22 And yee shalbe hated of all men for my Name sake: but he that endureth to the end shalbe sauued.

23 But when they persecute you in this citie, flee ye into another: for verely I say vnto you, Yee shall not haue gone ouer the cities of Israel, till the Sonne of man be come.

24 The disciple is not aboue his master, nor the servant aboue his lord.

25 It is enough for the disciple that hee be as his master, and the servant as his lord: If they haue calld the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his houehold?

26 Feare them not therefore: for there is nothing couerted, that shall not be reuealed, and hid, that shall not be knowne.

27 What I tell you in darknesse, that speake yet in light: and what yee heare in the eare, that preach ye vpon the house tops.

28 And feare not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soule: but rather feare him which is able to destroy both soule & body in hell.

29 Are not two sparowes sold for a farthing: and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father?

30 But yee very haire of your head are all numbered,

31 Fear yee not therefore, yee are of more va-

lue

the

the Gospd

CHAP. XI.

He then many sparrowes.

32 Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heauen.

33 But whosoever shall denie me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heauen.

34 Thinke not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword.

35 For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against the mother in law.

36 And a mans foes shall be they of his owne household.

37 Hee that loueth father or mother more then me, is not worthy of me, and he that loueth sonne or daughter more then me, is not worthy of me.

38 And hee that taketh not his crosse, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me.

39 Hee that findeth his life shall lose it: and hee that loseth his life for my sake, shall find it.

40 ¶ He that receiueth you, receiueth me: and he that receiueth me, receiueth him that sent me.

41 Hee that receiueth a Prophet in the name of a Prophet, shall receive a Prophets reward: and hee that receiueth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous mans reward.

42 And whosoeuer shall give to drinke vnto one of these littest ones, a cup of cold water onely, in the name of a disciple, verely I say vnto you, he shall in nowise lose his reward.

CHAP. XI.

1 John sendeth to Christ. 7 Christ's answer.

A Nd it come to passe, when Iesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, hee departed thence, to teach & to preach in their cities.

2 Now when John had heard in the prison the workes of Christ, he sent two of his disciples,

3 And said vnto him, Art thou hee that shouldest come? or doe we looke for another?

4 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Go and shew John againe those things which ye do heare and see.

5 The blinde receive their sight, and the lame walke, the leapers are cleansed, and the deafe heare, the dead are raised vp, and the poore haue the Gospel preached vnto them.

6 dnd

S. M A T T H E W.

6 And blessed is hee whosoeuer shall not bee offend in me.

7 ¶ And as they departed, Iesus began to say vnto the multitudes concerning Iohn, What went ye out into the wildernesse to see? A reede shaken with the winde?

8 But what went yee out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that weare soft clothing, are in Kings houses.

9 But what went ye out for to see? A Prophet? yea, I say vnto you, and more then a Prophet.

10 For this is hee of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

11 Verely I say vnto you, Among them that are borne of women there hath not risen a greater then John the Baptist: notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdome of heauen, is greater then he.

12 And from the dayes of John the Baptist vntill now, the kingdome of heauen suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force.

13 For all the Prophets, and the Law prophesied vntill Iohn.

14 And if yee will receive it, this is Elias which was for to come.

15 He that hath eares to heare, let him heare.

16 ¶ But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like vnto children sitting in the marketts and calling vnto their fellowes,

17 And saying, We haue piped vnto you, and you haue not danced; wee haue mourned vnto you, and ye haue not lamented.

18 For Iohn came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devill.

19 The Sonne of man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a wine bibber, a friend of Publicanes and sinners: but wisedome is iustified of her children.

20 ¶ Then began he to vpbraide the cities where in most of his mighty workes were done, because they repented not.

21 Woe vnto thee Chirazin, woe vnto thee Bethsaida: for if the mighty workes which were done in you, had beeene done in Tyre and Sidon, they would

C H A P. XII.

would haue repented long agoe in fackloth & ashes.

22 But I say vnto you, It shalbe more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of iudgement, then for you.

23 And thou Capernaum, whereto haue beene done Sodome, it would haue remained vnto this day.

24 But I say vnto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodome, in the day of iudgement, then for thee.

25 ¶ At that time Iesus answered, and said, I thanke thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and haft revealed them vnto babes.

26 Euen so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

27 All things are delivered vnto me of my Father, and no man knoweth the Sonne but the Father: neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Sonne, and he to whomsoever the Sonne will reveale him.

28 ¶ Come vnto me all ye that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

29 Take my yoke vpon you, and learme of mee, for I am meeke and lowly in heart: and yee shall find rest vnto your soules.

30 For my yoke is easie, and my burden is light.

C H A P. XII.

1 The disciples plucke the eares of corne on the Sabbath. 31 Blasphemie against the holy Ghost.

A T that time Iesus went on the Sabbath day thowt row the corne, & his disciples were an hungred, and began to plucke the eares of corne, and to eat.

2 But when the Pharisees saw it, they said vnto him, Behold, thy disciples doe that which is not lawfull to doe vpon the Sabbath day.

3 But hee said vnto them, Haue yee not read what David did when hee was an hungred, and they that were with him,

4 How hee entred into the house of God, and did eat the Shewbread, which was not lawfull for him to eat, neither for them that were with him, but onely for the Priests?

5 Or, haue yee not read in the Law, how that on the Sabbath dayes the Priests in the Temple profane the Sabbath, and are blamelesse?

S. M A T T H E W.

16 But I say unto you, That in this place is greater then the Temple.

17 But if yee had knowen what this meaneth, I will haue mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not haue condemned the guiltieſſe.

18 For the Sonne of man is Lord euen of the Sabbath day.

19 And when he was departed thence, hee weng into their Synagogue.

20 And behold, there was a man whiche had his hand withered, and they asked him, saying, Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath daies? ſy they might accuse him.

21 And hee ſaid vnto them, What man ſhall there be among you, that ſhall hane aue ſheepe, and if it fall into a pit on the Sabbath day, will hee not lay hold on it, and lift it out?

22 How much then is a man better then aſheepe? wherefore it is lawfull to doe well on ſabbath dayes.

23 Then ſaith he to the man, Stretch foorth thine hand: and he ſtretched it foorth, and it was restored whole, like as the other.

24 Then the Pharisees went out, and held a counſell againſt him how they might deſtreſe him.

25 But when Iesus knew it, he withdrew himſelfe from thence: and great multitudes followed him, and he healed them all.

26 And charged them that they ſhould not make him knowne:

27 That it might bee fulfilled which was ſpoken by Elias the Prophet, ſaying,

28 Behold, my ſeruant whom I haue chafen, my beloved in whom my ſoule is well pleased: I will put my ſpirit vpon him, and hee ſhall ſhew iudgement to the Gentiles.

29 Hee ſhall not ſtrive, nor cry, neither ſhall any man heare his voyce in the ſreetes.

30 A bruiled reed ſhall hee not breake, and ſmoking flaxe ſhall hee not quench, till hee ſend forth judgement vnto victory.

31 And in his Name ſhall the Gentiles truft.

32 ¶ Then was brought vnto him one poſſeſſed with a devill blind and dumbe: & he healed him, in ſomuch that the blind & dumbe both ſpake and ſaw.

33 And all the people were amazed, & ſaid, Is this the ſonne of Dauid?

34 Be

W C H A P. XII.

34 But when the Pharisées heard it they said, This ~~fool~~ doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils.

35 And Iesus knew their thoughts, and said vnto them, Every kingdom divided against it selfe, is brought to desolation: and every citie or house diuided against it selfe, shall not stand.

36 And if Satan cast out Satan, he is diuided against himselfe: how shall then his kingdom stand?

37 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whomme did your children cast them out? Therefore they shall be your judges.

38 But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come vnto you.

39 Or else how can one enter into a strong mans house, and spoile his goods except hee first bind the strong man, and then he will spoile his house.

40 He that is not with me, is against me: and hee that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad.

41 ¶ Wherefore I say vnto you, All manner of sin & blasphemy shall be forgiven vnto men: but ~~the~~ blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven vnto men.

42 And whosoever speakest a word against ~~the~~ Son of man it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speakest against ~~the~~ holy Ghost, it shal not be forgiven him neither in this world, neyther in the world to come.

43 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good: Or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: For the tree is knownen by his fruit.

44 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being euill, speake good things? For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.

45 A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an euill man out of the euill treasure, bringeth forth euill things.

46 But I say vnto you, That euery idle word, that men shall speake, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgement.

47 For by thy words thou shalt be iustified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

48 ¶ Then certaine of the Scribes & of the Pharisées, answered saying, Master, we would see a signe from thee.

49 But he answered, and said to them, An euill and adulterous generation seeketh after a signe, and there

S. M A T T H E W.

shall no signe bee giuen to it, but the signe of the Prophet Jonas.

40 For as Jonas was three dayes and three nights in the whales belly : so shall the Sonne of man bee three dayes and three nights in the heart of the earth.

41 The men of Nineve shall rise in judgement with this generation, and shall condemne it, because they repented at the preaching of Jonas, and behold, a greater then Jonas is here.

42 The Queene of the South shall rise vp in the judgement with this generation and shall condemne it : for shee came from the vttermoest parts of the earth to heare the wisedome of Solomon, and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

43 When the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh thorow dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none.

44 Then he saith, I will retorne into mine house, from whence I came out : And when hee is come, he fiadeth it empty, sweeped and garnished.

45 Then goeth he, & taketh w himselfe seuen other spirits more wicked then himselfe, & they enter in, & dwell there: & the last state of y man is worse then the first: even so shall it be also vnto this wicked generation.

46 ¶ While hee yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speake with him.

47 Then one said vnto him, Behold, thy mother & thy brethren stand without desiring to speake w thet

48 But he answered, and said vnts him y told him, Who is my mother ? and who are my brethren ?

49 And he stretched forth his hand toward his discipiles, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren.

50 For whosoeuer shall do y will of my Father w is in heauen, y same is my brother, and sister, & mother.

C H A P. XIII.

1 Of the sower. 34 Why Christ spake in parables.

T He same day went Iesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together vnto him, so that hee went into a ship, and sat, and the whole multitude stood on the shorē.

3 And hee spake many things vnto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow.

4 And

C H A P. XIII.

4 And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way-side, and the fowles came, and devoured them vp.

5 Some fell vpon stony places, where they had not much earth: and soorthwith they sprang vp because they had no deepnesse of earth.

6 And when the Sun was vp, they were scorched, and because they had not root, they withered away.

7 And some fell among thornes: and the thornes sprang vp, and cheaked them.

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundred fold, some sixty fold, somethirty fold.

9 Who hath ears to heare, let him heare.

10 And the Disciples came and said vnto him, Why spekest thou vnto them in parables?

11 He answered, and said vnto them, Because it is given vnto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

12 For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall haue more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away euen that he hath.

13 Therefore speake I to them in parables: because they seeing see not: and hearing they heare not, neither doe they understand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esay, which saith, By hearing ye shall heare, and shall not understand, and seeing ye shall see, & shal not perceiue

15 For this peoples heart is waxed grosse, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they haue closed, lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and heare with their ears, and shoulde understand with their heart, and shoulde be converted, and I shoulde heale them.

16 But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they heare.

17 For verely I say vnto you, that many Prophets, and righteous men haue desired to see those things which ye see, and haue not seene them: and to heare those things which ye heare, & haue not heard them.

18 ¶ Hearke ye therefore the parable of the sower.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, & understandeth it not, then commeth the wicked one, and catcheth away þ which was sown in his heart: this is he which receined seed by the way side.

S. M A T T H E W.

20 But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it:

21 Yet hath he not roote in himselfe, but durseth for a while: for when tribulation or persecution ariseth, because of the word, by and by he is offended.

22 Hee also that received seed among the thrones, is hee that heareth the word, and the care of this world, and the deceiptfullnesse of riches choake the word, and he becommeth vnsuccesfull.

23 But he that received seed into y good ground, is he that heareth the word, and vnderstandeth it, which also heareth fruit, and bringeth forth some an hundred fold, some sixty, some thirty.

24 ¶ Another parable put he foorth vnto them, saying, The kingdome of heaven is likened vnto a man, which sowed good seed in his field:

25 But while men slept, his enemy came and sow-ed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was sprung vp, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

27 So the seruants of the houholder came, and said vnto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 He said vnto them, An enemy hath done this. The seruants said vnto him, Wilt thou then that we goe and gather them vp?

29 But he said, Nay: lest while ye gather vp the tares, ye root vp also the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together vntill the harwest: & in the time of harwest I wil say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and binde them in bundlēs to burne them: but gather the wheat into my barne.

31 ¶ Another parable put he forth vnto them, saying, The kingdome of heaven is like vnto a graine of mustard seed, wher a man tooke and sowed in his field.

32 Which indeede is the least of all seeds: but when it is growen, it is the greatest among herbs and becommeth a tree, so that the birds of the ayre come and lodge in the branches thereof.

33 ¶ Another parable spake he vnto them, The kingdome of heaven is like vnto leauen, which a woman tooke, and hid in three measures of meale, till the whole was leauened.

C H A P. XIII.

34 All the fethings speake Iesus vnto y^e multynde in parables, & without a parable speake he net vnto them.

35 That it might bee fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables, I will vter things which have bee[n] kept secret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Iesus sent the multitude away, & went into the houle: and his discipiles came unto him, saying, Declare vnto vs the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He answered and said vnto them, He that soweth the good seed, is the sonne of man.

38 The field is the world. The good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one.

39 The enemy that sowed them, is the devil. The harwest is the end of the world. And the reapers are the Angels.

40 As therfore the tares are gathered and burnt in the fire: so shal it be in the end of this world.

41 The Sonne of man shall send forth his Angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which doe iniquitie:

42 And shall cast them into a furnace of fire there shall be wailing and gnashinge of teeth.

43 Then shall the righteous shine foorth as the Sunne in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to heare let him heare.

44 ¶ Againe, the kingdom of heaven is like vnto treasure hid in a field, the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

45 ¶ Againe, the kingdom of heaven is like vnto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls:

46 Who when he had found one pearle of greag price, he went and sold all that he had and bought it.

47 ¶ Againe, the kingdom of heaven is like vnto a net y^e was cast into the sea, & gathered of every kinde,

48 Which, when it was full they drew to shone, and late downe, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

49 So shal it be at y^e end of the world, y^e Angels shal come forth, & seuer the wicked from among the inst.

50 And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashinge of teeth.

S. M A T T H E W

51 Jesus faith vnto them, Haue yee vnderstood all these things? They say vnto him, Yea Lord.

52 Then said he vnto them, Therefore every Scribe which is instructed vnto the kingdome of heauen, is like vnto a man that is an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure, things new and old.

53 ¶ And it came to passe that when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

54 And when hee was come into his owne country, hee taught them in their Synagogue, insomuch that they were astonished, and said, Whence hath this man this wisedome, and these mighty workes?

55 Is not this the Carpenters sonne? Is not his mother called Mary, and his brethren, Iames, and Ioseph, and Siron, and Indas?

56 And his sisters, are they not all with vs? Whence then hath this man all these things?

57 And they were offended in him. But Iesus said vnto them, A Prophet is not without honour, save in his owne countrey, and in his owne house.

58 And he did not many mighty workes there, because of their vnbelieve.

C H A P. XIII.

1 Herods opinion of Christ. 10 John Baptist behaued

A T that time Herod the Tetrarch heard of the fame of Iesus,

2 And said vnto his seruants, This is Iohn the Baptiste, hee is risen from the dead, and therefore mighty workes doe shew forth themselves in him.

3 ¶ For Herod had laid hold on Iohn, and bound him, and put him in prison for Herodias sake his brothers Philips wife.

4 For Iohn said vnto him, It is not lawfull for thee to haue her.

5 And whē he would haue put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a Prophet.

6 But when Herods birth-day was kept, his daughter of Herodias danced before them, and pleased Herod.

7 Whereupon hee promised with an oath, to giue her whatsoeuer she would aske.

8 And she being before instructed of her mother, said, Give me here Iohn Baptists head in a charger.

9 And the King was sorry: nevertheless, for the cothes sake, and them which sat with him at meate, he commanded it to be giuen her.

10 And

C H A P. X I I I .

10 And he sent, and beheaded John in the prison.
11 And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsell, & she brought it to her mother.
12 And his Disciples came, and tooke vp the body and buried it, and went and told Iesus.

13 ¶ When Iesus heard of it, he departed thence by ship, into a desert place apart: and when the people had heard thereof, they followed him on foote, out of the cities.

14 And Iesus went forth, and saw a great multitude, and was moued with compassion toward them, and he healed their sicke.

15 ¶ And when it was euening, his disciples came to him, saying, This is a desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away, that they may goe into the villages, and buy themselves victuals.

16 But Iesus said vnto them, They need not depart: give ye them to eate.

17 And they said vnto him: We haue heere but five loaves, and two fishes.

18 He said, Bring them hither to me.

19 And he comanded the multitude to sit downe on the grasse, & tooke the five loaves, & the two fishes, & looking vp to heauen he blessed, and brake, and gaue the loaves to his disciples, & the disciples to the multitude.

20 And they did all eate, & were filled, & they took vp of the fragments that remained twelve baskets full.

21 And they that had eaten, were about five thousand men, beside women and children.

22 ¶ And straight-way Iesus constrained his Disciples to get into a ship, and to goe before him vnto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away.

23 And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went vp into a mountaine apart to pray: and when the euening was come, he was there alone:

24 But the ship was now in the midift of the sea, tossed with waues: for the wind was contrary.

25 And in the fourth watch of the night, Iesus went vnto them walking on the sea.

26 And when the Disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit: and they cryed out for feare.

27 But straightway Iesus spake vnto them, saying, Be of good cheere: It is I, be not afraid.

S. M A T T H E W.

28 And Peter answered him, and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come to thee on the water.

29 And he said, Come. And when Peter was come downe out of the ship, hee walked on the water, to goe to Iesus.

30 But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid: and beginning to sinke, he cried, saying, Lord save me.

31 And immediatly Iesus stretched foorth his hand and caught him, and said vnto him, O thou of little faith, Wherefore didst thou doubt?

32 And when they were come into the ship, the wind ceased.

33 Then they y were in y ship, came & worshipped him, saying, Of a trueth thou art the Sonne of God.

34 ¶ And when they were gone ouer, they came into the land of Gennesaret.

35 And when the men of that place had knowledge of him, they sent out into all that countrey round about, and brought vnto him all that were diseased.

36 And besought him, that they might only touch the hemme of his garment; and as many as touched were made perfectly whole.

C H A P. X V.

2 Gods commandements, and mens traditions. 38
What defileth and what not.

T Hen came to Iesus Scribes and Pharises, which were of Hierusalem, saying,

2 Why doe thy disciples transgresse the tradition of the Elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.

3 Bot he answered, and said vnto them, Why doe you also transgresse the commandement of God by your tradition?

4 For God commauded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: and he that curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

5 But ye say, Whosoeuer shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me;

6 And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus haue yee made the commandement of God of none effect, by your tradition.

7 Yee hypocrites, well did Elaym prophesie of you, saying,

8 This

C H A P. XV.

8 This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips : but their heart is farre from me.

9 But in vaine they doe worship me, teaching for doctrines, the commandements of men.

10 ¶ And he called the multitude, and said vnto them, Hearke and understand.

11 Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man : but that which commeth out of the mouth, this defileth a man.

12 Then came his Disciples, and said vnto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying ?

13 But he answered, and said, every plant which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted vp.

14 Let them alone , they be blinde leaders of the blinde. And if the blinde leade the blinde, both shall fall into the ditch.

15 Then answered Peter, and said vnto him, Declare vnto vs this parable.

16 And Iesus said, Are yee also yet without understanding ?

17 Doe yee not yet understand, that whatsoeuer entreth in at the mouth goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught ?

18 But thole things wproceed out of the mouth, come forth from the heart, and they defile the man.

19 For out of the heart proeede euill thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witnessie, blasphemies.

20 These are the things which defile a man : But to eat with unwashen hands, defileth not a man.

21 ¶ Then Iesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon.

22 And behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same countreys, and cried vnto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou sonne of Dauid, my daughter is grievously vexed with a demill.

23 But he answered her not a word. And his Disciples came, and besought him, saying, Send her away, for she crieth after vs.

24 But he answered, and said, I am not sent, but vnto the lost sheeppe of the house of Israel.

25 Then came she, and worshipped him, saying, Lord helpe me.

26 But

S. MATTHEW.

26 But he answered, and said, It is not meete to take the childrens bread and cast it to dogs.

27 And she said, Truth Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters table.

28 Then Iesus answered, and said to her, O woman great is thy faith: be it vnto thee even as thou wile.

And her daughter was made whole frō ſy very houre.

29 And Iesus departed from thence, and came nigh vnto the Sea of Galilee, and went vp into a mountaine, and ſat downe there.

30 And great multitudes came vnto him, having with them thoſe that were lame, blinde, dumbe, maimed, and many others, and cast them downe at Iesuſ feet, and he healed them:

31 Inſomuch that the multitude wondered, when they ſaw the dumbe to ſpeake, the maimed to bee whole, the lame to walke, and the blinde to ſee: and they glorified the God of Israel.

32 ¶ Then Iesus called his diſciples vnto him, and ſaid, I haue compaſſion on the multitude, because they congiue with mee now three dayes, and haue nothing to eate, and I will not ſend them away ſatiſhing, leſt they faint in the way.

33 And his Diſciples ſay vnto him, Whence ſhould we haue ſo much bread in the wildernesſe, as to fill ſo great a multitude?

34 And Iesuſ ſaith vnto them, How many loaſes haue ye? And they ſaid, Seuen, and a few little fishes.

35 And hee comannded the multitude to ſit downe on the ground.

36 And he tooke the ſeven loaſes and the fishes, and gaue thankes, and brake them, and gaue to his Diſciples, and the Diſciples to the multitude.

37 And they did all eate & were filled, & they tooke vp of the broken meat that was left, ſeven basketis ful.

38 And they that did eate were foure thouſand men, beſide women and childdren.

39 And hee ſent away the multitude, and tooke ſhip, and came into the coaſts of Magdala.

C H A P. XVI.

¶ The ſigues of Iesuſ. & The leaſon of the Pharifeſ and Sadduceſ. 21 Christ foretelleth his death.

T He Pharifeſ alſo with the Sadduceſ, came, and tempting, defirde him that he would ſhew them a ſigne from heaven.

3 He

C H A P. XVI.

2 He answered, & said vnto them, When it is evening, say ye, It will be faire weather, for the sky is red.

3 And in the morning, It will be soule weather to day: for the skie is red and lowring. O ye hypocrites, ye can discerne the face of the skie, but can ye not discerne the signes of the times?

4 A wicked and adulterous generation, seeketh after a signe, and there shall no signe be ginen vnto it, but the signe of the Prophet Ionas. And he left them and departed.

5 And when his Disciples were come vnto the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 ¶ Then Iesus said vnto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, & of the Sadduces.

7 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we have taken no bread.

8 Which when Iesus percieued, hee said vnto them, O ye of little faith, why reason yee among your selues, because ye haue brought no bread,

9 Doe ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many basketes ye tooke vp?

10 Neither the seven loaves of the foure thousand, and how many basketes ye tooke vp.

11 How is it that yee doe not understand, y. I speake it not to you concerning bread, y. yee shoulde beware of the leauen of the Pharisees, and of the Sadduces?

12 Then vnderstood they how that he bade them not beware of the leauen of bread: but of the doctrine of the Pharisees, and of the Sadduces.

13 ¶ When Iesus came into the coasts of Cesarea, Philippi, he asked his Disciples, saying, Whom doe men say that I, the Sonne of man am?

14 And they said, Some say that thou art John the Baptist, some Elias, and other Ieremias, or one of the Prophets.

15 He saith vnto them, but whom say ye that I am?

16 And Simon Peter answered, and said, Thou art Christ the Sonne of the liuing God.

17 And Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Blessed art thou Simon Bar Iona: for flesh & blood hath not revealed it vnto thee, but my Father w^t is in heauen.

18 And I say also vnto thee, that thou art Peter, and vpon this rocke I will build my Churche: and the

S. M A T T H E W.

the gates of hell shall not preuale against it.

19 And I will give vnto thee the keyes of the kingdome of heauen: and whatsoeuer thou shalte bind on earth, shall be bound in heauen: whatsoeuer thou shalte loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

20 Then charged he his Disciples that they shoulde tell no man that he was Iesus the Christ.

21 ¶ From that time foorth began Iesus to shew vnto his Disciples, how that he must goe vnto Ierusalem, and suffer many things of the Elders and chiefe Priests and Scribes and be killed, and be raised againe the third day.

22 Then Peter tooke him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Bee it farre from thee, Lord: This shall not be vnto thee.

23 But he turned, and said vnto Peter; Get thee behind me, Satan, thou art an offence vnto me: for thou fauourest not the things that bee of God, but those that bee of men.

24 ¶ Then said Iesus vnto his Disciples, If any man will come after me, let him deny himselfe, and take vp his crosse, and follow me.

25 For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake, shall finde it.

26 For what is a man profited, if he shall gaine the whole world, and lose his owne soule? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soule?

27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his Angels: and then he shall reward every man according to his workes.

28 Verely, I say vnto you, There be some standing heere, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Sonne of man comming in his kingdom.

C H A P. X V I I .

1 The transfiguration of Christ. 14 He healeth the leprosies, 22 foretelleth his passion, 24 payeth tribute.

A Nd after sixe daies, Iesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them vp into an high mountaine apart,

2 And was transfigured before him, and his face did shine as the Sunne, and his raiment was white as the light.

3 And behold, there appeared vnto them Moses, and Elias, talking with him.

4 Then

C H A P. X V I I .

4 Then answered Peter, & said vnto Iesus; Lord, it is good for vs to be here: If thou wilt, let vs make here three Tabernacles: one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud over shadowed them: and behold, a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased: heare ye him.

6 And when the Disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid.

7 And Iesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

8 And when they had lift vp their eyes, they saw no man, save Iesus onely.

9 And as they came downe from the mountaine, Iesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, vntill the Son of man be risen againe from the dead.

10 And his Disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the Scribes that Elias must first come?

11 And Iesus answere and said vnto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things.

12 But I say vnto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but haue done vnto him whatsoeuer they listed: Likewise shall also the Sonne of man suffer of them.

13 Then the Disciples understood that hee spake vnto them of Iohn the Baptist.

14 ¶ And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a certayne man kneeling downe to him, and saying,

15 Lord, haue mercy on my sonne, for he is lunaticke, and sore vexed: for oft times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water:

16 And I brought him to thy Disciples, and they could not cure him.

17 Then Iesus answered, and said, O faithlesse, and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? bring him hither to me.

18 And Iesus rebuked the devill, & he departed out of him: & the child was cured from that very houre.

19 Then came the Disciples to Iesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

20 And Iesus said vnto them, Because of your unbelieve; for verely, I say vnto you, If ye haue faith,

S. M A T T H E W.

as a graine of mustard seede, yee shall say vnto this mountaine, Remoue hence to yonder place: and it shall remoue, and nothing shall be impossible vnto you.

21 Howbeit, this kinde goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.

22 ¶ And while they abode in Galilee, Iesus said vnto them, The Sonne of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men:

23 And they shal kill him, and the third day he shalbe raised againe: And they were exceeding sorry.

24 ¶ And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute money, came to Peter, and said, Doeth not your master pay tribute?

25 He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house Iesus presented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom doe the Kings of the earth take custome or tribute? of there owne children, or of strangers.

26 Peter saith vnto him, Of strangers. Iesus saith vnto him, Then are the children free.

27 Noweithstanding, lefft we should offend them goe thou to the Sea, and cast an hooke, and take vp the fish that first commeth vp: and when thou haft opened his mouth, thou shalt finde a piece of money: that take and giue vnto them for me, and thee.

C H A P. XVIII.

1 Christ teacheth to be humble. 7 Touching offences, 31 and forgiuing one another.

A T the same time came the Disciples to Iesus saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdome of heauen.

2 And Iesuscalled a little childe vnto him, and set him in the midst of them.

3 And said, Verily I say vnto you, Except yee be converted, and become as little children, ye shal not enter into the kingdome of heauen.

4 Whosoeuer therefore shall humble himselfe as this little childe, the same is greatest in the kingdome of heauen.

5 And who so shall receive one such little childe in my Name, receiueth me.

6 But who so shall offend one of these little ones, which believe in me, it were better for him that a

milstone

C H A P. XVIII.

milstone were hanged about his necke, and that hee
were drowned in the depth of the sea.

7 ¶ Woe vnto the world because of offences: for it must needs bee that offences come: but woe to that man by whom the offence commeth.

8 Wherfore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, & cast them frō thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather then having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire

9 And if thine eie offend thee, pluck it out, & cast it from thee, it is better for thee to enter into life w̄ one eie, rather then having two eies, to be cast into hel fire

10 Take heed that ye despise not one of these litle ones: for I say vnto you, that in heaven their Angels doe alwayes behold the face of my Father which is in heauen.

11 For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

12 How thinke ye? If a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them bee gone astray, doeth he not leane the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountaines, and seeketh that which is gone astray?

13 And if so be that hee find it, Verely I say vnto you, hee reþbyceth more of that sheepe, then of the ninety and nine which went not astray.

14 Even so, it is not the will of your Father which is in heauen, that one of these little ones should perish.

15 ¶ Moreoner, if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go & tell him his fault between thee and him alone, if he shall heare thee, ȳ hast gained thy brother.

16 But if hee will not heare thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses, every word may be established.

17 And if he shall neglect to heare them, tell it to the Church: but if he neglect to heare ȳ Church, let him be vnto chee as an heathen man, and a Publican.

18 Verely I say vnto you, Whatsoeuer yee shall binde on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoeuer yee shall loose on earth, shalbe loosed in heaven.

19 Againe I say vnto you, ȳ if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall aske, it shall be done for them of my Father w̄ is in heauen.

20 For where two or three are gathered together in my Name, there am I in the midst of them.

21 ¶ Then

S. M A T T H E W.

21 ¶ Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord how oft shall my brother sinne against mee, and I forgive him ? till seven times ?

22 Jesus saith vnto him, I say not vnto thee, Vntill seven times : but, Vntill seventy times seven.

23 ¶ Therefore is the kingdome of heauen likened vnto a certayne King, which would take accouint of his seruantes.

24 And when hee had begun to reckon, one was brought vnto him, which ought hym tenne thousand talentes.

25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to bee sold, and his wife and chil-
dren and all that he had, and payment to be made.

26 The servant therefore fell downe, and worship-
ped him, saying, Lord, haue patience with me, and I
will pay thee all.

27 Then the Lord of that servant was mooned
with compulsion, and loosed him, and forgave him
the debt.

28 But the same servant went out, and found one
of his fellow seruants, which ought him an hundred
perce, : and hee laid hands on him, and tooke him by
the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest.

29 And his fellow seruant fell downe at his feet,
and besought him, saying, Haue patience with mee,
and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not : but went and cast him in-
to prison, till he should pay the debt.

31 So when his fellow seruantes saw what was
done, they were very sorry, and came and told vnto
their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that hee had called him,
said vnto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee
all that debt, because thou desiredst me :

33 Shouldest not thou also haue had compassion
on thy fellow seruant, even as I had pitie on thee ?

34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to
the tormentours, till hee should pay all that was due
vnto him.

35 So likewise shall my heavenly Father doe also
vnto you, if yee from your hearts forgiue not every
one his brother their trespasses.

C H A P.

¶ Christ healeth the sick; **3** and **7** Touching divorce & mew. **16** How to attaine eternall life.

A Nd it came to passe, that when Jesus had finisched these sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea, beyond Jordan:

3 And great multitudes followed him, and hee healed them there.

4 ¶ The Pharisees also came vnto him, tempting him, and saying vnto him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife for evry cause?

4 And he answered, and said vnto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning, made them male and female?

5 And said, For this cause shall a man leue father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twaine shall be one f. sh.

6 Wherefore they are no more twaine, but one f. sh. What therefore God hath ioyned together, let no man put asunder.

7 They say vnto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of diuorcement, and to put her away?

8 He saith vnto them, Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wifes: but from the beginning it was not so.

9 And I say vnto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and who so marrieth her which is put away, doeth commit a adultery.

10 ¶ His Disciples say vnto him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But he said vnto them, All men cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is given.

12 For there are some Eunuches, which were so borne from their mothers wombe: & there are some Eunuches, which were made Eunuches of men: and there be Eunuches, which haue made themselves Eunuches for the kingdom of heavens sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.

13 ¶ Then were there brought vnto him little children, that he should put his hand on them, and pray: and his Disciples rebuked them.

14 But Iesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid

S. M A T T H E W.

bid them not to come vnto me: for of such is the kingdom of heauen.

15 And he laid his hands on them, and departed thence.

16 ¶ And beholde, onecame and said vnto him, Good master, what good thing shall I doe, that I may haue eternall life?

17 And hee said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keepe the commandements.

18 He saith vnto him, Which? Iesus said, Thou shalt doe no murder, Thou shalt not comit adultery, Thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not bear false witness,

19 Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

20 The yong man saith vnto him, All these things haue I kept from my youth vp: what lacke I yet?

21 Iesus said vnto him, If thou wilt be perfect, goe and sell y thou hast, and give to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, & follow me.

22 But when the young man heard that saying, hee went away sorrowfull: for he had great possessions.

23 Then said Iesus to his discipiles, Verely I say vnto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the Kingdome of heauen.

24 And againe I say vnto you, It is easier for a camell to goe thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

25 When his discipiles heard it, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

26 But Iesus beheld them, and said vnto him, With men this is vnpossible, but with God all things are possible.

27 ¶ Then answered Peter, and said vnto him, Behold, wee haue forsaken all, and followed thee, what shall we haue therefore?

28 And Iesus said vnto them, Verily I say unto you, that ye which haue followed me in the regeneration, when the Sonne of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, yee also shall sit vpon twelve thrones, iudging the twelve tribes of Israel.

29 And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my Names sake, shall receive

C H A P. XX.

six hundred fold, and shall inherit everlasting life.

30 But many that are first, shall be last, and the last shall be first.

C H A P. XX.

1 Of the labourers in the vineyard. 2 Christ teacheth his disciples to be lowly.

For the Kingdome of Heaven is like vnto a man that is an houshalter, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard.

3 And when hee had agreed with the labourers for a penye a day, he sent them into his vineyard.

4 And hee went out about the thylde hour, and saw others standing idle in the market place;

5 And said vnto them, Goe yee also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way.

6 Againe, hee went out about the sixt and ninth hour, and did likewise.

7 And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith vnto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle?

8 They say vnto him, Because no man hath hired vs. He saith vnto them, Goe ye also into the vineyard: and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receive.

9 So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith vnto his steward, Call y^e labourers, & give them their hire, beginning from the last, vnto y^e first.

10 And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny.

11 And when they had received it, they murmurred against the good man of the house,

12 Saying, These last have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equall vnto vs which haue borne the burden and heat of the day.

13 But he answered one of them & said, Friend I doe thee no wrong: didst not y^e agree with me for a penye?

14 Take that thine is and goe thy way, I will give vnto this last, even as vnto thee.

15 Is it not lawfull for me to doe what I will with mine owne? Is thine eye evil because I am good?

16 So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many

S. M A T T H E W.

many be called, but few chosen.

17 ¶ And Iesus going vpto Hierusalem, tooke the twelve disci.les apart in the way, and said vnto them,

18 Behold, we goe vp to Hierusalem, & the Son of man shall be betrayed vnto the chiefe Priests, & vnto the Scribes, and they shall condemne him to death,

19 And thall deliver him to the Gentiles to mocke, to scourge, and to crucifie him : and the third day he shal rise againe.

20 ¶ Then came to him the mother of Zebedees children, with her sonnes worshipping him, and desiring a certaine thing of him.

21 And hee said vnto her, What wilst thou? She saith vnto him, Grant, that these my two sonnes may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left in thy kingdome.

22 But Iesus answered, and said, Ye know not what ye aske. Are yee able to drinke of the cup that I shall drinke of, and to be baptizid with the baptisme that I am baptizid with? They say vnto him, We are able.

23 And he saith vnto them, Ye shal drinke indeed of my c. p, and bee baptizid with the baptisme that I am baptizid with : but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to givē but it shal be gaue to them for whom it is prepared of my Father.

24 And when the ten heard it, they were moued with in Ignation against the two brethren.

25 But Iesus called them vnto him, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great, exercise authority vpon them.

26 But it shal not be so among you; But whosoeuer will be great among you, let him be your minister;

27 And whosoeuer will be chiefe among you, let him be your servant.

28 Even as the Sonne of man came not to be ministered vnto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

29 And as they departed from Hiericho, a great multitude followed him.

30 ¶ And behold, two blind men sittynge by the way side, when they heard that Iesus passed by, cried out, saying, Haue mercy on vs, O Lord thou Son of David.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they shoulde

C H A P. XXI.

should hold their peace: but they cryed the more, saying, Haue mercy on vs, O Lord, thou Sonne of David.

32 And Iesus stod still, and callid them, and said, What will ye that I shall doe vnto you?

33 They say vnto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

34 So Iesus had compassion on them, and touchid their eyes: and immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed him.

C H A P. XXI.

1 Christ rideth to Hierusalem on an ass. 2 and casteth out the buyers and sellers in the Temple.

A nd when they drew nigh vnto Hierusalem, and were come to Bethphage, vnto the mount of Olives, then sent Iesus two discipiles,

2 Saying vnto them, Goe into the village ouer against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass fested, and a colt wth her: loose them, and bring them vnto me.

3 And if any man say ought vnto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them, and straightway he will send them.

4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, saying,

5 Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy King commeth vnto thee, meek, and sittynge vpon an Ass, and a colt, the sole of an Ass.

6 And the discipiles went, and did as Iesus commanded them.

7 And brought the Ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set him thereon.

8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way, others cut downe branches from the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the sonne of David: Blessed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna in the Highest.

10 And when hee was come into Hierusalem, all the citie was moaned, saying, Who is this?

11 And the multitude said, This is Iesus the Prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

12 ¶ And Iesus went into the Temple of God, and cast out all them that tolde and bought in the Temple, and

S. M A T T H E W.

and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves.

13 And said vnto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer, but yee haue made it a denne of theeuers.

14 And the blinde and the lame came to him in the Temple, and he healed them.

15 And when the chiefe Priests and Scribes saw the wonderfull things that hee did, and the children crying in the Temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Son of Dauid, they were sore displeased.

16 And said vnto him, Hearrest thou what these say? And Iesus saith vnto them, Yea, haue ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou haft perfected praise?

17 ¶ And hee left them, and went out of the citie into Bethany, and he lodged there.

18 Now in the morning as he returned into the citie, he hungry.

19 And when he saw a figtree in the way, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves onely, and said vnto it, Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for euer. And presently the figtree withered away.

20 And when the disciples saw it they marveiled, saying, How soone is the figtree withered away?

21 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, If ye haue faith, and doubt not, ye shall not onely doe this which is done to the figtree, but also, if ye shall say vnto this mountaine, Be thou remoued, and be thou cast into the sea, it shall be done.

22 And all things whatsoeuer yee shall aske in prayer, belieuing, ye shall receive.

23 ¶ And when he was come into the Temple, the chiefe Priests and the Elders of the people came vnto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authoritie doest y these things? & who gave thee this authority?

24 And Iesus answered, & said vnto thē, I also will aske you one thing, which if yee tell me, I in likewise will tell you by what authority I doe these things.

25 The baptisme of Iohn, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven, he will say to vs, Why did ye not then belieue him?

26 But if we shall say, Of men, wee feare the peo-

C H A P. X X I.

people, for all hold John a Prophete.

37 And they answered Iesus; and said, We cannot tell. And hee said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I doe these things.

38 ¶ But what thinke you? A certaine man had two sonnes, and he came to the first, and said, Sonne, goe worke to day in my vineyard.

39 He answered, and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went.

40 And he came to the second, and said likewise: and he answered, and said, I goe sir: and went not.

41 Whether of them twaine did the will of his father? They said vnto him, The first. Iesus said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, that the Publicanes and the harlots go into the kingdome of God before you.

42 For John came vnto you in the way of righteouesesse, and yee belieuened him not: but the Publicanes and the harlots beleueen him. And yee, when ye had seene it, repented not afterward, that ye might beleue him.

43 ¶ Hearre another parable. There was a certaine householder, Which planted a Vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine-pesse in it, and built a towre, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a farre countrey.

44 And when the time of the fruite drew neare, he sent his seruants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it.

45 And the husbandmen tooke his seruants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another.

46 Againe, hee sent other seruants, more then the first, and they did vnto them likewise.

47 But last of all, he sent vnto them his sonne, saying, They will reverence my sonne.

48 But when the husbandmen saw the sonne, they said among themselves, This is the heire, come, let us kill him, and let vs seaze on his inheritance.

49 And they caught him, and cast him out of the Vineyard, and slew him.

50 When the Lord therefore of the Vineyard smelleth, what will hee doe vnto those husbandmen?

51 They say vnto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and wil let out his Vineyard vnto other husbandmen, which shal render him y fruite in their seasons,

S. MATTHEW.

42 Iesus saith vnto them, Did ye never read in the Scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner? This is the Lords doing: and it is marvellous in our eyes.

43 Therefore I say vnto you, The kingdome of God shall bee taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

44 And whosoever shall fall on this stome, shalbe broken, but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grinde him to powder.

45 And when the chiefe Priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceiued þe spake of them

46 But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they tooke him for a Prophet.

C H A P. XXII.

5 The marriage of the Kings sonne. 9 The calling of the Gentes. 11 The wedding garments.

A Nd Iesus answered, and spake vnto them again by parables, and said,

3 The kingdome of heauen is like vnto a certayne King, which made a mariage for his sonne:

3 And sent foorth his seruants to call them that were bidden to þe wedding, & they would not come.

4 Againe, hee sent foorth other seruants, saying, Tell them whiche are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready, come vnto the mariage.

5 But they made light of it, & went their wayes, one to his farme, and another to his merchandise:

6 And the remnant tooke his seruants, and intrusted them spitefully, and slew them.

7 But when the king heard þereof he was wroth, and hee sent foorth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt vp their citie.

8 Then saith he to his seruants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy.

9 Goe yee therefore into the high wayes, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the mariage.

10 So those seruants went out into the high wayes, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good, and the wedding was furnished with ghefts.

11 ¶ And when the King came in to see the ghefts,

C H A P. XXII.

quests, he saw there a man, which had not on a wed-
ding garment.

13 And he saith vnto him, Friend, how cameſt
thou in hither, not having a wedding garment? And
he was ſpeechleſſe.

14 Then ſaid the King to the ſervants, Bind his
hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into
outer darkeneſſe, there shall be weeping and gnawing
of teeth.

14 For many are called, but few are chosen.

15 ¶ Then went the Pharifees, and tooke counſell,
how they might intangle him in his talke.

16 And they ſent out vnto him their diſcipliſeſ, with the Herodians, ſaying, Maſter, we know that
 thou art true, and teacheſt the way of God in trueth,
 neither careſt thou for any man: for thou regardeft
 not the person of men.

17 Tell vs therefore, What thinkeſt thou? Is it
 lawfull to give tribute to Cesar, or not?

18 But Ieſus perceived their wickedneſſe, and
 ſaid, Why tempt ye me, ye hypocrites?

19 Shew me the tribute money, And they brought
 vnto him a peny.

20 And he ſaith vnto them, Whose is this image
 and ſuperscription?

21 They ſay vnto him, Cefars. Then ſaith he vnto
 them, Render therefore vnto Cesar, the things
 which are Cefars: and vnto God, the things that are
 Gods.

22 When they had heard ſheſt words, they mar-
 veiled, and left him, and went their way.

23 ¶ The ſame day came to him the Sadducees,
 which ſay that there is no reſurrecſtion, & asked him.

24 Saying, Maſter, Moſes ſaid, If a man die, haui-
 ng no children, his brother ſhall marry his wife; and
 taile vp ſeed vnto his brother.

25 Now there were with vs ſeven brethren, and
 the firſt when he had married a wife, deceased, and
 hauiing no iſſue, left his wife vnto his brother.

26 Likewise the ſecond alſo, and the third, vnto
 the ſeventh.

27 And laſt of all the woman died alſo.

28 Therefore, in the reſurrecſion, whiche wife ſhall
 ſhe be of the ſeven? for they all had her.

S. M A T T H E W.

29 Jesus answered and said vnto them, Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.

30 For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are giuen in marriage, but are as the Angels of God in heauen.

31 But as touching the resurrection of the dead, hane ye not read that which was spoken vnto you by God, saying,

32 I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob ? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

33 And when the multitude heard this, they were astonished at his doctrine.

34 ¶ But when the Pharisées had heard that he had put the Sadduces to silence, they were gathered together.

35 Then one of them, which was a Lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying,

36 Master, which is the great Commandement in the Law ?

37 Jesus said vnto him, Thou shalt loue the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy mind.

38 This is the first and great Commandement.

39 And the second is like vnto it, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

40 On these two Commandements hang all the Law and the Prophets;

41 ¶ While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them,

42 Saying, What thinke yee of Christ ? whose Sonne is he ? They say vnto him, The sonne of David.

43 He saith vnto them, How then doeth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,

44 The Lord said vnto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool ?

45 If David then call him, Lord, how is hee his Sonne ?

46 And no man was able to answeire him a word, neither durst any man (from that day foorth) ask him any more questions.

C H A P. XXIII.

¶ The Scribes & Pharisees good doctrine, but evill example of life. ¶ The destruction of Ierusalem.

Thea

C H A P. X X I I I.

T hen spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his
disciples,

2 Saying, The Scribes and Pharisees sit in Moses
seat:

3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe,
that observe and doe, but doe not yee after their
workes: for they say and doe not.

4 For they bind heauy burdens, & grievous to be
borne, & lay them on mens shoulders, but *they* them-
selves will not moue them with *one* of their fingers.

5 But all their workes they doe, for to bee leue
of men: they make broad their Phylacteries, and
enlarge the borders of their garments,

6 And loue the uppennost roomes at feasts, and
the chiefe seates in the Synagogues,

7 And greetings in the marketis, and to be called
of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.

8 But bee not yee called Rabbi: for one is your
Master, *even* Christ, and all ye are brethren.

9 And call no man your father vpon the earth: for
one is your Father which is in heaven.

10 Neither be yee called masters: for one is your
Master, *even* Christ.

11 But he that is greatest among you, shall be your
servant.

12 And whosoever shall exalt himselfe, shalbe aba-
sed: and he that shall humble himselfe shalbe exa'ted.

13 Woe vnto you Scribes, and Pharisees, hy-
pocrites: for ye shut vp the kingdome of heauen
against men: For ye neither goe in your selues, nei-
ther suffer ye them that are entring, to goe in.

14 Woe vnto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hy-
pocrites: for ye denoure widowes houses, and for a pre-
tence make long prayers, therefore ye shall receiuue
the greater damnation.

15 Woe vnto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hy-
pocrites: for yee compasse sea and land to make one
Prosclyte, and when he is made, ye make him two-
fold more the child of hell then your selues.

16 Woe vnto you, yee blinde guides, which say,
Whosoever shall sweare by the Temple: it is no-
thing: but whosoever shall sweare by the gold of the
Temple, he is a debtor.

17 Ye fooles and blinde: for whether is greater,

S. M A T T H E W.

the gold, or the Temple that sanctifieth the gold?

18 And whosoever shall sweare by the Altar, it is nothing: but whosoever sweareth by the gift, that is vpon it, he is guiltie.

19 Ye fooles and blinde: for whether is greater, the gift, or the Altar that sanctifieth the gift?

20 Whoso therefore shall sweare by the Altar, sweareth by it, and all things theron.

21 And whoso shall sweare by the Temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

22 And he that shall sweare by heauen, sweareth by the throne of God, & by him that sitteth theron.

23 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for ye pay tithe of mint and annise, and cummine, and haue omitted the weightier matters of the Law, judgement, mercy and faith: these ought ye to haue done, and not leaue the other vndone.

24 Ye blind guides, which straine at a gnat, and swallow a camell.

25 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for yee make cleane the outside of the cup, and of the platter, but within they are ful of extremon and excesse.

26 Thou blinde Pharisee, cleanse first that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be cleane also.

27 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites; for yee are like whitened sepulchres, which indeed appeare beautifull outward, but are within full of dead mens bones, and of all vncleannesse.

28 Enesō, ye also outwardly appearē righteous vnto men, but within yee are full of hypocritie, and iniquitie.

29 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites, because ye build the tombe of the Prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,

30 And say, If we had beene in the dayes of our fathers, we would not haue beene partakers with them in the blood of the Prophets.

31 Wherefore ye be witnessies vnto your selmes, that yee are the children of them which killed the Prophets.

32 Fill ye vp then the measures of your fathers.

33 Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, How can ye escape the damnation of hell?

C H A P. XX I I I .

34 Wherefore behold, I send vnto you Prophets, & Wiser men, & Scribes, & some of them you shall kill, and crucifie, & some of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues and persecute them from city to city :

35 That vpon you may come all y righteous blood shed vpon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel, vnto the blood of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew betwene the Temple and the Altar.

36 Verely I say vnto you, All these things shall come vpon this generation.

37 O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, thou that killest the Prophets, and stonest them which are sent vnto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens vnder her wings, and ye would not ?

38 Behold, your house is left vnto you desolate,

39 For I say vnto you, ye shall not see me henceforth till ye shall say, Blessed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

C H A P. XXIII.

1. *The destruction of the Temple. & Of Christ's coming so judgement.*

1 And Iesus went out, and departed from the Temple, and his disciples came so him, for to shew him the buildings of the Temple.

2 And Iesus said vnto them, See ye not all these things? Verely I say vnto you, There shall not be left here one stone vpon another, that shall not be thrown downe.

3 And as he sate vpon the mount of Olives, the disciples came vnto him priuately, saying, Tell vs, when shall these things be? and what shall bee the sygne of thy comming, and of the end of the world?

4 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Take heed that no man deceiue you.

5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceiue many.

6 And ye shall hear of warres, and rumours of warres: See that yee bee not troubled: for all these things must come to passe but the end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes in divers places.

8 All these are the beginning of sorrowes.

S. M A T T H E W.

9 Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicated and shall kill you ; and ye shall be hated of all nations for my Name's sake .

10 And then shall many be offended , and shall betray one another , and shall hate one another .

11 And many false prophets shall rise , and shall deceive many .

12 And because iniquitie shall abound , the love of many shall waxe cold .

13 But hee that shall endure vnto the end , the same shall be saved .

14 And this Gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world , for a witness unto all nations : and then shall the end come .

15 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation , spoken of by Daniel the Prophet , standing in the holy place , (who so readeth , let him understand .)

16 Then let them which be in Iudea , flee into the mountaines .

17 Let him which is on the house top , not come downe to take any thing out of his house :

18 Neither let him which is in the field , returne backe to take his clothes .

19 And woe vnto them that ate with child , and vnto them that gaine sone in those dayes .

20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter , neither on the Sabbath day :

21 For then shall be great tribulation , such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time , no nor ever shall be .

22 And except those dayes should be shortened , there should no flesh be saved : but for the elects sake those dayes shall be shortened :

23 Then if any man shall say vnto you , Lo he , here is Christ , or there : believe it not .

24 For there shall arise false Christs , & false Prophets , & shall shew great signes & wonders : insomuch y (if it were possible) they shall deceive the very elect .

25 Behold , I have told you before .

26 Wherefore , if they shall say vnto you , Behold , he is in the desert , goe not forth : Behold , he is in the secret chambers , believe it not .

27 For as the lightening commeth out of the East , and shineth enen vnto the West : so shall also the coming of the Son of man be .

28 For

C H A P. X X I I I .

28 For wheresoever the carkeise is, there will the Eagles be gathered together.

29 ¶ And immediately after the tribulation of those dayes shall the Sunne be darkened, and the Moone shall not give her light, and the Stars shall fall from heauen, & the powers of the heauens shall be shaken.

30 And then shall appeare the signe of ſon of man in heauen: and then shall all the Tribes of the earth mont ne, and they shall ſee the Son of man comming in the clouds of heauen, with power and great glory.

31 And hee ſhall ſend his Angels with a great ſound of a trumpet, and they ſhall gather together his Elect from the ſoure windes, from one end of heauen to the other.

32 Now learne a parable of the figtree: when his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaues, ye know that Summer is nigh.

33 So likewife yee, when yee ſhall ſee all these things, know that it is neere, ~~even~~ at the doore.

34 Verely I ſay vnto you, this generation ſhall not paſſe till all theiſe thiſgs be fulfilled.

35 Heauen and earth ſhall paſſe away, but my words ſhall not paſſe away.

36 ¶ But of that day and houre knoweth no man, ſo, ne the Angels of heauen, bnt my father onely.

37 But as the dayes of Noe were, ſo ſhall also the comming of the Sonne of man be.

38 For as in the dayes that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giuing in marriage, vntill the day that Noe entered into the Arke,

39 And knew no vntill the flood came, and tooke them all away: ſo ſhall also the comming of the Son of man be.

40 Then ſhall two be in the field, the one ſhall be taken, and the other left.

41 Two women ſhall be grinding at the mill, the one ſhall be taken, and the other left.

42 ¶ Watch therefore, for yee know not what houre your Lord deth come.

43 But knew this, that if the good man of the house had knowne in what watch the thiefe would come, he would haue watched, and would not haue ſuffered his house to be broken vp.

S. M A T T H E W.

44 Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as you thinke not, the Sonne of man commeth,

45 Who then is a faithfull and wise seruant, whom his Lord hath made ruler ouer his houehold, to give them meat in due season?

46 Blessed is that seruant, whom his Lord when he commeth, shall find so doing.

47 Verely I say vnto you, that he shal make him ruler ouer all his goods.

48 But and if that euill seruant shall say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his comming,

49 And shall begin to smite his fellow seruants, and to eat, and drinke with the drunken:

50 The Lord of that seruant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an houe that he is not ware of:

51 And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

C H A P. X X V.

1 The parable of the ten virgines: 14 and of the talents. 31 The last Judgements described.

T

hen shall the kingdome of heaven be likened vnto ten virgines, which tooke their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegrome.

2 And five of them were wise, & five were foolish.

3 They that were foolish tooke their lampes and tooke no oyle with them:

4 But the wise tooke oyle in their vessels with their lampes.

5 While the bridegrome tarried, they all slumbered and slept.

6 And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegrome commeth, goe ye out to meet him.

7 Then all these virgines arose, and trimmed their lampes.

8 And the foolish said vnto the wise, Give vs of your oyle, for our lampes are gone out.

9 But the wise answered, saying, Not so, lest there be not enough for vs and you, but goe ye rather to them that sell, and buy for your selues.

10 And while they went to buy, the bridegrome came, and they that were ready, went in with him to the mariage, and the doore was shut.

23 After

C H A P. XXV.

11. Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open vnto vs.

12. But hee answered and said, Verely I say vnto you, I know you not.

13. Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the houre wherein the Sonne of man comineth.

14. ¶ For *the kingdome of heauen* is as a man trailliing into a farre countrey, who called his owne servants, and deliuered vnto them his goods:

15. And vnto one he gaue five talents, to another two, and to another one, to euery man according to his generall ability, & straightway tooke his iourney.

16. Then hee that had received the five talents, went and traded with the same, & made *them* other five talents.

17. And likewise hee that had received two, he also gained other two.

18. But hee that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his Lords money.

19. After a long time, the Lord of those seruants comineth, and reckoneth with them,

20. And so hee that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliueredst vnto me five talents, Behold, I haue gained besides them five talents more.

21. His Lord said vnto him, Well done thou good and faithfull servant, thou haft beeene faithfull ouer a few things, I will make thee ruler ouer many things: enter thou into the ioy of thy Lord.

22. He also that had received two talents, came and said, Lord, thou deliueredst vnto me two talents: behold, I haue gained two other talents besides them.

23. His Lord said vnto him, Well done, good and faithfull servant, thou haft beeene faithfull ouer a few things, I will make thee ruler ouer many things: enter thou into the ioy of thy Lord.

24. Then hee which had receiuied the one talent, came, and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou haft not sownen, and gathering where thou haft not strawed:

25. And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: loe, there thou haft that is thine.

26. His Lord answered, and said vnto him, Thou wickeid & slothfull servant, thou knewest y^e l reape where I sowed,

S. M A T T H E W.

I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed:

37 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers; and then at my coming I should have received mine owne with vsury.

38 Take therefore the talent from him; and give it vnto him which hath ten talents.

39 For vnto euery one that hath shall bee given, and he shall haue abundance: but from him that hath not shalbe taken away,even that which he hath

40 And cast ye the vnprofitabl servant into outer-darknes,there shalbe weeping and gnashing of teeth

41 ¶ When the Sonne of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy Angels with him, then shall he sit vpon the throne of his glory.

42 And before him shall be gathered all nations, and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepheard diuideth the sheepe from the goates.

43 And he shall set the sheepe on his right hand, but the goates on the left.

44 Then shall the King say to them on his right hand, come ye blessed of my Father,inherite y kingdome prepared for you frō the foundation of y world

45 For I was an hungred and ye gaue mee meat: I was thirstie, and ye gaue me drinke,I was a stranger, and ye tooke me in :

46 Naked, and ye clothed me : I was sicke, and ye visited me : I was in prison, and ye came vnto me.

47 Then shall the righteous answere him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or thirstie, and gaue thee drinke?

48 When saw we thee a stranger, and tooke thee in? or naked and clothed thee?

49 Or when saw we thee sicke, or in prison, and came vnto thee?

50 And the King shall answere, and say vnto them, Verely I say vnto you,in as much as yee haue done it vnto one of the least of these my bretheren,ye haue done it vnto me.

51 Then shall hec say also to them on the left hand, Depart from me ye cursed into everlafting fire prepared for the devill and his Angels.

52 For I was an hungred, and ye gaue me no meat: I was thirstie, and ye gaue me no drinke:

53 I was a stranger, & ye tooke me not in: naked
and

C H A P. X X V I.

and ye clothed me not: sicke and in prison, and yee visited me not.

44 Then shall they also answere him, saying, Lord when saw we thee an hungred or a thirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sicke, or in prison, and did not minister vnto thee?

45 Then shall he answere them, saying, Verely, I say vnto you, in as much as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me.

46 And these shall goe away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternall.

C H A P. X X V I.

1 *The rulers conspire against Christ. 14 Judas selleth him. 17 Christ eateth the Passouer.*

A Nd it came to passe, when Iesus had finished all these sayings, he said vnto his disciples,

2 Yee know that after two dayes is the Feast of the Passouer, and the Sonne of man is betrayed to be crucified.

3 Then assembled together the chiefe Priests and the Scribes, & the Elders of the people vnto the palace of the high Priest, who was called Caiaphas,

4 And consulted that they might take Iesus by subtilltie, and kill him:

5 But they said, Not on the Feast day let there be an uproar among the people.

6 ¶ Now when Iesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper,

7 There came vnto him a woman having an alabaster boxe of very precious oymement, and powred it on his head, as he sate at meates.

8 But when his disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste?

9 For this oymement might haue beene solde for much, and given to the poore.

10 When Iesus vnderstood it, he said vnto them, Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good worke vpon me.

11 For yee haue the poore alwayes with you, but me ye haue not alwayes.

12 For in that the hath powred this oymement on my body, she did it for my buriall.

13 Verely I say vnto you, Wheresoever this Gospel shall be preached in the whole world, there shall also

S. M A T T H E W.

also this, that this woman hath done, bee told for a
memoriall of her.

14 ¶ Then one of the twelue, called Iudas Iscariot went vnto the chiese Priests,

15 And said vnto them, What will yee gine mee,
and I will deliuere him vnto you? and they couenant-
ted with him for thirtie pieces of siluer.

16 And from that time he sought opportunity to
betray him.

17 ¶ Now of first day of feast of vncleaned bread,
the disciples came to Iesus, saying vnto him, Where
wilt þ that we prepare for thee to eat the Passeouer?

18 And he said, Goe into the citie to such a man,
and say vnto him, The Master saith, my time is at
hand, I will keepe the Passeouer at thy house with
my disciples.

19 And the disciples did as Iesus had appointed
them, and they made ready the Passeouer.

20 Now when the euene was come, hee sate downe
with the twelue.

21 And as they did eate, he laid, Verely I say vnto
you, that one of you shall betray me.

22 And they were exceeding sorrowfull, & began
every one of them to say vnto him Lord, is it I?

23 And he answered, and said, He that dippeth his
hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.

24 The Sonne of man goeth as it is written of
him: but woe vnto that man by whom the Sonne of
man is betrayed; It had beene good for that man, if
he had not heene borne.

25 Then Iudas which betrayed him, answered, and
said, Master, Is it I? He said vnto him, Thou hast said.

26 ¶ And as they were eating, Iesus tooke bread,
and b'effed it, and brake it, and gaue it to the Disci-
ples, and said, Take, eate, this is my body.

27 And he tooke the Cup, and gaue thankes, and
gaue it to them, saying, Drinke ye all of it;

28 For this is my blood of the New Testament,
which is shed for many for the remission of sinnes.

29 But I lay vnto you, I will not drinke hence-
forth of this fruit of the Vine, vntil that day when I
drinke it new with you in my Fathers kingdome.

30 And when they had sung an hymne, they went
out into the mount of Olives.

C H A P. XXVI.

31 Then saith Jesus vnto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepheard, and the sheepe of the flocke shall be scattered abroad.

32 But after I am risen againe, I will goe before you into Galilee.

33 Peter answered and said vnto him, Though all men shall bee offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.

34 Jesus said vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, & this night before the cocke crow, thou shalt deny me thrise.

35 Peter laid vnto him, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee: Likewise also said all the disciples.

36 ¶ Then commeth Jesus with them vnto a place called Gethsemene, and saith vnto the disciples, Sit ye here, while I goe and pray yonder.

37 And he tooke with him Peter, & the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowfull, & very heauy

38 Then saith he vnto them, My soule is exceeding sorrowfull, euен vnto death: tary ye here, and watch with me.

39 And hee went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup passe from me: neuerthelesse, not as I will, but as thou wilst.

40 And he commeth vnto the disciples, and findeth them asleepe, and saith vnto Peter, What could yee not watch with me one houre.

41 Watch & pray, that ye enter not into temptation: The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weake

42 He went away againe the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not passe away from me, except I drinke it, thy will be done.

43 And hee came and found them asleepe againes for their eyes were heany.

44 And he left them, and went away againe, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

45 Then comeweth he to his disciples, and saith vnto them, Sleepe on now, and take your rest, behold the houre is at hand, and the Sonne of man is betrayed into the hauds of sinners.

46 Rise, let vs be going: behold, he is at hand that doeth betray me.

47 ¶ And

S. M A T T H E W.

47 ¶ And while he yet spake loe, Indas one of the twelve came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves from the chiese Priests and Elders of the people.

48 Now he ſy betraied him, gaue the a ſigne, ſaying, Whofoeuer I ſhall kiffe, ſame is he, hold him fast.

49 And forthwith he came to Iefus, and ſaid, Haile master, an i kiffed him.

50 And Iefus ſaid vnto him, Friend, Wherefore art thou come? Then came they, and laid handes on Iefus, and tooke him.

51 And beholde one of them which were with Iefus ſtretched out his hand, & drew his ſword, and ſtoke a ſeruant of the high Priests, and ſmote off his eare.

52 Then ſaid Iefus vnto him, Put vp againe thy ſword into his place: for all they that take the ſword ſhall perish with the ſword.

53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and hee ſhall presently give me more then twelve legions of Angels?

54 But how then ſhall the Scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it muſt be?

55 In that ſame houre ſaid Iefus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as againſt a thiefe w ſwords and ſtaues to take me? I ſate daily with you, teaching in the Temple, and ye laid no hold on me.

56 But all this was done, that the Scriptures of the Prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the diſciplis forſooke him, and fled.

57 ¶ And they that had hold on Iefus, led him away to Caiaphas the high Priest, where the Scribes and the Elders were aſſembled.

58 But Peter followed him afarre off vnto the high Priests palace, and went in, and ſate with the ſeruants to ſee the end.

59 Now the chiese Priests and Elders, and all the Councill, ſought false witnessſe againſt Iefus, to put him to death,

60 But found none: yea, though many false witnessſe came, yet found they none. At the laſt came two false witnessſe.

61 And ſaid, This fellow ſaid, I am able to deſtroy the Temple of God, and to build it in three dayes.

62 And the high Priest arose, and ſaid vnto him, Anſwerest

C H A P. XXVII.

Answerest thou nothing? what is it, which these witness against thee?

63 But Iesus held his peace. And the hie Priest answered, & said vnto him, I adiure thee by the liuing God, that thou tell vs, whether thou be the Christ, the Sonne of God.

64 Iesus saith vnto him, Thou hast said: Neuerthelesse, I say vnto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Sonne of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heauen.

65 Then the high Priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoke blasphemys: what further need haue we of witnesses? Behold, now ye haue heard his blasphemys.

66 What thinke ye? They answered and said, Hee is guilty of death.

67 Then did they spit in his face, & buffeted him, & others smote him with the palmes of their hands,

68 Saying, Prophecy vnto vs, Thou Christ, who is he that smote thee?

69 ¶ Now Peter sat without in the palace: and Idamosell came vnto him, saying, Thou also wait wth Iesus of Galilee.

70 But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.

71 And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said vnto them that were there, This fellow was also with Iesus of Nazareth.

72 And againe he denied with an oath, I doe not know the man.

73 And after a while came vnto him they that stood by, and said to Peter, Surely thou also art one of them, for thy speech bewrayeth thee.

74 Then began he to curse and to sweare, saying, I know not the man. And immediatly the cocke crew.

75 And Peter remembred 5 words of Iesus, which said vnto him, Before the cocke crow, thou shalt denie me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

C H A P. XXVII.

1 Christ delivered to Pilate. 4 Indus bangeth himself. 35 Christ is crucified.

When the morning was come, all the chiefe Priests and Elders of the people, tooke counsell against Iesus to put him to death.

And when they had bound him, they led him away and

S. M A T T H E W.

and deliuered him to Pontius Pilate the gouernour,

3 ¶ Then Iudas which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and broughr againe the thirtie pieces of siluer to the chiese Priests and Elders,

4 Saying, I haue sinned, in that I haue betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to vs ? see thou to that.

5 And hee cast downe the pieces of siluer in the Temple, and departed, and went & hanged himselfe

6 And the chiese Priests tooke the siluer pieces, and said, It is not lawfull for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.

7 And they tooke counsell, and bought with them the potters field, to bury strangers in.

8 Wherefore that field was called, The field of blood vnto this day.

9 (Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the Prophet, saying, And they tooke the thirtie pieces of siluer, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value :

10 And gaue them for the potters field, as the Lord appointed me.)

11 And Iesus stood before the gouernour, and the gouernour asked him saying : Art thou the king of the Iewes ? And Iesus said vnto him, Thou sayest.

12 And when he was accused of the chiese Priests and Elders, he answered nothing.

13 Then saith Pilate vnto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witnesse against thee ?

14 And he answered him to never a word : insomuch that the gouernour marueilid greatly.

15 Now at that feast the gouernour was wont to release vnto 5 people a prisoner, whom they would.

16 And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

17 Therefore when they were gathered together, Pilate said vnto them, Whom will ye that I release vnto you ? Barabbas, or Iesus which is called Christ ?

18 For he knew y for enuy they had delivered him.

19 ¶ When hee was set downe on the iudgement seat, his wife sent vnto him, saying, Haue thou nothing to doe with that iust man ; for I haue suffered many

C H A P. X X V I I .

many things this day in a dreame, because of him.
29 But the chiefe Preists and Elders perswaded
the multitude that they shoulde take Barabbas, and
destroy Iesus.

30 The gouernour answered, and said vnto them,
Whether of the twaine will yee that I release vnto
you ? they said, Barabbas.

31 Pilate said vnto them, What shall I doe them
with Iesus, which is called Christ ? They all said vnto
him, Let him be crucified.

32 And the gouernour said, Why, what evill hath
he done ? But they cryed out the more, saying , Let
him be crucified.

33 ¶ Whē Pilate saw ȳ he could preuaile nothing,
but that rather a tumult was made, he tooke water,
& washed his hands before ȳ multitude, saying, I am
innocent of the blood of this Iust person, see ye to it.

34 Then answered all the people , and said , His
blood be on vs, and on our children.

35 Then released he Barabbas vnto them, and
when he had scourged Iesus, he deliuered him to be
crucified.

36 Then the souldiers of the Gouvernor tooke
Iesus into the common hall, and gathered vnto him
thewhole band of souldiers.

37 And they stripped him, and put on him a scar-
let robe.

38 ¶ And when they had platted a crowne of
thornes, they put it vpon his head, and a reed in his
right hand : and they bowed the knee before him,
and mocked him, saying, Haile King of the lewes.

39 And they spit vpon him , and tooke the reed,
and smote him on the head.

40 And after that they had mocked him , they
tooke the robe off from him, and put his owne rai-
ment on him and led him away to crucifie him.

41 And as they came out , they found a man of
Cyrene, Simon by name : him they compelled to
beare his crosse.

42 And when they were come vnto a place called
Golgotha, that is to say, a place of a skull,

43 ¶ They gave him vineger to drinke, mingled w/
gal: & when he had tasted therof, he would not drink

44 And they cruciked him , and parted his gar-
ments

S. M A T T H E W.

ments, casting lots : that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, They parted my garments among them, and upon my vesture did they cast lots.

36 And sitting downe they watched him there.

37 And set vp ouer his head, his accusation written, THIS IS IESVS, THE KING OF THE IEWES.

38 Then were there two theeuers crucified with him ; one on the right hand, and another on the left,

39 ¶ And they that passed by, reviled him, wagging their heads,

40 And laying, Thou that destroyest the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes, saue thy selfe : If thou be the Sonne of God, come downe from the croſſe.

41 Likewise also the chiefe Priests mocking him, with the Scribes and Elders, said,

42 He saueth others, himselfe he cannot sauē : If he be the King of Israel, let him now come downe from the croſſe, and we will beleeue him.

43 He trusted in God, let him deliuer him now if he will haue him : for he said, I am the Son of God.

44 The theeuers also which were crucified with him cast the same in his teeth.

45 Now from the sixt houre there was darkenesse over all the land vnto the ninth houre.

46 And about the ninth houre, Iesus cryed with a lound voyce, saying, Eli, Eli, lamasabachthani, that is to say, My God, My God, why haſt thou forsaken me ?

47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard that, said, This man calleth for Elias.

48 And straightway one of them ran, and tooke a ſpunge, and filled it with vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke.

49 The rest said, Let be, let vs see whither Elias will come to ſauē him.

50 ¶ Iesvs, when he had cryed againe with a lound voyce, yeelded vp the Ghoſt.

51 And behold, the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine, from the top to the bottome, and the earth did quake, and the rockes rent.

52 And the graues were opened ; and many bodies of Saints which slept, arose,

53 And came out of y graues after his resurrection and went into the holy city, & appeared vnto many.

54 Now

C H A P. X X V I I .

44 Now when the Centurion, and they they were with him, watching Iesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Sonne of God.

45 And many women were there (beholding a farre off) which followed Iesus from Galilee, ministering vnto him.

46 Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Iames and Ioses, and the mother of Zebedees children.

47 When the even was come, there came a rich man of Arimathea, named Ioseph, who alio himselfe was Iesus disciple.

48 He went to Pilate, & begged the body of Iesus: then Pilate commanded the body to be deliuered.

49 And when Ioseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a cleane linnen cloth,

50 And laid it in his owne new tombe, which he had hewen out in the rocke, and hee rolled a great stone to the doore of the sepulchre, and departed.

51 And there was Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting ouer against the sepulchre.

52 ¶ Now the next day that followed the day of the Preparation, the chiefe Priests and Pharisees came together vnto Pilate,

53 Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet aliue, After three dayes I will rise againe.

54 Command therefore that the Sepulchre bee made sure, vntill the third day; lest his disciples come by night, and steale him away, and say vnto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the lait error shall be worse then the first.

55 Pilate said vnto them, Yee haue a watch, goe your way, make it as sure as you can.

56 So they went, and made the Sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

C H A P. X X V I I I .

Christ's resurrection. 9 Hee appeareth to the women, 16 and to the disciples, 19 and sendeth them to teach and baptize.

IN the end of Sabbath, as it began to dawne towards the first day of the weeke came Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary to see the Sepulchre.

3 And

S. M A T T H E W.

2 And behold, there was a great earthquake, for the Angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled backe the stone from the doore and sate vpon it.

• 3 His countenance was like lightening, and his gayment white as now.

4 And for feare of him, the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

5 And the Angel answered, and said vnto the women, Feare not ye: for I know that ye seek Iesus which was crucified.

6 He is not here: for he is risen, as he said: Come, see the place where the Lord lay.

7 And goe quickly; and tell his disciples that he is risen from the dead. And behold, he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him: loe, I have told you.

8 And they departed quickly from the sepulchre, with feare and great joy, and did run to bring his disciples word.

9 ¶ And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Iesus met them, saying, All haile. And they came, and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

10 Then said Iesus vnto them, Be not afraid, Go tell my brethren that they goe into Galilee, and there they shall see me.

11 ¶ Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the citie, and shewed vnto the chiefe Priests all the things that were done.

12 And when they were assembled with the Elders, and had taken counsell, they gaue large money vnto the souldiers,

13 Saying, Say yet, His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept.

14 And if this come to the governours eares, we will perwade him, and seare you.

15 So they tooke the money, and did as they were taughe: And this saying is commonly reported among the Iewes vntill this day.

.. 16 ¶ Then the eleuen discipiles went away into Galilee, into a mountaine where Iesus had appointed them.

17 And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted,

18 And

C H A P. I.

18 And Iesus came, and spake vnto them, saying,
All power is giuen vnto me in heauen and in earth.

19 ¶ Goe ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Sonne, and of the holy Ghost:

20 Teaching them to obserue all thinges whatsoeuer I haue commanded you: and loe, I am with you alway, euuen vnto the end of the world. Amen.

T H E G O S P E L A C C O R- ding to Saint Marke.

C H A P. I.

1 John Baptists office. 9 Jesus Baptized, 12 temp-
ted, 16 preacheth, 16 calleth Peter and others,
23 and cures many.

The beginning of the Gospel of Iesus Christ, the Sonne of God,

2 As it is written in the Prophets, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shal prepare thy way before thee.

3 The voyce of one crying in the wildernes, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 John did baptize in the wildernes, and preach the Baptisme of repentence, for the remission of sinnes.

5 And there went out vnto him, all the land of Iudea, and they of Ierusalem, and were all baptizid of him in the riuer of Jordan, confessing their sinnes.

6 And John was clothed in camels haire, and with a girdle of a skin about his loynes: and hee did eate locusts and whide honys;

7 And preached, saying, There commeth one mightier then I after mee, the lachet of whose shoses I am not worthy to stoupe downe and vnloose.

8 I indeede hane baptized you with water: but he shall baptize you with the holy Ghost.

9 And it came to passe in those dayes, that Iesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.

10 And

S. M A R K E.

10 And straightway comming vp out of the water, hee saw the heauens opened , and the Spirit like a dove descending vpon him.

11 And there came a voyce from heauen , saying Thou art my beloued Son in whō I am well pleased

12 And immediately the Spirit driueth him into the wildernesse.

13 And he was there in the wildernesse forty dayes tempted of Satan, and was with the wild beasts, and the Angels ministred vnto him.

14 Now after that John was put in prison , Iesus came into Galilee, preaching the Gospel of the kingdome of God :

15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, & the kingdom of God is at hand : repent ye & beleue the Gospel.

16 Now as he walked by the Sea of Galilee, he saw Simon , and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the Sea (for they were fishers.)

17 And Iesus said vnto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.

18 And straightway they forsooke their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little further thence, he saw Iames the son of Zebedee, and Iohn his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets.

20 And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired seruants, and went after him.

21 And they went into Capernaum , and straightway on the Sabbath day hee entred into the Synagogue, and taught.

22 And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, & not as the Scribes.

23 And there was in their Synagogue a man with an unclean spirit, and he cryed out,

24 Saying, Let vs alone, what have we to do with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth ? Art y come to deliue vs? I know thee who thou art, The holy One of God.

25 And Iesus rebuked him , saying , Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And when the unclean spirit had borne him, and cryed with a loud voyce, he came out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, insomuch that they quicke

C H A P. I.

stioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? What new doctrine is this? For w^e authoritie commandeth he evn δ vncleane spirits, & they doe obey him.
38 And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

39 And soorthwith when they were come out of the Synagogue, they entred into the house of Simon, and Andrew, with Iames and John.

40 But Simons wifes mother lay sicke of a feuer: and anon they tell him of her.

41 And he came and tooke her by the hand, and lift her vp, and immediatly the feuer left her, and she ministred vnto them.

42 And at evn, when the Sunne did set, thry brought vnto him all that were diseased, and them that were possessed with devils:

43 And all the citie was gathered together at the doore.

44 And he healed many that were sicke of divers diseases, and cast out many devils, and suffered not the devils to speake, because they knew him.

45 And in the morning, rising vp a great while before day, hee went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

46 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him.

47 And when they had found him, they said vnto him, All men seeke for thee.

48 And hee said vnto them, Let vs goe into the next townes, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I foorth.

49 And he preached in their Synagogues throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils.

50 And there came a leper to him, beseeching him and kneeling downe to him, and saying vnto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

51 And Iesus moued with compassion, put foorth his hand, and touched him, and saith vnto him, I will, be thou cleane.

52 And assoone as he had spoken, immediatly the leprosie departed from him, and he was cleasened.

53 And he straitly charged him, and soorthwith sent him away.

54 And saith vnto him, See thou say nothing to any

S. M A R K E.

any man : but goe thy way, shew thy selfe to the Priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded for a testimony vnto them.

45 But hee went out & began to publish it much; and to blasphem abroad the matter : insomuch that Iesus could no more openly enter into the citie, but was without in desert places : and they came to him from euery quarter.

C H A P. II.

3 Christ healeth the sicke of the palsey, 14 called Matthew, 15 eateth with Publicaners and sinners,

A Nd againe he entred into Capernaum after some dayes, and it was noised that he was in the house

2 And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no roome to receive them, so nere soonech as about the doore : and hee preached the word vnto them.

3 And they come vnto him, bringing one sicke of the palsey, which was borne of soure.

4 And when they could not come nigh vnto him for preasse, they vncouered the roose where he was, and when they had broken it vpon them, they let downe the bed wherein the sicke of the palsey lay.

5 When Iesus saw their faith, hee said vnto the sicke of the palsey, Sonne, thy sinnes be forgiuen thee.

6 But there were certaine of the Scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts.

7 Why doeth this man thus speake blasphemies? Who can forgiue sinnes, but God onely?

8 And immediately when Iesus perceived in his spirit, that they so reasoned within themselves, he said vnto them, Why reason yee these things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it easier to say to the sicke of the palsey, Thy sinnes bee forgiuen thee : or to say, Arise, and take vp thy bed, and walke?

10 But that yee may know that the Sonne of man hath power on earth to forgiue sinnes, (Hee saith vnto the sicke of the palsey.)

11 I say vnto thee, Arise, and take vp thy bed, and goe thy way into thine house.

12 And immediatly he arose, tooke vp the bed, and went forth before them all, insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, Wee never saw it on this fashion.

13 And

C H A P. II.

13 And he went foorth againe by the sea fide, & all the multitude resorted vnto him, and he taught them.

14 And as hee passed by, he saw Leui the sonne of Alpheus sittynge at the receipt of custome, and said vnto him, follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

15 And it came to passe, that as Iesus sat at meat in his house, many publicanes and sinners sat alſo together with Iesus and his disciples: for there were many, and they followed him.

16 And when the Scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with Publicans and sinners, they said vnto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with Publicans and sinners?

17 When Iesus heard it, he saith vnto them, They that are whole, haue no need of the Physician, but they that are sicke: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentaunce.

18 And the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharisees vſed to fast: and they come, and say vnto him, Why doe the disciples of Iohn, and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not?

19 And Iesus said vnto them, Can the children of the bridechamber fast, while the Bridegrome is with them? As long as they haue the Bridegrome with them, they cannot fast.

20 But the dayes will come, when the Bridegrome shall bee taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those dayes.

21 No man alſo soweth a piece of new clothe on an old garment: elſe the new piece that filled it vp, catcheth away from the old, and the rent is made worse.

22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottells, elſe the new wine doth burſt the bottells and the wine is ſpoiled, and the bottells will be marred: But new wine muſt be put into new bottells.

23 And it came to passe that hee went throughe corne fields on the Sabbath day, and his diſciples began as they went, to plucke the eares of corne.

24 And þe Pharifeſ ſaid vnto him, Behold, why doe they on the Sabbath day that which is not lawfull?

25 And hee ſaid vnto them, Haue yee never read what Dauid did, when he had need and was an hundred be, and they that were with him?

26 How he went into the houſe of God in þe dayes

S. M A R X E.

of Abiather the high Priest, and did eat the Shewbread, which is not lawfull to eat but for the Priests, and gaue also to them which were with him?

27 And he said vnto them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath:

28 Therefore the Sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

C H A P. I I I.

1 The withered hand healed. 13 The twelve Apostles chosen. 23 Blasphemy condemned.

A Nd he entred againe into þ Synagogue, & there was a man there which had a withered hand:

2 And they watched him, whether he would heale him on the Sabbath day that they might accuse him.

3 And he saith vnto the man that had the withered hand, Stand foorth.

4 And hee saith vnto them, Is it lawfull to doe good on the Sabbath dayes, or to doe euill? to save life, or to kill? but they held their peace.

5 And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardnessse of their hearts, Hee saith vnto the man, Stretch foorth thine hand. And he stetched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other.

6 And the Pharisees went foorth, and straightway tooke counsell with the Herodians against him how they might destroy him.

7 But Iesus withdrew himselfe with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Iudea.

8 And from Hierusalem, and from Idumea, and from beyond Jordan, and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came vnto him.

9 And hee spake to his disciples, that a small ship shoulde wait on him: because of the multitude, lest they shoulde throng him.

10 For he had healed many, insomuch þ they preased vpon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues.

11 And uncleane spirits, whiche they saw him, let downe before him, & cryed, saying, Thou art the Son of God.

12 And hee straitly charged them, that they shoulde not make him knowne.

13 And he goeth up into a mountaine, and calleth

C H A P. III.

vnto him whom he would: and they came vnto him.

14 And he ordeined twelve, y they should be with him: and that he might send them foorth to preach:

15 And to haue power to heale sickeneses and to cast out deuils.

16 And Simon he surnamed Peter.

17 And Iames the sonne of Zebedee, and Iohn the brother of Iames (and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is the sonnes of thunder)

18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and Iames the son of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite,

19 And Iudas Iscariot, which also betrayed him: and they went into an house.

20 And the multitude commeth together againe, so that they could not so much as eate bread.

21 And when his friends heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him, for they said, He is beside himselfe.

22 ¶ And the Scribes which came downe from Hierusalem, said; He hath Beelzebub , and by the prince of the deuils casteth he out deuils.

23 And hee called them vnto him, and said vnto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan?

24 And if a kingdome be diuided against it selfe, that kingdome cannot stand.

25 And if a house be diuided against it selfe, that house cannot stand,

26 And if Satan rise vp against himselfe, and bee diuided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.

27 No man can enter into a strong mans house, and spoile his goods, except hee will first binde the strong man and then he will spoile his house.

28 Verely I say vnto you, All sinnes shall be forgiuen vnto the sonnes of men, and blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blasphemē :

29 But hee that shall blasphemē against the holy Ghost, hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternall damnation.

30 Because they said, Hee hath an unclean spirit.

31 ¶ There came then his brethren, & his mother, and standing without, sent vnto him, calling him.

32 And the multitude fate about him, and they said vnto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seekē for thee.

S. MARKE.

33 And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren?

34 And he looked round about on them w^t fate about him, & said, Behold, my mother & my brethren,

35 For whosoever shall doe the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

C H A P. I I I I.

1 The parable of the sower. 14 The meaning thereof. 28 Of the seed growing secretly. 30 Of the mustard seed.

A Nd he began againe to teach by the sea side: and there was gathered vnto him a great multitude, so that he entred into a ship, and sat on the sea: and the whole multitude was by the sea on the land.

2 And he taught them many things by parables, & spake vnto them in his doctrine.

3 Hearken, behold, there went out a sower to sow:

4 And it came to passe as he sowed, some fell by the wayes side, and the soules of the ayre came and devoured it vp.

5 And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth: & immediately it sprang vp, because it had no depth of earth.

6 But when the Sunne was vp, it was scorched, and because it had no root, it withered away.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes grew vp and cheaked it, and it yeelded no fruit.

8 And other fell on good ground, and did yeelde fruit that sprang vp and increased, and brought forth some thirty, some sixty, and some an hundred.

9 And he said vnto them; He that hath ears to heare, let him heare.

10 And when he was alone, they that were about him, with the twelue, asked of him the parable.

11 And he said vnto them, Vnto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdome of God: but vnto them that are without, all these things are done in parables:

12 That seeing, they may see, and not perceive, and hearing, they may heare, and not understand, lest at any time they shoulde be converted, and their sinnes shoulde be forgiuen them.

13 And he said vnto them; Know ye not this parable? And how then will ye know all parables?

14 ¶ The Sower soweth the word.

15 And

C H A P. IIII.

15 And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown, but when they haue heard, Satan commeth immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts.

16 And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground, who when they haue heard the word, immediatly receive it with gladnesse:

17 And haue no root in themselves, & so indure but for a time: afterward when affliction or persecution ariseth for y words sake, immediatly they are offended.

18 And these are they which are sown among thornes: such as heare the word,

19 And the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entring in choke the word, and it becommeth unfruitfull.

20 And these are they w^e are sown on good ground, such as heare the word, and receive it, and bring forth fruit some thirty fold, some sixty, and some an hundred.

21 ¶ And he said vnto them, Is a candle brought to bee put vnder a bushell, or vnder a bed? and not to be set on a candlestickke?

22 For there is nothing hid, which shall not bee manifest: neither was any thing kept secret, but that it shold come abroad.

23 If any man haue eares to heare, let him heare.

24 And he said vnto them, Take heed what you heare, With what measure yee mete, it shall be measured to you: And vnto you that heare, shall more be giuen.

25 For he that hath, to him shalbe giuen, & he that bath not from him shall be taken even that w^e he hath.

26 ¶ And hee said, So is the kingdome of God, as if a man shold cast seed into the ground.

27 And shold sleepe, and rise night & day, and the seed shold spring and grow vp, he knoweth not how.

28 For y earth bringeth forth fruit of her selfe, first the blade, then y ear, after y the ful corne in the eare.

29 But when the fruit is brought forth, immediatly he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come.

30 ¶ And hee said, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdome of God? Or with what comparison shall we compare it?

31 It is like a graine of mustard seede: which when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seedes that be in the earth.

S. M A R K E.

32 But when it is sown, it groweth vp, and becommeth greater then all herbes, and shoogeth ou great branches, so that the foules of the ayre may lodge vnder the shadow of it.

33 And with many such parables spake hee the word vnto them, as they were able to heare it.

34 But without a parable spake hee not vnto them, and when they were alone, bee expounded all thing to his disciples.

35 And the same day when the Euene was come, hee faith vnto them, Let vs passe ouer vnto the other side.

36 And when they had sent away the multitude, they tooke him, even as he was in the ship, and there were also with him other little ships.

37 And there arose a great storne of winde, and the waues beat into the ship, so that it was now full.

38 And hee was in the hinder part of the ship asleepe on a pillow: and they awake him, and say vnto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish?

39 And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and said vnto the sea, Peace, be still: and the wind ceased, and there was a great calme.

40 And he said vnto them, Why are yee so fearefull? How is it that ye haue no faith?

41 And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, What maner of man is this, that euene the winde and the sea obey him?

C H A P. V.

3 Christ deluering the possessed of the legion of devill. 4-13 They enter into the swine. 35 Iacobus daughter.

A Nd they came ouer vnto the other side of the sea, into the countrey of the Gadarens.

3 And when he was come out of the ship, immediatly there met him out of the tombes, a man with an vncleane spirit,

3 Who had his dwelling among the tombes, and no man could binde him, no not with chaines:

4 Because that hee had bee often bound with feters and chaines, and the chaines had bee plucked asunder by him, and the feters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him.

5 And alwayes night and day, hee was in the mountaines, and in the tombes, crying, and cutting himselfe with stones.

6 But

C H A P. V.

6 But when he saw Iesus a farre off, hee came and worshipped him.

7 And cryed with a loud voyce, and said, What have I doe with thee, Iesus, thou Sonne of the most high God? I adiure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

8 (For he said vnto him, Come out of the man thou vncleane spirit)

9 And he asked him, What is thy name? and he answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.

10 And hee besought him much, that hee would not send them away out of the countrey.

11 Now there was there nigh vnto the mountaines a great herd of swine, feeding.

12 And all the devils belongethe him, saying, Send vs into the swine, that we may enter into them.

13 And forthwith Iesus gave them leave. And the vncleane spirits went out, and entred into the swine; and the herd ran violently downe a steepe place into the sea (they were about two thousand) and were choked in the sea.

14 And they that fed the swine fled, and told it in the citie, and in the countrey. And they went out to see what it was that was done.

15 And they come to Iesus, and see him that was possessed with the devill, and had the Legion sitting, and clothed, & in his right minde: & they were afraid.

16 And they that saw it, told them how it befell to him that was possessed with the devill, and also concerning the swine.

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coast.

18 And when he was come into the ship, hee that had beeene possessed with the devill, prayed him that he might be with him.

19 Howbeit Iesus suffered him not, but saith vnto him, Goe home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee.

20 And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis, how great things Iesus had done for him: and all men did marueile.

21 And when Iesus was passed ouer againe by ship vnto the other side, much people gathered vnto him, and he was nigh vnto the sea. D 5 22 And

S. M A R K E.

32 And behold there commeth one of the Ruleres of the Synagogue, Iairus by name, and when he saw him he fell at his feete.

33 And besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death, I pray thee, come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed, and she shall live.

34 And Iesus went with him, and much people followed him, and thronged him.

35 And a certaine woman which had an issue of blood twelve yeeres,

36 And had suffered many things of many Physicians, and had spent all that sh: had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse,

37 When thee had heard of Iesus, came in the preasse behind, and touched his garment.

38 For she said, If I may but touch his clothes, I shall be whole.

39 And straitway the fountaine of her blood was dried vp: and she felt in her body that she was healed of that plague.

40 And Iesus imminidately knowing in himselfe that vertue had gone out of him, turned him about in the preasse, and said, Who touched my clothes?

41 And his disciples said vnto him, Thou leest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

42 And hee looked round about to see her that had done this thing.

43 But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing what was done in her, came, and fell downe before him, and told him all the truch,

44 And he said to her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole, goe in peace, and be whole of thy plagues.

45 While he yet spake, there came frō the ruler of the Synagogues house certaine w^m said. Thy daughter is dead, why troublest thou the Master any further?

46 Alſoone as Iesus heard the word that was ſoken, he laith vnto the ruler of the Synagogue, Be not afraid, onely beleue.

47 And hee suffered no man to follow him, ſauſ Peter and James, and Iohn the brother of James.

48 And hee commeth to the houfe of the ruler of the Synagogue, and ſeeþ the tumult, and them that wept, and wailed greatly.

49 And

C H A P. VI.

39 And when hee was come in, he saith vnto them
Why make ye this adoe, and weepe? the damiell is
not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to scorne: but when he
had put them all out, he taketh the father and the
mother of the damosell, and them that were with
him, and entreth in where the damosell was lying.

41 And he tooke the damosell by the hand, and said
vnto her, *Talitha cumi*, which is, being interpreted,
Damosell (I say vnto thee) Arise.

42 And straightway the damosell arose, and wal-
ked, for she was of the age of twelue yeeres: and they
were astonisched with a great astonishment,

43 And hee charged them straightly, that no man
should know it: and commanded that somthing
should be giuen her to eate.

C H A P. VI.

1 Christ is contynued of his countreymen. 18 John
Baptist is beheaded. 45 Christ walketh on the sea.

1 And he went out from thence, and came into his
owne countrey, and his disciples follow him.

2 And when the Sabbath day was come, hee be-
gan to teach in the Synagogue: and many hearing
him, were astonisched, saying, From whence hath this
man these things? And what wisedome is this which
is given vnto him, that euene such mighty workes are
wrought by his hands.

3 Is not this the Carpenter, the sonne of Mary,
the brother of Iames and Iohes, and of Iuda, and Si-
mon? And are not his sisters here with vs? And
they were offended at him.

4 And Iesus said vnto them, A Prophet is not
without honour, but in his owne countrey, and am-
ong his owne kin, and in his owne house.

5 And he could there doe no mighty worke; save
that he laid his hands vpon a few sicke folke, and hea-
led them.

6 And hee marueilid because of their unbeliefe.
And he went round about the villages, teaching.

7 ¶ And he called vnto him the twelue, and be-
ganne to send them foorth by two and two, and gaue
them power ouer uncleane spirits,

8 And commanded them, that they shon'd take
nothing for their iourney save a stasse onely: no
scrip

S. M A R K E.

scrip, no bread, no money in their purse:

9 But bee shodde with sandales: and not put on two coats.

10 And hee said vnto them, In what place soever ye enter into an house, there abide till ye depart from that place.

11 And whosoeuer shall not receive you, nor heare you, when yee depart thence, shake off the dust vnder your feet, for a testimony against them: Verely I say vnto you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodome and Gomorah in the day of Iudgement, then for that citie.

12 And they went out and preached that men should repent.

13 And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oyle many that were sicke, and healed them.

14 And King Herod heard of him (for his name was spread abroade) and he said, that Iohn the Baptiste was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty workes doe shew foorth themselves in him.

15 Others said, That it is Elias. And others said, That it is a Prophet, or as one of the Prophets.

16 But when Herod heard thereof, hee said, It is John, whom I beheaded, he is risen from the dead.

17 For Herod himselfe, had sent forth & laid hold vpon Iohn, and bound him in prison for Herodias sake, his brother Philips wife, for he had married her.

18 For Iohn had said vnto Herod, It is not lawfull for thee to haue thy brothers wife.

19 Therefore Herodias had a quarell against him, and would haue killed him, but she could not.

20 For Herod feared Iohn, knowing that he was a iust man, and an holy, & obserued him: and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 And when a conuenient day was come, that Herod on his birth day made a supper to his lords, high captaines and chiche estates of Galilee:

22 And when the daughter of the said Herodias came in and danced, and pleased Herod, & them that sat with him, the King said vnto the damsell, Ask of me whatsoeuer thou wile, and I will give it thee.

23 And hee sware vnto her, Whatsoever thou shalt aske of me, I will give it thee, vnto the halfe of my kingdome.

24 And she went forth, and said vnto her mother,

What

C H A P. VI.

What shall I aske? And she said, The head of Iohn the Baptist.

25 And she came in straightway with hast vnto the King, and asked, saying, I will that thou giue mee by and by in a charger the head of Iohn the Baptist.

26 And the King was exceeding sorry, yet for his oaths sake, and for their sakes that late with him, he would not reject her.

27 And immediatly the King sent an executioner and commanded his head to bee brought, and hee went, and beheaded him in the prison:

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gave it in the damsell, and the damsell gave it to her mother.

29 And when his disciples heard of it, they came and tooke vp his corper, and laid it in a tombe.

30 And the Apostles gathered themselves together vnto Iesus, and tolde him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught.

31 And he said vnto them, Come ye your selues apart into a desart place, and rest a while. For there were many comming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat.

32 And they departed into a desart placē by ship priuately.

33 And the people saw them departing, and many knew him, and raine afoot thither out of all cities, and outwent them, and came togē ther vnto him.

34 And Iesus when hee came out saw much people and was moued with compassion toward them, because they were as sheepe not having a shepheard: and he began to teach them many things.

35 And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came vnto him, and said, This is a desart place, and now the time is farrre passed.

36 Send them away, that they may goe into the countrey round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread: for they haue nothing to eat.

37 He answered, and said vnto them, Give ye them to eat. And they say vnto him, Shall we goe and buy two hundred peniaorth of bread, & giue theē to eat?

38 He saith vnto them, How many loaues haue ye? goe, and see. And when they knew, they say, Five and two fishes.

39 And he commanded them to make all sit downe
by

S. M A R K E.

by companies vpon the greene grasse.

40 And they sate downe in rankes by hundreds, and by fifties.

41 And when hee had taken the five loaues and the two fishes, hee looked vp to heauen, and blessed, and brake the loaues, and gaue them to his disciples to set before them; and the two fishes diuided hee among them all.

42 And they did all eat, and were filled.

43 And they tolke vp twelve basketts full of the fragments and of the fishes.

44 And they that did eat of the loaues were about five thousand men.

45 And straightway hee constrained his Disciples to get into the ship, and to gue to the other side before vnto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people.

46 And when he had seng them away he departed into a mountaine to pray.

47 And when evn was come, the ship was in the middest of the Sea, and he alone on the land.

48 And he saw them to, lling in rowing (for the wind was contrary vnto them:) and about the fourth watch of the night, he commeth vnto them, walking vpon the Sea, and would haue passed by them.

49 But when they saw him walking vpon the Sea, they supposed it had beeene a spirit, and cryed out.

50 (For they all saw him, and were troubled) and immediatly he talked with them, & saith vnto them, Be of good cheere, It is I, be not afraid.

51 And he went vp vnto them into the ship, and the wind ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered.

52 For they considered not the miracle of the loaues, for their heart was hardened.

53 And when they had passed ouer, they came into the land of Gencareth: and drew to the shore.

54 And when they were come out of the shipp straightway they knew him,

55 And gaue through that whole region round about, and began to carry about in beds, those that were sicke, where they heard he was.

56 And whithersoever he entred, into villages, or cities, or countrey, they laid their sicke in the streetes and besought him that they might touch if it were

but

C H A P. VII.

but the border of his garment: and as many as touched were made whole.

C H A P. VII.

1 The Pharisees find faulke with the disciples, for eating with unwashen hands. 14 Meat defileth not the man.

T hen came together vnto him the Pharisees, and certaine of the Scribes, which came from Hierusalem.

3 And when they saw some of his Disciples eat bread with defiled (that is to say, with unwashen) hands, they found faulke.

3 For the Pharisees and all the Jewes, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the Elders.

4 And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they haue received to hold, as the washing of cups and pots, brasen vessels, and of tables.

5 Then the Pharisees and Scribes asked him, Why walke not thy disciples according to the tradition of the Elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands.

6 Hee answered and said vnto them, Well hath Elias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me.

7 Howbeit in vaine doe they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandements of men.

8 For laying aside the commandement of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye doe.

9 And he said vnto them, Full well ye reiect the Commandement of God, that yee may keepe your owne tradition.

10 For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother: and whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death.

11 But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoeuer thou mightest be profited by me: he shall be free.

12 And yee suffer him no more to doe ought for his father or his mother.

13 Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which yee haue delivered: and many such like things doe ye.

14 ¶ And

S. M A R K E.

14 ¶ And when he had called all the people vnto him, he said vnto them, Hearken vnto me every one of you, and understand.

15 There is nothing from without a man that entering into him can defile him : but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man.

16 If any man have eates to heare, let him heare.

17 And when he was entred into the house stō the people, his disciples asked him concerning ḡ parable.

18 And he faid vnto them, Are ye so without understanding also ? Doe ye not perceiue that whatsoeuer thing from without entreth into the man , it cannot defile him,

19 Because it entreth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meates?

20 And hee faid, That which commeth out of the man, that defileth the man.

21 For from within, out of ḡ heart of men, proceed euill thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murthers,

22 Thefis, coactousnesse, wickednes, deceit, lasciviousnesse, an euill eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishnesse :

23 All these euill things come from within, and defile the man.

24 ¶ And from thence he arose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, & entred into an house & would have no man know it, but he could not be hid.

25 For a certayne woman, whose young daughter had an vncleane spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet.

26 (The woman was a Greeke, a Syrophenician, by nation :) and shee besought him that hee would cast foorth the devill out of her daughter.

27 But Iesus faid vnto her, Let the children first bee filled : for it is not meete to take the childrens bread, and to cast it vnto the dogs.

28 And shee answered, and laid vnto him, Yes, Lord, yet the dogs vnder the table eate of the chil-drens crummes.

29 And hee faid vnto her, For this saying, goe thy way, the devill is gone out of thy daughter.

30 And when she was come to her house, she found ḡ devill gone out, and her daughter laid vpon ḡ bed.

31 ¶ And againe departing from the coastes of Tyre

C H A P. VIII.

Tyre and Sidon, hee came vnto the Sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis.

32 And they bring vnto him one that was deafes, and had an impediment in his speech: and they beseech him to put his hand vpon him.

33 And hee tooke him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his eares, and hee spit, and touched his tongue,

34 And looking vp to heauen, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.

35 And straightway his eares were opened, & the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plaine,

36 And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more hee charged them, so much the more a great deale they published it.

37 And were beyond measure astonisched, saying, Hee hath done all things well: hee maketh both the deafe to heare, and the dumbe to speake.

C H A P. VIII.

I Christ feedeth the people miraculouly. 10 And refuseth to give a signe to the Pharisees.

In those dayes the multitude being very great, and having nothing to mate, Iesus called his discipiles vnto him, and said vnto them.

2 I haue compassion on the multitude, because they haue now beeene with me three dayes, and haue nothing to eate:

3 And if I send them away fasting to their owne houses, they will faint by the way: for diuers of them came from farre.

4 And his discipiles answered him, From whence can a man satisfie these men with bread here in the wildernesse?

5 And he asked them, How many loaves haue ye? And they said, Seven.

6 And he commanded the people to sit downe on the ground: and he tooke the seven loaves, and gane thankes, and brake, and gave to his discipiles, to set before them: & they did set them before the people.

7 And they had a few small fishes: and he blessed, and commanded to set them also before them.

8 So they did eat and were filled: and they tooke vp of the broken meat that was left, seuen basketts.

9 And they that had eaten, were about four thousand,

S. M A R K E.

thousand, and hee sent them away.

10 ¶ And straightway hee entred into a ship with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

11 And the Pharisées came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a signe from heauen, tempting him.

12 And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doeth this generation seeke after a signe? Verely I say vnto you, There shall no signe be giuen vnto this generation.

13 And he left them, and entring into the ship againe, depart'd to the other side.

14 ¶ Now the disciples had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more then one leafe.

15 And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leauen of the Pharisées, and of the leauen of Herod.

16 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, It is because we haue no bread.

17 And when Iesus knew it, hee saith vnto them, Why reason ye, because ye haue no bread? Perceiue ye not yet, neither understand? Haue yee your heart yet hardened?

18 Having eyes, see yee not? and hauning eare, heare yee not? and doe yee not remember?

19 When I brake the fine loaves among fift thousand, how many baskets full of fragments tooke yee vp? They said vnto him, Twelue.

20 And when the seuen among foute thousand: how many baskets full of fragments tooke yee vp? And they said, Seuen.

21 And hee said vnto them, How is it that ye doe not understand?

22 ¶ And he commeth to Bethsaida, & they bring a blind man vnto him, & besought him to touch him.

23 And he tooke the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the towne: and when hee had spit on his eyes, and put his hands vpon him, hee asked him if he saw ought?

24 And he looked vp, and said, I see men as trees, walking.

25 After that, hee put his hands againe vpon his eyes, and made him looke vp: and he was restored, and

C H A P. VIII.

and saw every man clearly.

38 And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither goe into the towne, nor tell it to any in y towne.

39 ¶ And Iesus went out, and his disciples, into the townes of Cesarea Philippi: and by the way he asked his disciples, saying vnto them, Whom doe men say that I am?

40 And they answered, John the Baptist: but some say, Elias: and others, One of the Prophets.

41 And he saith vnto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Peter answered and saith vnto him, Thou art the Christ.

42 And he charged them, that they should tell no man of him.

43 And he began to teach them, that the Sonne of man must suffer many things, and bee rejected of the Elders, and of the chiefe Priest, and Scribes: and bee killed, and after three dayes rise againe.

44 And he spake that saying openly. And Peter tooke him, and began to rebuke him.

45 But when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou saourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

46 ¶ And when he had called the people vnto him, with his disciples also, he said vnto them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himselfe, and take vp his crofle and follow me.

47 For whosoever will saue his life, shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the Gospells, the same shall saue it.

48 For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gaine the whole world, and lose his owne soule?

49 Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soule?

50 Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me, and of my words in this adulterous and sinfull generation, of him also shall the Sonne of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father, with the holy Angels.

C H A P. IX.

¶ Iesus is transfigured. 50 Hee foretelleth his death and resurrection: 53 And giveth divers instructions to his disciples.

And

S. M A R K E.

And he said vnto them, verely I say vnto you, that there be some of them that stand heen, which shall not taste of death, till they haue seene the kingdome of God come with power.

3 ¶ And after sixe dayes, Iesus taketh with him Peter and Iames, and Iohn, and leadeth them vp into an high mountaine apart by themselves: and he was transfigured before them.

3 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow: so as no Fuller on earth can whiten them.

4 And there appeared vnto them Elias with Moses: and they were talking with Iesus.

5 And Peter answered and said vnto Iesus, Master, it is good for vs to be here, and let vs make three Tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.

6 For he wist not what to say, for they were sore afraid.

7 And there was a cloud that overshadowed them: and a voyce came out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Sonne: heare him.

8 And suddenly when they had looked round about, they saw no man any more, saue Iesus onely with themselves.

9 And as they came downie from the mountaine, hee charged them that they shold tell no man what things they had seene, till the Sonne of man were risen from the dead.

10 And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another, what the rising from the dead shold meane.

11 ¶ And they asked him, saying, Why say the Scribes, that Elias must first come?

12 And he answere, and told them, Elias verely commeth first, and restoreth all things, and how it is written of the Sonne of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought.

13 But I say vnto you, that Elias is indeed come, and they haue done vnto him, whatsoeuer they listed, as it is written of him.

14 And when hee came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the Scribes questioning with them.

15 And

C H A P. IX.

15 And straightway all the people when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to him, saluted him.

16 And hee asked the Scribes, What question ye with them?

17 And one of the multitude answered, and said, Master, I have brought vnto thee my sonne, which hath a dumbe spirit:

18 And wheresoever hee taketh him, he teateth him, and he someth, and gnasheth with his teeth, and smeth away, and I spake to thy disciples, that they should cast him out, and they could not.

19 He answereth him, and said, O faithlesse generation, how long shall I be with you, how long shall I suffer you? bring him vnto me.

20 And they brought him vnto him: and when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him, and he fell on the ground, and swallowed, foming.

21 And hee asked his father, How long is it agoe since this came vnto him? And hee said, Of a childe.

22 And often times it hath cast him into the fire, & into the waters to destroy him: but if thou canst doe anything, have compassion on vs, and helpe vs.

23 Iesus said vnto him, If thou canst beleue, all things are possible to him that beleueueth.

24 And straightway the father of the childe cried out, and said with teares, Lord, I beleue, helpe thou mine vnbeliefe.

25 When Iesus saw that the people came running together, hee rebuked the foule spirit, saying vnto him, Thou dumbe and deafe spirit, I charge thee come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And the spirit cryed, and rent him sore, and came out of him, and hee was as one dead, insomuch that many said, He is dead.

27 But Iesus tooke him by the hand, and lifted him vp, and he arose.

28 And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not wee cast him out?

29 And hee said vnto them, This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

30 ¶ And they departed thence, and passed thorow Galilee, & he would not that any man should know it.

31 For

S. M A R K E.

31 For he taught his disciples, and said vnto them, The Son of man is deliuered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.

32 But they vnderstod not that saying, and were afraid to aske him.

33 ¶ And bee came to Capernaum; and being in the house, he aske them, What was it that ye disputed among you selves by the way?

34 But they held their peace: For by the way they had disputed among themselves, who shoulde be the greatest.

35 And he late downe, and called the twelve, and saith vnto them, If any man desire to bee first, the same shall be last of all, and seruant of all.

36 And he tooke a childe, and set him in the middest of them: and when hee had taken him in his arms he said vnto them,

37 Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my Name, receiueth mee: and whosoever shall receive me, receiueth not mee, but him that sent mee.

38 ¶ And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy Name, and he followeth not vs, and we forbade him, because he followeth not vs.

39 But Iesus said, Forbid him not, for there is no man that shall doe a miracle in my Name, that shal lightly speake euill of me.

40 For he that is not against vs, is on our part.

41 For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drinke in my Name, because yee belong to Christ: Verely I say vnto you, He shall not lose his reward.

42 And whosoever shall offend one of these little ones that beleene in mee, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his necke, and hee were cast into the sea.

43 And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, then having two hands to goe into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

44 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

45 And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halfe into life, then having two feet,

C H A P. X.

to bee cast into hell, into the fire that neuer shall bee quenched:

46 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

47 And if thine eye offend thee, plucke it out: it is better for thee to enter into y^e kingdome of God with one eye, then having two eyes, to be cast into hell fire.

48 Where their worme dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

49 For every one shall bee salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt.

50 Salt is good: but if the salt haue lost his saltnesse, wherewith will you season it? Hang salt in your selues, and haue peace one with another.

C H A P. X.

3 Of divorceement. 23 The danger of riches.

A nd he rose from thence, and commeth into the coasts of Iudea by the farther side of Jordan: and the people resort vnto him againe, and as he was went, he taught them againe.

2 ¶ And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawfull for a man to put away his wife? tempting him.

3 And hee answered, and said vnto them, What did Moses command yon?

4 And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorceement and to put her away.

5 And Iesus answered and said vnto them, For the hardnessse of your heart, he wrote you this precept.

6 But from the beginning of the creation, God madethem male and female.

7 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife:

8 And they twaine shall bee one flesh: so then they are no more twaine, but one flesh.

9 What therefore God hath ioyned together, let not man put asunder.

10 And in the house his disciples asked him againe of the same matter.

11 And hee saith vnto them, Whosoeuer shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her.

12 And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.

23 ¶ And

S. M A R K E.

13 ¶ And they brought young children to him that he should touch them, and his disciples rebuked those that brought them.

14 But when Iesus saw, hee was much displeased and said vnto them, Suffer the little children to come vnto mee, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

15 Verely I say vnto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdome of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

16 And hee tooke them vp in his armes, puttē hands vpon them, and blessed them.

17 ¶ And when he was gone foorth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I doe that I may inherite eternall life?

18 And Iesus said vnto him, Why callest thou me good? there is no man good, but one, that is God.

19 Thou knowest the Commandements, Doe not commit adultery, Doe not kill, Doe not steale, Doe not beare false witnesse, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

20 And hee answered, and said vnto him, Master, all these haue I observed from my youth.

21 Then Iesus beholding him, loued him, and said vnto him, One thing thou lackeft; Goe thy way, sell whatsoeuer thou hast, and giue to the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, take up the crosse and follow me.

22 And hee was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions.

23 ¶ And Iesus looketh round about, and saith vnto his disciples, How hardly shall they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God?

24 And the disciples were astonished at his words, But Iesus answered againe, and saith vnto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches, to enter into the kingdome of God?

25 It is easier for a camell to goe thorow the eye of a needle, then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

27 And Iesus looking vpon them, saith, With me

him
alked
ealed
to m
och u
ll no
, her
ng ha
e way
nd si
I may
ou me
ed.
be no
. Due
hyfir
latter,
od said
ay fell
r, and
, take
t away
I fath
t hau
words,
then,
in tr
he eye
go the
re, say
d?
ch met
it

ru
an
he
wh
3
the
Pri
him
3
him
tha
3
cen
tho
5
I th
37
map
left
38
asked
bapt
49
said
that
bapt
44
hand
them

CHAP. X.

it is impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

28 ¶ Then Peter began to say vnto him, Loe, we haue left all and haue followed thee.

29 And Iesus answred and said, Verely, I say vnto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands for my sake and the Gospels,

30 But hee shall receive an hundred fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions, and in the world to come eternall life:

31 But many *that* are first, shall be last: and the last, first.

32 ¶ And they were in the way going vp to Hierusalem; and Iesus went before them, and they were amazed, and as they followed, they were afraid: and he tooke againe the twelue, and began to tell them what things should happen vnto him,

33 Saying, Behold, we goo vp to Hierusalem, and the Sonne of man shall be delivered vnto the chiefe Priests, & vnto the Scribes: and they shall condemne him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles.

34 And they shall mocke him, and shall scounge him, and shall spit vpon him, and shall kill him, and the third day shall he rise againe.

35 ¶ And Iames and John the sounes of Zebedee came vnto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest doe for vs whatsoever we shall desire.

36 And hee said vnto them, What would ye that I should doe for you?

37 They said vnto him, Grant vnto vs that wee may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand in thy glory.

38 But Iesus said vnto them, Ye know not what ye aske: Can ye drinke of the cup that I drink of: and be baptizeth with \S baptismeth that I am baptizeth with?

39 And they said vnto him, Wee can. And Iesus said vnto them, Yee shall indeed drinke of the cup that I drinke of, and with the baptismeth that I am baptizeth withall, shall ye be baptizeth:

40 But to sit on my right hand, and on my left hand, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared.

S. M A R K E.

41 And when the ten heard it, they began to be much displeased with Iames and Iohn

42 But Iesus call'd them to him, and saith vnto them, Yee know that they which are accounted to rule ouer the Gentiles, exercise lordship ouer them; and their great ones exercise authority vpon them,

43 But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister:

44 And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all.

45 For even the Sonne of man came not to be ministered vnto, but to minister, and to giue his life a rancombe for many.

46 ¶ And they came to Iericho: and as hee went out of Ieriche with his disciples, and a great number of people; blind Bartimeus, the sonne of Timeus, sat by the high wayes side begging.

47 And when he heard that it was Iesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Iesus, thou Sonne of Danid, haue mercy on me.

48 And many charged him that he should hold his peace: but he cryed the more a great deale, Thou Sonne of Danid, haue mercy on me.

49 And Iesus stood still, and commanded him to be called: and they call the blind man, saying vnto him, Be of good comfort, rise, he calleth thee.

50 And hee casting away his garment, rose, and came to Iesus.

51 And Iesus answered and said vnto him, What wilt thou that I shoulde do vnto thee? The blind man said vnto him, Lord, that I might receiue my sight,

52 And Iesus said vnto him, Goe thy way, thy faith hath made thee whole: and immediatly he received his sight, and followed Iesus in the way.

C H A P. X I.

1 Christ rideth with triumph into Hierusalem. v. 1
He curseth the fruitleffe leafie tree.

A Nd when they came nigh to Hierusalem, vnto Bethphage, and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sandeth foorth two of his disciples,

2 And saith vnto them, Goe yont way into the village ouer against you, and alsoone as ye be entred into it, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon never man sate, loose him, and bring him.

3 And

C H A P. XI.

3 And if any man say vnto you, Why doe ye this? Say yee, that the Lord hath neede of him: and straightway he will send him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tyed by the doore without, in a place where two wayes met: and they loose him.

5 And certaine of them that stood there, said vnto them, What doe ye loosing the colt?

6 And they said vnto them euē as Iesus had commanded: and they let them goe.

7 And they brought the colt to Iesus, and cast their garments on him, and he sate vpon him.

8 And many spread their garments in the way: and others cut downe branches of the trees, and strawed them in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cryed, saying, Hosanna, blessed is he that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

10 Blessed be the kingdome of our father Daniel, that commeth in the Name of the Lord, Hosanna, in the Highest.

11 And Iesus entred into Hierusalem, and into the Temple, and when he had looked round about vppon all things, and now the even tide was come, hee went out vnto Bethanie with the twelue.

12 ¶ And on the morrow when they were come from Bethanie, he was hungry.

13 And seeing a figtree at a farre off, haning leaues, hee gaue it, if happily he might find any thing thereon, and when he came to it, hee found nothing but leaues: for the time of figs was not yet.

14 And Iesus answered, and said vnto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard it.

15 ¶ And they come to Hierusalem, and Iesus went into the Temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the Temple, and ouerthrew the tables of the money changers, and the seats of them that sold doves,

16 And would not suffer that any man should carrie any vessell thorow the Temple.

17 And he taught, saying vnto them, Is it not written, My house shalbe called of all nations, The house of prayer? But ye have made it a den of theues.

S. M A R K E.

18 And the Scribes and chiefe Priests heard it, and sought how they might destroy him : for they feared him , because all the people was astonied at his doctrine.

19 And when Euen was come, he went out of the citie,

20 ¶ And in the morning as they passed by , they saw the figtree dried vp from the rootes.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance saith vnto him, Master, behold, the figtree which thou cnfedit, is withered away.

22 And Iesus answering, saith vnto them , Haue faith in God.

23 For verily I say vnto you, That whosoever shall say vnto this mountaine, Be thou remoued, and be thou cast into y sea, and that not doabt in his heart, but shall beleue ythose things which he saith shall come to passe : he shall haue whatsoeuer he saith.

24 Therefore I say vnto you, What things soeuer ye desire when ye pray, beleue that ye receive them and ye shall haue them.

25 And when ye stand praying, forgine, if yee haue ought against any : that your Father also which is in heauen may forgiue you your trespasses.

26 But if yee doe not forgive , neither will your Father which is in heauen forgigne your trespasses.

27 And they come againe to Hietusalem , and as he was walking in the Temple , there come to him the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes, and the Elders,

28 And say vnto him , By what authority doest thou these things? and who gaue thee this authority to doe these things?

29 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, I will also aske of you one question and answere me, and I will tell you by what authority I doe these things.

30 The baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen , or of men? Answere me.

31 And they reasoned with themselves, saying , If we shall say , From heauen, he will say , Why did ye not beleue him?

32 But if we shall say , Of men , they feared the people : for all men counted Iohn that he was Prophet indeed.

33 And they answered and said vnto Iesus , We

C H A P. XII.

cannot tell, and Iesus answering, saith vnto them, Neither doe I tell you by what authority I doe these things.

C H A P. XII.

1 The parable of the vineyard. 12 Touching paying of tribute, 18 and the resurrection.

¶ And he began to speake vnto them by parables. A certaine man planted a vineyard, and set an hedge about it, and digged a place for the winefat, and built a towre, and let it out to husbandmen, and went downe into a farre countrey.

2 And at the season, he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.

3 And they caught him and beat him, and sent him away empty.

4 And againe he sent vnto them another servant, and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled.

5 And againe he sent another, and him they killed: and many others, beating some, and killing some.

6 Having yet therefore one sonne, his welbeloved, he sent him also last vnto them, saying, They will reverence my sonne.

7 But those husbandmen said among themselves, This is the heire, come, let vs kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours.

8 And they tooke him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard.

9 What shall therefore the Lord of the vineyard doe? He will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will giue the vineyard vnto others.

10 And haue ye not read this Scripture? The stone which the builders rejected, is become the head of the corner:

11 This was the Lords doing, and it is marmelous in our eyes.

12 And they sought to lay hold on him, but feared the people: for they knew & he had spoken the parable against them: & they left him, & went their way.

13 ¶ And they sent vnto him certaine of the Pharisees, & of the Herodians, to catch him in his words.

14 And when they were come, they say vnto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for

S. M A R K E.

28 men : for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth, Is it lawful to give tribute to Cesar or not?

13 Shall we give , or shall we not give ? But hee knowing their hypocrisie , said vnto them , Why tempt ye me ? Bring me a penny that I may see it .

14 And they brought it : and he saith vnto them , Whose is this image and superscription ? And they said vnto him Cesars .

15 And Iesus answering said vnto them , Render to Cesar the things that are Cesars , and to God the things that are Gods. And they marneiled at him .

16 ¶ Then came vnto him the Sadduces , which say there is no resurrection , and they asked him , saying ,

17 Master Moles wrote vnto vs , If a mans brother die , and leue his wife behind him , and leue no children that his brother should take his wife , and raise vp seed vnto his brother .

18 Now there were seuen brethren : and the first tooke a wife , and dying left not seed .

19 And the second tooke her and dyed , neither left he any seed , and the third likewise .

20 And the seuen had her , and left no seed : but of all the woman dyed also .

21 In the resurrection therefore , when they shall rise , whose wife shall she be of them ? for the sevens had her to wife .

22 And Iesus answering said vnto them , Doe ye not therefore err , because yee knew not the Scriptures , neither the power of God ?

23 For when they shall rise from the dead , they neither marrie , nor are given in marriage : but are as the Angels which are in heaven .

24 And astouching the dead , that they rise : have ye not read in the booke of Moses , how in the bush God spake vnto him , saying , I am the God of Abraham , and the God of Isaac , and the God of Jacob ?

25 He is no : the God of the dead , but the God of the living : ye therefore doe greatly err .

26 ¶ And one of the Scribes came , and having heard them reasoning together , and perceiving that he had answered them well , asked him which is the first commandement of all .

27 And

C H A P. X I V.

29 And Iesus answered him, The first of all the Commandements is, Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord:

30 And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soule, and with all thy minde, and with all thy strength: This is the first Commandement.

31 And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalte love thy neighbour as thy selfe; there is none other Commandement greater then these.

32 And the Scribe said vnto him, Well Master, thou hast said the trueth: for there is one God, and there is none other but he.

33 And to loue him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soule, & with all the strength, and to loue his neighbour as himselfe, is more then all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.

34 And when Iesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said vnto him, Thou art not far from the kingdome of God. And no man after that durst aske him any question,

35 ¶ And Iesus answered, and said, while he taught in the Temple, How say the Scribes that Christ is the Sonne of David?

36 For Dauid himselfe said by the holy Ghost? The Lord said vnto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstooles.

37 Dauid therefore himselfe calleth him, Lord, and whence is he then his sonne? And the common people heard him gladly.

38 ¶ And he said vnto them in his doctrine, Beware of the Scribes, which loue to goe in long cloathing, and loue salutations in the market places,

39 And the chiefe seates in the Synagogues, & the uppermost roomes at feasts;

40 Which devoure widdowes houses, & for a pretence make long prayers: These shall receive greater damnation.

41 ¶ And Iesus sat ouer against the treasury, and beheld how the people cast money into the treasury, and many that were rich cast in much.

42 And there came a certaine poore widdow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing.

S. M A R K E.

43 And he called vnto him his disciples, and saith vnto them, Verily I say vnto you, that this poore widdow hath cast more in, then all they that haue cast into the treasury:

44 For all they did cast in of their abundance: but she of her want, did cast in all that she had, even all her liuing.

C H A P. XIII.

2 *The destruction of the Temple, 9 Prosecutions for the Gospel. 14 Great calamities to the Jewes.*

A Nd as hee went out of the Temple, one of his discipiles saith vnto him, Master, see what maner of stones, and what buildings are these.

3 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shal not be left one stone vpon another, that shall not be throwne downe.

4 And as he sate vpon the mount of Olives, one against the Temple, Peter, and Iames, and Iohn, and Andrew asked him priuately,

4 Tell vs? When shall these things be? And what shalbe the signe whē all these things shalbe fulfilled?

5 And Iesus answering them, began to say, Take heed lest any man deceiue you.

6 For many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ: and shall deceiue many.

7 And when ye shall heare of warres and rumors of warres, be ye not troubled: For such things must needs be, bpt the end shall not be yet.

8 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome: and there shall bee earthquakes in divers places, and there shall be famines, and troubles: these are the beginnings of sorrowes.

9 ¶ But take heed to your selues: for they shall deliner you vp to counsels, and in the Synagogues ye shall be beaten; and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them.

10 And the Gospel must first be published among all nations.

11 But when they shall leade you, and deliner you vp, take no thought before hand what ye shall speake neither doe you premeditate: but whatsoever shall be given you in that honre, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speake, but the holy Ghost.

12 Now the brother shall betray the brother to death

C H A P. XIII.

death, and the father the sonne: and children shall rise vp agaist their parents, and shall cause them to be put to death.

13 And ye shall be hated of all men for my Names sake: but he that shall endure vnto the end, the same shall be sau'd.

14 ¶ But when ye shall see the abomination of desolation spoken of by Daniel the Prophet, standing where it ought not (let him ſtandeth vnderſtand,) then let them that be in Iudea flee to the mountains:

15 And let him that is on the house top, not goe downe into the house, neither enter therein to take any thing out of his house,

16 And let him that is in the field, not turne backe againe for to take vp his garment.

17 But woe to them that are with childe, and to them that give ſucke in thofe dayes,

18 And pray ye ſtay your flight be not in the winter,

19 For in thofe dayes ſhall be affliction, ſuch as was not from the beginning of the creation which God created, vnto this time, neithier ſhall be.

20 And except that the Lord had ſhortned thofe dayes, no fleiſh ſhould be ſained: but for the electis ſake whom he hath choſen, he hath ſhortned the dayes.

21 And then, if any man ſhall ſay to you, Lo here is Christ, or loe he is there: beleue him not.

22 For falſe Chrifts, and falſe Prophets ſhall riſe, and ſhall shew ſignes and wonders, to ſeduce, if it were poſſible, even the elect:

23 But take yee heed: behold, I haue foreſoldē you all thiſhes.

24 ¶ But in thofe dayes after that tribulation, the Sunne ſhall be darkened, and the Moone ſhall not giue her light.

25 And the Starres of heauen ſhall fall, and the powers that are in heauen ſhall be thaken.

26 And then ſhall they ſee the Sonne of man coming in the clouds with great power and glory.

27 And then ſhal he ſend his Angels, & ſhall gather together his elect from the foure winds, from the vtemoſt part of the earth, to the vtemoſt part of heauen.

28 Now leare a parable of the fig-tree, When her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaues, ye know that Summer is neeres;

S. M A R K E.

29 So ye in like manner, when ye shall see these things come to passe, Know y^e it is nigh, euen at the doome,

30 Verely I say vnto you, that this generation shall not passe, till all these things be done.

31 Heauen and earth shall passe away: but my words shall not passe away.

32 ¶ But of that day and that houre knoweth no man, ne^t nor the Angels which are in heauen, neither the Sonne, but the Father.

33 Take yee heed, watch and pray: for yee know not when the time is.

34 *For the Sonne of man is as a man taking a farre journey, who left his houle, and gane authoritie to his servants, and to euery man his worke, and commanded the porter to watch:*

35 Watch ye therefore (for ye know not when the master of the houle commeth, at euene, or at midnight, or at the cocke crowing, or in the morning.)

36 Lest comming suddenly, he find you sleeping.

37 And what I say vnto you, I say vnto all, Watch,

C H A P. X I I I I .

2 *Conspiracie against Christ.* 3 *A woman poureth oyle on his head.* 10 *Judas sealeth him.*

A fter two daves was the feist of the Pasceouer, and of unleavened bread: and the chiefe Priests, and Scribes sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to death.

2 But they said, Not on the feast day, lest there be an uproare of the people.

3 ¶ And being in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, as hee sate at meat, there came a woman, hauing an Alabaster boxe of Syntment of Spikenard very precious, and shee brake the boxe and powred it on his head.

4 And there were some that had indignation within themselves, and said, Why was this waste of the ointment made?

5 For it might haue beene sold for more then three hundred pence, and haue beeene giuen to the poore: and they mutmured against her.

6 And Iesus said, Let her alone, why trouble yee her? She hath wrought a good worke vpon me.

7 For yee haue the poore with you always, and whensoever ye will ye may do them good: but mea y^e haue not always.

8 *Sic*

C H A P. X I I I I.

8 She hath done what she could : she is come aforshand to anoint my body to the burying.

9 Verely I say vnto you, Wherelouer this Gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, this also that the hath done, shall be spoken of for a memoriall of her.

10 ¶ And Judas Iscariot one of the twelue, went vnto the chiese Priests, to betray him vnto them.

11 And when they heard it, they were glad and promised to give him money. And he sought how he might conueniently betray him.

12 ¶ And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the Passouer, his disciples said vnto him, Where wilt thou that we go, and prepare that thou mayest eat the Passouer ?

13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, & saith vnto them, Goe ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water : follow him.

14 And wherelouer he shall goe in, say ye to the goodman of the house, The Master saith, Where is the guest chamber, where I shall eat the Passouer with my disciples ?

15 And he will shew you a large vpper roome furnished, and prepared : there make ready for vs.

16 And his disciples went soorth, and came into the city, and found as he had said vnto them : and they made ready the Passouer.

17 And in the euening he cometh with the twelue.

18 And as they late and did eat, Iesus said, Verely I say vnto you, one of you which eateth with mee, shall betray me.

19 And they began to be sorrowfull, & to say vnto him, one by one, Is it I ? And another said Is it I ?

20 And he answered and said vnto them, It is one of the twelue, that dippeth with mee in the dish.

21 Th: Sonne of man indeede goeth, as it is written of him : but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed: Good were it for that man, if he had never beeene borne.

22 ¶ And as they did eat, Iesus tooke bread, and blessed, and brake it, & gaue to them, and said, Take, eat: this is my body.

23 And he tooke the cup, and when he had giuen thanks, he gaue it to them; and they all dranke of it.

24 And

S. M A R K E.

24 And he said vnto them, This is my blood of the new Testament, which is shed for many.

25 Verely I say vnto you, I will drinke no more of the fruit of the Vine, vntill that day that I drinke it new in the kingdome of God.

26 ¶ And when they had sung an hymne, they went out into the mount of Oliues.

27 And Iesus saith vnto them, All ye shalbe offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepheard, and the sheepe shalbe scattered,

28 But after that I am risen, I will goe before you into Galilee.

29 But Peter said vnto him, Although all shall be offended, yet will not I.

30 And Iesus saith vnto him, Verely I say vnto thee, that this day, even in this night, before the cocke crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.

31 But he spake the more vehemently, If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

32 And they came to a place which was named Gethsemany, and he saith to his disciples, Sit yee here, while I shall pray.

33 And he taketh with him Peter, and Iames and John, & began to be sore amazed, & to be very heauy.

34 And saith vnto them, My soule is exceeding sorrowfull vnto death: tary ye here and watch.

35 And hee went forward a little, and fell on the ground and prayed, that if it were possible, the houre might passe from him.

36 And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible vnto thee take away this Cup from me: Nevertheless, not that I will, but what thou wilst.

37 And he commeth, and findeth them sleeping, and saith vnto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? Couldest not thou watch one houre?

38 Watch ye and pray, lest ye enter into temptation: The spirit truly is ready, but the flesh is weake.

39 And againe hee went away, and prayed, and spake the faire words.

40 And when he returned, he found them asleepe againe (for their eyes were heany) neither wist they what to answere him.

41 And he committeth the third time, & saith vnto them,

C H A P. X I I I I .

them, Sleepe on now, and take your rest: it is enough
the houre is come, behold, the Sonne of man is be-
trayed into the hands of sinners.

42 Rise vp, let vs goe, Loe, he that betrayeth me
is at hand.

43 ¶ And immediatly, while he yet spake, com-
meth Indas, one of the twelue, and with him a great
multitude with swords and stanes, from the chiese
Priests and the Scribes, and the Elders.

44 And hee that betrayed him had giuen them a
token, saying, Whomsoever I thall kisse, that same
is he; take him, and lead him away safely.

45 And alioone as he was come, he goeth straight-
way to him, and faith, Master, Master, and kissed him.

46 ¶ And they laid their hands on him, and tooke
him,

47 And one of them that stood by drew a sword &
smote a servant of the high Priest, & cut off his eare.

48 And Iesus answered, and said vnto them, Are
yee come out as against a thefe, with swords and
with stanes to take me?

49 I was daily with you in þ Temple, teaching, and
ye tooke me norþbut the Scriptures must be fulfilled.

50 And they all forsooke him, and fled.

51 And there followed him a certaine yong man,
having a linnen cloth cast about his naked body, and
the yong men laid hold on him.

52 And hee left the linnen cloth, and fled from
them naked.

53 ¶ And they led Iesus away to the high Priest,
and with him were assembled all the chiese Priests,
and the Elders and the Scribes.

54 And Peter followed him afarre off, euен into
the palace of the high Priest: and he sate with the
servants, and warmed himselfe at the fire.

55 And the chiese Priests, and all the Councell
sought for witnes against Iesus, to put him to death,
and found none:

56 For many bare false witnesse against him, but
their witnesse agreed not together.

57 And there arose certaine, and bare false witnes-
ses against him, saying,

58 We heard him say, I will destroy this Temple
that is made with hands, & within three dayes I will
build another made without hands. 59 But

S. M A R K E.

59 But neither so did their witness agree together.

60 And the high Priest stood vp in the mids, and asked Iesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? Who is it that these witness against thee?

61 But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again, the hie Priest asked him, and said vnto him, Art thou the Christ, the Sonne of the blessed?

62 And Iesus said, I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heauen.

63 Then the high Priest rent his clothes, and saith, What need we any further witness?

64 Ye haue heard the blasphemey what thinke ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

65 And some began to spit on him, and to couer his face, and to buffet him, and to say vnto him, Prophecy: and the seruants did strike him with the palmes of their hands.

66 ¶ And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there commeth one of the maids of the high Priest.

67 And when shee saw Peter warming himselfe, she looked vpon him, and said, And thou also wast with Iesus of Nazareth.

68 But he denied, saying, I know not, neither understand I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porch, and the cocke crew.

69 And a maid saw him againe, and began to say to them that stood by, This is one of them.

70 And he denied it againe. And a little after they that stood by said againe to Peter, Surely thou art one of them: for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech agreeth thereto.

71 But he began to curse and to sweare, saying, I know not this man of whom ye speake.

72 And the second time the cocke crew; and Peter called to mind the word that Iesus said vnto him, Before the cocke crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrise. And when he thought theron, he wept.

C H A P. X V.

3 Iesus brought bound and accused before Pilate, 15 delivered to be crucified, 27 hangeth betwene two sheenes, 43 and is honourably buried.

A Nd straightway in y mornong the chiese Priests held a consultation with the Elders, & Scribes and

C H A P. X V.

and the whole Councill, and bound Iesus, and carried him away, and delivered him to Pilate.

2 And Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Lewes? And hee answering, said vnto him, Thou sayest it.

3 And the chiefe Priests accused him of many things, but he answered nothing.

4 And Pilate asked him againe, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they witness against thee.

5 But Iesus yet answered nothing, so that Pilate marvelled.

6 Now at the Feast hee released vnto them one prisoner, whomsoeuer they desired.

7 And there was one named Barabbas, which lay bound with them, & had made insurrection with him who had committed murder in the insurrection.

8 And the multitude crying aloude, began to desire him to doe as he had euer done vnto them.

9 But Pilate answered hem, saying, Will vee that I release vnto you the King of the Lewes?

10 (For hee knew that the chiefe Priests had delivered him for envy.)

11 But the chiefe Priests mooued the people, that he should rather release Barabbas vnto them.

12 And Pilate answered, and said againe vnto them, What will vee then that I shall doe vnto him whom ye call the King of the Lewes?

13 And they cryed out againe, Crucifie him.

14 Then Pilate said vnto them, Why, what euill hath he done? and they cryed out the more exceedingly, Crucifie him.

15 ¶ And so Pilate willing to content the people, released Barabbas vnto them, and delinered Iesus when he had scourged him, to be crucified.

16 And the soldiers led him away into f hall, called Pretorium, & they call together f whole band.

17 And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crowne of thornes, and put it about his head.

18 And beganne to salute him, Haile King of the Lewes.

19 And they smote him on the head with a reede, and did spit vpon him, and bowing their knees, worshipped him.

20 And

S. M A R K E.

20 And when they had mocked him, they tooke off the purple from him ; and put his owne clothes on him, and led him out to crucifie him.

21 And they compell one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, comming out of the countrey, the father of Alexander and Rufus to beare his croſſe.

22 And they bring him vnto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, the place of a ſkull.

23 And they gaue him to drinke, wine mingled with myrrhe : but he receiued it not.

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, casting lots vpon them, what euery man ſhould take.

25 And it was þ third houre, & they crucified him.

26 And þ superscription of his accuſation was written ouer, T H E K I N G O F T H E I E W E S,

27 And with him they crucified two theenes, the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

28 And the Scripture was fulfilled, which ſaith, And he was numbred with the transgrefſours.

29 And they that paſſed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and ſaying, Ah thou that deſtroyeſt the Temple, and buildest it in three dayes;

30 Saue thy ſelfe, & come downe from the croſſe.

31 Likewiſe alſo the chiefe Priests mocking, ſayd among themſelues with the Scribes, He ſaued others, himielfe he cannot ſave.

32 Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the croſſe, that wee may ſee and beleene : And they that were crucified with him, reviled him.

33 And when the ſixt houre was come, there was darknes ouer the whole land, vntill the ninth houre.

34 And at the ninth houre Iefus cryed with a loud voyce, ſaying, Eloi, Eloi, lama ſabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why haſt thou forlaken me?

35 And ſome of them that stood by, when they heard it, ſaid, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ranne, and filled a ſpunge full of vineger, and put it on a reede, and gaue him to drinke, ſaying, Let alone, let vs ſee whether Elias will come to take him downe.

37 And Iefus cryed with a loude voyce, and gaue vp the ghost.

38 And

C H A P. X V I.

38 And the vaile of the Temple was rent in twaine from the top to the bottome.

39 ¶ And when the Centurion which stood over against him, saw that he so cryed out, and gaue vp the ghost, he said, Truly this man was the Son of God.

40 There were also women looking on a farre off, among whom was Mary Magdalene, & Mary the mother of Iames the less, and of Ioses and Salome:

41 Who also when he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministred vnto him, & many other women which came vp with him vnto Hierusalem.

42 ¶ And now when the Even was come, (because it was the Preparation, that is, the day before the Sabbath.)

43 Joseph of Arimathea, an honourable counsellor, which also waited for the kingdome of God came, & went in boldly vnto Pilate, and craved the body of Iesos.

44 And Pilate maruelled if he were already dead, and calling vnto him the Centurion, hee asked him whether he had beene any while dead?

45 And when he knew it of the Centurion, he gaue the body to Joseph.

46 And bee bought fine linnen, and tooke him downe, and wrapped him in the linnen, and laid him in a Sepulchre which was hewen out of a rocke, and rolled a stonye vnto the doore of the Sepulchre,

47 And Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Ioses beheld where he was laid.

C H A P. X V I.

1 Christ's resurrection. 9 He appeareth to Mary Magdalene and others. 15 Sendeth forth his Apostles. 19 and ascendeth into heaven.

¶ And when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of Iames, & Salome, had bouht sweete spices, that they might come and anoint him.

2 And very early in the morning, the first day of the week they came vnto the Sepulchre, at the rising of the Sunne.

3 And they said among themselves, Who shall roll vs away the stone from the doore of the Sepulchre?

4 (And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away) for it was very great.

5 And

S. M A R K E.

5 And entring into the Sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, clothed in a long white garment, and they were affrighted.

6 And he saith unto them, Be not affrighted, ye seek Jesus of Nazareth which was crucified; he is risen, he is not here: behold the place where they laid him.

7 But goe you way, tell his disciples, and Peter, that he goeth before you into Galilee, there shall ye see him, as he said vnto you.

8 And they went out quickly, & fled from the Sepulchre, for they trembled, and were amazed, neither said they any thing to any man, for they were afraid.

9 ¶ Now when Jesus was risen early, the first day of the weeke, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils.

10 And she went and told them that had beene with him, as they mourned and wept.

11 And they, when they had heard that hee was alive, and had beene seene of her, beleueed not.

12 ¶ After that, he appeared in another forme vnto two of them, as they walked, and went into the countrey.

13 And they went and told it vnto the residue, neither beleueed they them.

14 ¶ Afterward hee appeared to the eleven, as they sate at meat, and vpbraid led them w their unbelief, and hardnessse of heart, because they beleueed not them, which had seene him after he was risen.

15 And he said vnto them, Goe ye into all the world and preach the Gospel vnto every creature.

16 He that beleueueth and is baptizid, shal be saved, but he that beleueneth not, shall be damned.

17 And these signes shall follow them that beleue, In my name shall they cast out devils, they shall speake with new tongues,

18 They shall take vp serpents, & if they drinke any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them, they shall lay hands on the sicke, and they shall recover.

19 ¶ So then after the Lord had spoken vnto them, he was received vp into heauen, and sate on the right hand of God.

20 And they went foorth, & preached euery where, the Lord working with them; and confirming the word with signes following. Amen.

¶ The

C H A P. I.

The Gospel according to S. Luke.

C H A P. I.

1 Lukes presence. 5 The conception of John Baptist, 26 and of Christ. 59 The circumcision of John.

Orasmuch as many haue taken in hand to set foorth in order, a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among vs,

2 Euen as they delivred them vnto vs, which from the beginning were eye witneses, and ministers of the word:

3 It seemed good to me also, hauing had perfect understanding of things from the very first to write vnto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus.

4 That thou mightest know the certainty of those things wherin thou hast beeene instructed.

5 ¶ **T**here was in the dayes of Herod the king of Iudea, a certayne Priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia, and his wife was of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elizabeth.

6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandements and ordinances of the Lord blamelesse.

7 And they had no childe because that Elizabeth was barren, and they both were now well stricken in yeeres.

8 And it came to passe, that while he executed the Priests office before God in the order of his contrie,

9 According to the custome of the Priests office, his lot was to burne incense when hee went into the Temple of the Lord.

10 And the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the time of incense.

11 And there appeared vnto him an Angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the altar of incense.

12 And when Zacharias saw him, he was troubled, and feare fell vpon him.

13 But the Angel said vnto him, Feare not, Zacharias, for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elizabeth shall beare thee a sonne, and thou shalt call his name John.

14 And thou shalt haue ioy and gladoesse, and many shall reioyce at his birth:

S. M A R K E.

15 For hee shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drinke neither wine nor strong drinke, and he shall be filled with the holy Ghost, euen from his mothers wombe.

16 And many of the children of Israel shall bee turne to the Lord their God.

17 And hee shall goe before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turne the hearts of the fathers to the children, & the disobedient to the wisdom of the just, to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

18 And Zacharias said vnto the Angel, Wherby shall I know this? For I am an olde man, and my wife well stricken in yeeres.

19 And the Angel answering, said vnto him, I am Gabriel that stand in the presence of God, & am sent to speake vnto thee, & to shew thee these glad tidings.

20 And behold, thou shalt be dumbe, and not able to speake, vntill the day that these things shall be performed, because thou beleeuest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

21 And the people waited for Zacharias, and marveiled that hee tarried so long in the Temple.

22 And when he came out, he could not speake vnto them: and they perceiued that he had seene a vision in the Temple: for he beckened vnto them, and remained speechlesse.

23 And it came to passe, that assoone as the dayes of his ministracion were accomplished, hee departed to his owne house.

24 And after those dayes his wife Elizabeth conueied, and bid her selfe ffeue moneths, saying,

25 Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the daies wherein he looked on me, to take away my reproach among men.

26 And in the sixt moneth, the Angel Gabriel was sent from God, vnto a citie of Galilee, named Nazareth,

27 To a virgine espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David, and the virgines name was Mary.

28 And the Angel came in vnto her, and said, Haile shoo that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee: Blessed art thou among women.

29 And when shee saw him, shee was troubled at his

C H A P. I.

his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be.

30 And the Angel said vnto her, Feare not, Mary, for thou hast found fauour with God.

31 And behold thou shalt conceiue in thy wombe, and bring foorth a son, and shalt call his name Iesus;

31 He shall be great, and shall be called the sonne of the Highest, and the Lord God shall give vnto him the throne of his father Dauid.

33 And hee shall reigne ouer the house of Iacob for euer, and of his kingdome there shall be no end.

34 Then said Mary vnto the Angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man?

35 And the Angel answered, and said vnto her, The holy Ghost shall come vpon thee, and the power of the Highest shall ouerthade thee. Therefore also that Holy thing which shall be borne of thee, shall be called the Sonne of God.

36 And behold, thy cousin Elizabeth, she hath also conceiued a sonne in her old age, and this is the sixt soneth with her, who was called barren.

37 For with God nothing shall be vnpossible.

38 And Mary said, Behold, the handmaide of the Lord; be it vnto me according to thy word: and the Angel departed from her.

39 And Mary arose in those dayes, and went into the hill countrey, with haste into a citie of Iuda,

40 And entred into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elizabeth.

41 And it came to passe, that when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary the babe leaped in her womb, and Elizabeth was filled with the holy Ghost.

42 And she spake out with a lond voice, and said, Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy wombe.

43 And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me?

44 For lo, as soon as v voice of thy salutatio sounded in mine eares, the babe leaped in my wombe for ioy.

45 And blessed is she that beleeveth, for there shall be a performance of those things, which were tolde her from the Lord.

46 And Mary said, My soule doth magnifie v Lord.

47 And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.

48 For

S. L V K E.

48 For hee hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden : for behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.

49 For hee that is mighty hath done to mee great things, and holy is his Name.

50 And his mercy is on them that feare him, from generation to generation.

51 He hath shewed strength with his arm, he hath scattered the proude in the imagination of their hearts.

52 He hath put downe the mighty from their seats, and exalted them of low degree.

53 He hath filled the hungry with good things, and the rich he hath sent empty away.

54 He hath holpen his seruant Israel , in remembrance of his mercy,

55 As he spake to our fathers, to Abraham, and to his seed for euer.

56 And Mary abode with her about three moneths and returned to her owne house.

57 Now Elizabeths full time came that she shold be delinered, and she brought foorth a sonne.

58 And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy vpon her, and they reioyced with her.

59 And it came to passe that on the eight day they came to circumcise the childe , and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

60 And his mother auswered, and said, Not so, but he shall be called Iohn.

61 And they said vnto her , There is none of thy kynred that is called by this name.

62 And they made signes to his father , how he would haue him called.

63 And hee asked for a writing table , and wrote, saying, His name is Iohn : and they marneiled all.

64 And his mouth was opened immediatly , and his tongue loosed, and he spake, and praised God.

65 And feare came on all that dwelt round about them, and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill countrey of Iudea.

66 And all they that had heard them, laid them vp in their hearts, saying , What maner of child shall this be? And the hand of the Lord was with him.

67 And

C H A P. II.

67 And his father Zacharias was filled with the holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,

68 Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, for he hath visited and redeemed his people,

69 And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David,

70 As he spake by the mouth of his holy Prophets, which have beene since the world began :

71 That we should be saved from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate vs.

72 To performe the mercy promised to our fathers, and to remembet his holy Covenant,

73 The oath which hee swore to our father Abraham.

74 That he would grant vnto vs, that wee being deliuered out of the hands of our enemies, might serue him without feare,

75 In holinesse and tigheousnesse before him, all the dayes of our life.

76 And thou child shalt be called the Prophet of the highest : for thou shalt goe before the face of the Lord to prepare his wayes,

77 To give knowledge of salvation vnto his people by the remission of their sinnes,

78 Through the tender mercy of our God, whereby the day-spring from an high hath visited vs,

79 To gine light to them that sit in darnessse, and in the thadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.

80 And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts, till the day of his iiewing vnto Israel.

C H A P. II.

1 *Augustus taxeth all the Roman Empire. & Christ is
natv. y. 21 His circumcision.*

And it came to passe in those dayes, that there went out a decree from Cesar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed.

2 (And this taxing was first made, when Cyrenus was governour of Syria.)

3 And all went to bee taxed, every one into his owne citie.

4 And Joseph also went vp from Galilee, out of the citie of Nazareth, into Iudea, vnto the citie of

David

S. I V K E.

Dauid, which is called Bethleheim, (because he was
of the house and linage of David.)

5 To be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being
great with child.

6 And so it was, that while they were there, the
dayes were accomplished that she shoulde be deliuered.

7 And shee brought foorth her first borne sonne,
and wrapped him in swadling clothes, and laid him
in a manger; because there was no roome for them
in the Isle.

8 And there were in the same countrey shep-
heards abiding in the field: keeping watch over
their flocke by night.

9 And loe, the Angel of the Lord came vpon
them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about
them, and they were sore afraid.

10 And the Angel said vnto them, Feare not: For
behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which
shall be to all people.

11 For unto you is borne this day, in the citie of
Dauid, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.

12 And this shall be a signe vnto you, ye shal find
the babe wrapped in swadling clothes lying in a
manger.

13 And suddenly there was with the Angels a great
multitude of the heavenly hoste, praising God, & saying

14 Glory to God in the highest, and on earth
peace, good will towards men.

15 And it came to passe, as the Angels were gone
away from them into heaven, the shepheards said
one to another, Let vs now goe even vnto Bethle-
heim and see this thing which is come to passe, which
the Lord hath made knowne vnto vs.

16 And they came with haste, and found Mary and
Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger.

17 And when they had seen it, they made knowne
broad sy saying wher it was told them concerning this child.

18 And all they that heard it, wondered at those
things which were told them by the shepheards.

19 But Mary kept all these things, and pondered
them in her heart.

20 And the shepheards returned, glorifying and
praising God for all the things that they had heard
and seene, as it was told vnto them.

21 An-

C H A P. II.

21 And when eight dayes were accomplished for the circumcising of the childe, his name was called Iesus, which was so named of the Angel before hee was conceiuied in the wombe.

22 And when the dayes of her purification according to the Law of Moses, were accomplished, they brought him to Hierusalem, to present him to the Lord.

23 (As it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the wombe shall be called holie to the Lord.)

24 And to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the Law of the Lord, a paire of turtle doves, or two yong pigeons.

25 And behold, there was a man in Hierusalem, whose name was Simeon, and the same man was iust and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the holy Ghost was vpon him.

26 And it was revealed vnto him by the holy Ghost, that he shold not see death, before he had seen the Lords Christ.

27 And he came by the spirit into the Temple; and when the parents brought in the childe Iesus, to doe for him after the custome of the Law;

28 Then tooke he him vp in his armes, and blessed God and said,

29 Lord, now lettest thou thy seruant depart in peace, according to thy word.

30 For mine eyes haue seene thy saluation.

31 Which thou hast prepared before the face of all people.

32 A light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel.

33 And Joseph and his mother maruailed at those things which were spoken of him.

34 And Simeon blessed them, and said vnto Mary his mother, Behold, this childe is set for the fall and rising againe of many in Israel: and for a signe which shall be spoken against.

35 (Yea a sword shall pierce thorow thine own soule also) y the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.

36 And there was one Anna a Prophetesse, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser; she was of a great age, and had liued with an husband seuen yeeres from her virginity.

S. L V K E.

37 And she was a widow of about fourscore and
fourte yeres, which departed not from the Temple, but
serued God with fastings and prayers night and day.

38 And she comming in that instant, gane thankes
likewise vnto the Lord, and spalte of him to all them
that looked for redemption in Hierusalem.

39 And when they had performed all things ac-
cording to the Law of the Lord, they returned into
Galilee, to their owne city Nazareth.

40 And the child grew, & waxed strong in spirit,
filled wth wisdom & the grace of God was vpon him.

41 Now his parents went to Hierusalem every
yeare at the Paschouer.

42 And when he was twelve yeres old, they went
up to Hierusalem after the cattome of the feast.

43 And when they had fulfilled the dayes, as they
returned, the childe Iesus taried behind in Hierusale-
m, and Joseph and his mother knew not of it.

44 But they supposing him to haue beeene in the
company wente dayes iourney, and they sought him
among their kinnesfolke and acquaintance.

45 And when they found him not, they turned
backe againe to Hierusalem, seeking him.

46 And it came to passe that after three dayes they
found him in the Temple sitting in the midst of the
Doctors, both hearing them, & asking them questions.

47 And all that heard him, were astoisithed at his
understanding and answeres.

48 And when they saw him, they were amazed:
and his mother said vnto him, Sonne, why hast thou
thus dealt with vs? Behold, thy father and I haue
sought thee sorrowing.

49 And he said vnto them, How is it that ye sought
me? Wist ye not that I must bee about my Fathers
businesse?

50 And they vnderstood not the saying which he
spake vnto them.

51 And he went downe with them, and came to
Nazareth, and was subiect vnto them: But his mo-
ther kept all these sayings in her heart.

52 And Iesus increased in wisedome and stature,
and favour with God and man.

C H A P. III.

Johns preaching. 15 His testimony of Christ.

NOW

CHAP. III.

Now in the fifteenth yere of ſeigne of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being gouernour of Indea, and Herod being Tetrarch of Galile, and his brother Philip Tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Trachoris, and Lysanias the Tetrarch of Abilene,

2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high Priests, the word of God came vnto Iohn the ſonne of Zacharias, in the wildernesſe.

3 And hee came into all the countrey about Jordan, preaching the baptisme of repenteſce for the remiſſion of ſinnes,

4 As it is written in the booke of the words of Elias the Prophet, ſaying, The voyce of one crying in the wildernesſe, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his path ſtraight.

5 Every valley ſhalbe filled, & euery mountaine and hill ſhall be brought low, & the crooked ſhalbe made ſtraight, and the rough wayes ſhalbe made ſmoothe.

6 And all flesh ſhall ſee the ſaluation of God.

7 Then ſaid he to the multitude that came foorth to be baptized of him, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring foorth therefore ſuites worthy of repenteſce, and begin not to ſay within your ſelues, We haue Abraham to our father. For I ſay vnto you, that God is able of theſe ſtones to raife vp children vnto Abraham.

9 And now alſo the axe is lyd to the root of the trees: Euery tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewen downe, and cast into the fire.

10 And the people asked him, ſaying, What ſhall we doe then?

11 Hee anſwereth and ſaith vnto them, Hee that hath two coates, let him impart to him that hath none, and he that hath meat, let him doe likewife.

12 Then came alſo Publicaneſ to bee baptized, and ſaid vnto him, Master, what ſhall we doe?

13 And hee ſaid vnto them, Exact no more then that which is appointed you.

14 And the ſouldiers likewife demanded of him, ſaying, And what ſhall we doe? And he ſaid vnto them, Doe violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely, and be content with your wages.

15 And as the people were in exhortation, and

S. L V K E.

all men mused in their hearts of Iohn, whether he were the Christ or not :

16 Iohn answered, saying vnto them all, I indeed baptize you with water : but one mightier then I commeth, the latchet of whose shooes I am not worthy to vnloose, hee shall baptize you with the holy Ghost, and with fire :

17 Whose fanne is in his hand , and he will thorowly purge his floore , and will gather the wheate into his garner, but the chaffe he will burne with fire unquenchable.

18 And many other things in his exhortation preached he vnto the people.

19 But Herod the Tetrarch being reprooued by him for Herodias his brother Philips wife, and for all the euils which Herod had done,

20 Added this yet aboue all, that he shut vp Iohn in prison.

21 Now when all the people were baptized, and it came to passe, that Iesus also being baptized, and praying, the heauen was opened:

22 And the holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove vpon him , and a voyce came from heauen, which said, Thou art my beloved Sonne, in thee I am well pleased.

23 And Iesus himselfe began to be about thirtie yeeres of age (being as was supposed) the sonne of Ioseph, which was the sonne of Heli,

24 Which was the sonne of Matthat , which was the sonne of Leui , which was the sonne of Melchi, which was the sonne of Ianna , which was the sonne of Ioseph,

25 Which was the sonne of Matthathias , which was the sonne of Amos, which was the sonne of Naum, which was the sonne of Elly, which was the sonne of Nagge,

26 Which was the sonne of Maith , which was the sonne of Matthathias , which was the sonne of Seime, which was the sonne of Ioseph , which was the sonne of Iuda,

27 Which was the sonne of Ioama, which was the sonne of Rhesa , which was the sonne of Zorobabel which was the sonne of Salathiel, which was the sonne of Nezi.

28 Which

C H A P. IIII.

- 28 Which was the sonne of Melchi, which was the sonne of Addi, which was the sonne of Cosam, which was the sonne of Elmodam which was the sonne of Er,
- 29 Which was the sonne of Iose, which wasthe son of Eliezer, which was the sonne of Ioram, which was the sonne of Matthat, which wasthe son of Ieui,
- 30 Which was the son of Simeon, which was the sonne of Iuda, which was the sonne of Ioseph, which was the son of Ionan,which was the sonne of Eliakim,
- 31 Which was the sonne of Melea, which was the sonne of Menam,which was the son of Mattatha,which was the sonne of Nathan,which was the son of Dauid,
- 32 Which was the sonne of Iesse, which was the sonne of Obed, which was the son of Booz, which was the sonne of Salmon which was the sonne of Naasson,
- 33 Which was the sonne of Aminadab,which was the sonne of Aram,which was the son of Esrom,which was the sonne of Phares, which was the sonne of Iuda,
- 34 Which was the sonne of Iacob, which was the sonne of Isaac,which was the sonne of Abraham,which was the sonne of Thara,which was the sonne of Nachor,
- 35 Which was the sonne of Sarich,which was the sonne of Ragan, which was the sonne of Phaleg which was the sonne of Heber, which was the sonne of Sala,
- 36 Which was the sonne of Cainan, which was the sonne of Arphaxad,which was the sonne of Sem,which was the sonne of Noe, which was the son of Lamech,
- 37 Which was the sonne of Mathathia, which was the sonne of Enoch,which was the son of Jared,which was the sonne of Maleleel, w was the son of Cainan,
- 38 Which was the sonne of Enoe, which was the sonne of Seth, which was the sonne of Adam, which was the sonne of God.

C H A P. IIII.

1 Christis temptation and falling. 13 HEE overcometh the deuill, 14 and beginneth to preach.

A Nd Iesus being full of the holy Ghost , retrned from Iordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wildernesse.

2 Being fourty dayes tempted of the deuill , and in th se dayes he did eate nothing : and when they wer ended, he afterward hungred.

3 And the deuill said vnto him , If thou be the Sonne of God, command this stome that it be made bread.

S. L U K E.

4 And Iesus answered him, saying, It is written, that man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God.

5 And the devill taking him vp into an high mountaine, shewed vnto him all the kingdomes of world in a moment of time.

6 And the devill said vnto him, All this power will I giue thee, and the glory of them^{for} that is deliuert vnto me, and to whom soever I will, I give it.

7 If therefore thou wilt worship me, all shal be thine.

8 And Iesus answered, & said vnto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, & him onely shalt thou serue.

9 And he brought him to Hierusalem, & set him on a pinnacle of the Temple, & said vnto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thy selfe downe from hence:

10 For it is written, Hee shall giue his Angels charge ouer thee, to keepe thee:

11 And in their hands they shall beare thee vp, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

12 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

13 And when the devill had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season.

14 ¶ And Iesus returned in the power of the spirit into Galilee, and there went out a fame of him through all the region round about.

15 And he taught in their Synagogues, being glorified of all.

16 ¶ And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought vp, & as his custome was, he went into a Synagogue on the Sabbath day, & stood vp for to reade.

17 And there was deliuert vnto him the booke of the Prophet Esaias, and when he had opened the booke, he found the place where it was written,

18 The spirit of the Lord is vpon me, because he hath anointed me, to preach the Gospel to the poore, he hath sent me to heale of broken heartes, to preach deliverance to the captiues, and reconserning of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised.

19 To preach the acceptable yeere of the Lord.

20 And he closed the booke, & he gaue it againe to the minister, & sat downe: and the eyes of all them that were in the Synagogue, were fastened on him.

21 And

C H B P. I I I I.

31 And he began to say vnto them, This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your eares.

32 And all bare him witnesse, and wondred at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Iosephs son ?

33 And he said vnto them, Ye will surely say vnto me this prouebe, Physician heale thy selfe : Whatsoeuer we haue heard done in Capernaum , doe also here in thy countrey.

34 And he said, Verely I say vnto you, No Prophet is accepted in his owne countrey.

35 But I tell you of trueth, Many widowes were in Israel in the dayes of Elias, when the heauen was shot vp three yeeres and sixe moneths , when great famine was throughout all the land :

36 But vnto none of the was Elias sent, saue vnto Sa-cepta a city of Sidon, vnto a woman y was a widow.

37 And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Elias the Prophet: and none of them was cleansed saving Naaman the Syrian.

38 And all they in the Synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath,

39 And rose vp & thrust him out of the city, and led him vnto the brow of the hill (whereon their city was boylt) that they might cast him downe headlong.

40 But he passing thropv the middest of them, went his way :

41 And came downe to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the Sabbath dayes.

42 And they were affonted at his doctrine : for his word was with power.

43 ¶ And in the Synagogue there was a man, which had a spirit of an vneleane deuill , and cryed out with a lowd voyce,

44 Saying, Let vs alone, what haue we to do with thee, thou Iesus of Nazareth ? art y come to destroy us ? I know thee who thou art, the holy One of God.

45 And Iesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when y deuill had throwen him in the mids, he came out of him, & hurt him not.

46 And they were all amazed , and spake among themselves, saying, What a word is this ? for with authority and power he commandeth the vneleane spittis and they come out.

S. I V K E.

37 And the same of him went out into every place
of the countrey round about.

38 ¶ And he arose out of the Synagogene & entred
into Simons house: and Simons wiues mother was
taken wⁱa great feuer, and they besought him for her.

39 And he stood ouer her, and rebuked the feuer,
and it left her. And immediatly the arose, and minis-
tered vnto them.

40 ¶ Now when the Sonne was setting, all they
that had any sieke with divers diseases, brought
them vnto him: and he layd his hands on every one
of them, and healed them.

41 And devils also came out of many, crying ou,
and saying, Thou art Christ the Sonne of God. And
he rebuking them, suffered them not to speake: for
they knew that he was Christ.

42 And when it was day, he departed, and went
into a desert place: and the people songht him, and
came vnto him, and stayed him, that he shoulde not
depart from them.

43 And he said vnto them, I must preach the kingdom
of God to other cities also for therefore am I sent.

44 And he preached in the Synagogues of Galilee.

C H A P. V.

3 Christ teacheth out of the shipp. 6 Miraculous
straight of fishes.

A nd it came to passe, that as the people preassed
vpon him to heare the word of God, he stood
by the lake of Genefareth.

2 And saw two shippes standing by the lake: but
the fishemen were gone out of them, and were wash-
ing their nets.

3 And he entered into one of the shippes, which was
Simons, and praied him that he would thrust out a
little from the land; and he sate downe, and taught
the people out of the shipp.

4 Now when he had left speaking, he said vnto
Simon, Lanch out into the deepe, and let downe
your nets for a draught.

5 And Simon answering, said vnto him, Master,
we have toiled all night, and have taken nothing:
neverthelesse, at thy word I will let downe the net.

6 And when they had done this they inclosed a
great multitude of fishes, and their net brake:

7 And

C.H A P. V.

7 And they beckened vnto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they shoulde come and helpe them. And they came and filled both the ships so that they began to sink.

8 When Simon Peter saw it, hee fell downe at Iesu's knees, saying, Depart from me, for I am a sinfull man, O Lord.

9 For he was astonished, and all y were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken.

10 And so was also Iames and Iohn, the sonnes of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Iesu said vnto Simon, Feare not, from henceforth thou shalt catch men.

11 And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsooke all, and followed him.

12 ¶ And it came to passe, when he was in a certayne city, behold a man full of leprosie: who seeing Iesu, fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me cleane.

13 And he put foorth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will, bee thou cleane. And immediately the leprosie departed from him.

14 And he charged him to tell no man: but go, and shew thy selfe to þ Priest, & offer for thy cleantynge according as Moses comanded for a testimony vnto the.

15 But so much the more went there a fame abroad of him, and great multitudes came together to heare and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

16 And hee withdrew himselfe into the wildernes, and prayed.

17 And it came to passe on a certayne day, as hee was teaching, that there were Pharisees and Doctors of the Law sitting by, which were come out of euery towne of Galilee, and Iudea, and Hierusalem: and the power of the Lord was present to heale them.

18 ¶ And behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken with a palsie: and they sought meanes to bring him in, and to lay him before him.

19 And when they could not find by what way they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went vp on the house top, and let him down thorow the tiling with his couch into the midſt before Iesu.

20 And when hee saw their faith, hee said vnto him, Man, thy yernes are forgiven thee.

S. I. V E.

21 And the Scribes and Pharisees began to reason saying, Who is this which speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sinnes, but God alone?

22 But when Iesus perceived their thoughts, hee answering said vnto them, What reason you in your hearts?

23 Whether is easier to say, Thy sinnes be forgiven thee: or say, Rise vp and walke?

24 But that ye may know that the Sonne of man hath power on earth to forgive sinnes (he said vnto the sicke of the palsey) I say vnto thee, Arise, and take vp thy couch, and goe into thine house.

25 And immediatly hee rose vp before them, and roblete vp that whereon he lay, and departed to his owne house, glorifying God.

26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with feare, saying, Wee have seene strange things to day.

27 ¶ And after these things he went soothr, and saw a Public me, named Lem, sitting at the receipt of chitorne: and he said vnto him, Follow me.

28 And he leſc all, rose vp, and followed him.

29 And Lem made him a great feast in his owne house: and there was a great company of Publicanes, and of others that sat downe with them.

30 But the Scribes & Pharisées murmured against his disciples, saying, Why doe yee eate and drinke with Publicanes and sinnes?

31 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, They that are whole, need not a physician, but they ſtare ſickes.

32 I came not to call the righteous, but ſinnes to ſepentance.

33 ¶ And they ſaid vnto him, Why doe the diſcipliſes of Iohn ſat fast, and make prayers, and like- wife the diſcipliſes of the Pharisées: but thine eate and drinke.

34 And he ſaid vnto them, Can ye make the chil- dren of the Bride-chamber fast, while the Bride- groome is with them?

35 But the dayes will come, when the Bridegroomme ſhall be taken away from them, and then ſhall they fast in those dayes.

36 ¶ And he ſpake alſo a parable vnto the, No man gargeth a piece of a new garment vpon an old; if oþer-

wife,

C H A P. VI.

wife, then both y new maketh a rent, & the piece that was taken out of the new, agreeth not with the old.

37 And no man putteth new wine into old bottels else the new wine will burst the bottels, and be spilled, and the bottels shall perish.

38 But new wine must be put into new bottels, and both are preserved.

39 No man also having drunk old wine straightway desireth new: for he saith, the old is better.

C H A P. VI.

1 *The disciples plucke the ears of corne on the Sabbath day. 13 Christ chaseth the swine.*

And it came to passe on the second Sabbath after the first, that he went thorow the corne fields: and his disciples plucked the ears of corne, and did eat, rubbing them in their hands.

2 And certaine of the Pharisées said vnto them, Why doe ye that which is not lawfull to do on the Sabbath dayes,

3 And Iesus answering them, said, Hane ye not read so much as this what Dauid did, when him selfe was an hungred, and they which were with him:

4 How he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the shewbread, and gaue also to them that were with him, which it is not lawfull to eate but for the Priests alone?

5 And he sayd vnto them, That the Sonne of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

6 And it came to passe also on another Sabbath, that he entred into the Synagogue, and taught: and there was a man whose right hand was withered.

7 And the Scribes and Pharisées watched him, whether he would heale on the Sabbath day: that they might find an accusation against him.

8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise vp, & stand forth in the mids. And he arose, and stood forth.

9 Then said Iesus vnto them, I will aske you one thing, Is it lawfull on the Sabbath dayes to doe good, or to doe euill? to save life or destroy it?

10 And looking round about vpon them all, he said vnto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he did so, and his hand was restored whole as the other.

11 And they were filled with madnes, and commuted

S. LVKE.

bed one with another what they might doe to Iefus,

12 And it came to passe in those dayes, that hee went ou into a mountaine to pray, and continued all night in prayer vnto God.

13 ¶ And when it was day, he called vnto him his disciples: and of them he chose twelue: whom also he named Apostles:

14 Simon, (whom he also named Peter,) and Andrew his brother: Iames and Iohn, Philip and Bar. tholomew,

15 Matthew and Thomas, Iames the sonne of Alpheus, and Zimon, called Zelotes,

16 And Iudas *the brother of Iames*, and Iudas Iscariot, which also was the traitour.

17 And he came downe with them, and stood in the plaine, & the company of his disciples, & a great multitude of people out of all Iudea & Hierusalem, and from the Sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to heare him, and to be healed of their diseases.

18 And they that were vexed with uncleane spirits: and they were healed.

19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went vertue out of him, & healed them all.

20 ¶ And he lifted vp his eyes on his disciples, and said, Blessed be ye poore: for yours is the kingdome of God.

21 Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. Blessed are ye that weepe now for ye shall laugh.

22 Blessed are ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from their company, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as euill, for the Sonne of mans sake.

23 Reioyce ye in that day, and leape for ioy: for behold, your reward is great in heauen: for in the like manner did their fathers vnto the Prophets.

24 But woe vnto you that are rich: for ye haue received your consolation.

25 Woe vnto you that are full: for ye shall hunger. Woe vnto you that laugh now: for ye shall mourne and weepe.

26 Woe vnto you when all men shall speake wel of you: for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

27 ¶ But I say vnto you which heare, Love your enemies, dñe good to them that hate you;

28 Bleste

C H A P. V I.

28 Bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you.

29 And vnto him that smiteth thee on the one cheeke, offer also the other: and him that taketh away thy cloake, forbid him not to take thy coat also.

30 Give to every man that asketh of thee, & of him that taketh away thy goods, aske them not againe.

31 And as you would that men shoulde doe to you doe ye also to them likewise.

32 For if ye loue them that loue you, what thanke haue ye? for sinners also loue those that loue them.

33 And if yee doe good to them which doe good to you, what thanke haue ye? for sinners also doe even the same.

34 And if ye lend to them of whom you hope to receive, what thanke haue ye: for sinners also lend to sinners to receiue as much againe.

35 But loue ye your enemies, & doe good & lend, hoping for nothing againe: and your reward shalbe great, and yefshalbe the children of the Highest: for he is kind vnto the vnthankefull, and to the euill.

36 Be ye therefore mercifull, as your Father, also is mercifull.

37 Judge not, and ye shall not be iudged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgiue, and ye shall all be forgiuen.

38 Give and it shall be giuen vnto you, good mea-
sure, prested downe, and thaken together, and run-
ning ouer, shall men give into your bosome: for with
the same meausure that you mete withall, it shalbe
measured to you againe.

39 And he spake a parable vnto them, Can the blind lead the blind? Shall they not both fall into the ditch?

40 The disciple is not aboue his master: but every
one that is perfect, shalbe as his master.

41 And why beholdest thou the mote that is in
thy brothers eye, but perceiuest not the beame that
is in thine owne eye?

42 Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Bro-
ther, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye: when
thou thy selfe beholdest not the beame that is in
thine owne eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the
beame out of thine owne eye, and then shalt thou see
clearly to pull out the mote that is thy brothers eye.

43 For

S. L V K E.

43 For a good tree bringeth not foorth corrupt fruit : neither doth a corrupt tree bring foorth good fruit.

44 For every tree is knownen by his owne fruite: for of thornes men doe not gather figges , nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes.

45 A good man out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth foorth that which is good : and an evill man out of the euill treasure of his heart, bringeth foorth that which is euill. For of the abundance of the heart, his mouth speaketh.

46 ¶ And why call ye me Lord, Lord, and doe not the things which I say ?

47 Whosoeuer commeth to me, & heareth my sayings, & doth them, I wil shew you to who he is like.

48 He is like a man which built a house, and digged deepe, and laid the founation on a Rocke. And when the flood atoile, the stremes beat vehemently vpon that house and could not shake it; for it was founded vpon a rocke.

49 But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man without a foundation built an house vpon earth: against w the streme did beat vehemently, and immediatly it fell, & the ruine of that house was great.

C H A P . VII.

1 *The Centurions faith.* 10 *Christ healeth his seruant being absent,* 11 *and raiseth the widowes sonne.*

Now whē he had ended all his sayings in y audience of the people he entred into Capernaum.

2 And a certaine Centurion seruant, who was deare vnto him, was sicke and ready to die.

3 And when he heard of Iesus, he sent vnto him the Elders of the Iewes , beseeching him that hee would come and heale his seruant.

4 And when they came to Iesus , they besought him instantly, saying, that he was worthy for whom he should doe this.

5 For he loueth our nation, and he hath built vs a Synagogue.

6 Then Iesus went with them. And when he was now not farre from the house, the Centurion sent friends to him, saying vnto him, Lord, trouble not thy selfe : for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter vnder my roffe,

7 Wherefore

C H A P. V I L.

7 Wherfore neither thought I my selfe worthy
to come vnto thee: but say in a word, and my ser-
vant shall be healed.

8 For I also am a man set vnder authority, having
vnder me souldiers: and I say vnto one, Goe, and he
goeth: and to another, Come, and he commeth: and
to my seruant, Doe this, and he doeth it.

9 When Iesus heard these things, he marueiled
at him, and turned him about, and said vnto the peo-
ple that followed him, I say vnto you, I haue not
found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

10 And they that were sent, returning to the house,
found the seruant whole that had beene ticke.

11 ¶ And it came to passe the day after, that hee
went into a city called Naim: and many of his dis-
ciples went with him, and much people.

12 Now whē hee came nigh to the gate of the
city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the
onely sonne of his mother, and she was a widow, and
much people of the city was with her.

13 And whea the Lord saw her, he had compas-
sion on her, and said vnto her, Weepe not.

14 And he came and touched the biere (and they
that bare him, stood still) and he said, Young man, I
say vnto thee, Arise.

15 And hee that was dead, sate vp, and began to
speake: and he deliuered him to his mother.

16 And there came a feare on all, and they glori-
fied God, saying, that a great Prophet is risen vp a-
mong vs, and that God hath visited his people.

17 And this report of him went forth throughout
all Iudea, & throughout all the region round about.

18 And the disciples of John shewed him of all
these things.

19 ¶ And John calling vnto him two of his disci-
ples, sent them to Iesus, saying, Art thou hee that
should come, or looke we for another?

20 When the men were come vnto him, they said,
Iohn Baptist hath sent vs vnto thee, saying, Art thou
hee that shoulde come, or looke we for another?

21 And in that same houre, he cured many of their
infirmitie and plagues, and of euill spites, and vnto
many that were blind, he gaue sight.

22 Then Iesus answering, said vnto them, Goe

your

S. LVKE.

your way, and tell John what things yee haue seene
and heard, how that the blind see, the lame walke,
the lepers are cleanned, the deafe heare, the dead are
raised, to the poore the Gospel is preached.

23 And blessed is he whosoeuer shall not be of-
fended in me.

24 ¶ And when the messengers of John were de-
parted, hee began to speake vnto the people concer-
ning John. ¶ What went ye out into the wildernesse
for to see? a reed shaken with the wind?

25 But what went yee out for to see? a man clo-
thed in soft rayment? Behold, they w^ere gorgeously
apparelled, and lime delicately, are in Kings courts.

26 But what went ye out for to see? a Prophet?
Yea, I say vnto you, and much more then a Prophet.

26 This is he, of whom it is written, Behold, I send
my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare
thy way before thee.

28 For I say vnto you, Among those that are borne
of women, there is not a greater Prophet then John
the Baptiste: but hee that is least in the kingdome of
God, is greater then he.

29 And all the people that heard him, and the
Publicanes iustified God, being baptizied with the
baptisme of John.

30 But the Pharisees and Lawyers refielde the
counsell of God against themselues, being not bapti-
zed of him.

31 ¶ And the Lord said, Whereunto then shall I
liken the men of this generation? and to what are
they like?

32 They are like unto children sitting in the mar-
ket place, and calling one to another, and saying, We
haue piped vnto you, and yee haue not danced. we
haue mourned vnto you, and ye haue not wept.

33 For John the Baptiste came neither eating bread,
nor drinking wine, and y^e say, He hath a devill.

34 The loue of man is come, eating, and drink-
ing, and ye say, Behold, a gluttonous man, and a wine-
bibber, a friend of Publicanes and sinners.

35 But wisdome is iustified of all her children.

36 ¶ And one of the Pharisees desired him, that he
would eat with him. And he went into the Phari-
sees house, and sate downe to meat.

37 And

C H A P. VI I.

37 And behold, a woman in the city w^t was a finer, when she knew that Iesus sate at meat in Pharisēs house, brought an Alabaster boxe of oyntment,

38 And stood at his feet behinde him, weeping, and began to wash his feete with teares, and did wipe them with the haire of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with oyntment.

39 Now when the Pharisēe which had bidden him, saw it, he spake within himselfe, saying, This man, if he were a Prophet, would have knownen who and what manner of woman this is that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Iesus answering, said vnto him, Simon, I haue somewhat to say to thee. And he saith, Master, say on.

41 There was a certaine crediter, which had two debtors: the one ought five hundred pence, and the other fifty.

42 And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will loue him most.

43 Simon answered and said, I suppose that he to whom he forgave most. And he said vnto him, Thou hast rightly judged.

44 And he turned to the woman: and said vnto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entred into thine house, thou gauest me no water for my feete: but thee hath washed my feete with teares: and wiped them with the haire of her head.

45 Thou gauest me no kist: but this woman since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kisse my feet.

46 Mine head with oyle thou diddest not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feete with oyntment.

47 Wherefore I say vnto thee, Her sinnes which are many, are forgiuen, for she loued much: but to whom little is forgiuen, the same loueth little.

48 And he said vnto her, Thy sinnes are forgiuen.

49 And they that sat at meat with him, began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiueth sinnes also?

50 And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee, goe in peace.

C H A P.

S. I V K E.

C H A P. VIII.

4 The parable of the sower. 26 The Legion of devils.

A Nd it came to passe afterward, that he went throughout every city and village presching; and shewing the glad tidings of the Kingdome of God: and the twelue were with him:

2 And certaine women which had been healed of euill spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seuen devils,

3 And Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herods steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto him of their substance.

4 ¶ And when much people were gathered tog-
ther, and were come to him out of every city, he
spake by a parable:

5 A sower went out to sowe his seed: and as he
sowed, some fell by the way side, and it was trode
downe, and the soules of the syre devoured it.

6 And some fell vpon a rocke, and at soone as it
was sprung vp, it withered away, because it lacked
moisture.

7 And some fell among thornes, and the thornes
sprang vp with it, and choaked it.

8 And other fell on good ground, and sprang vp,
and bare fruit an hundred fold. And when he said
these things, he cryed, He that hath ears to heare,
let him heare.

9 And his disciples asked him, saying; What
might this parable be?

10 And he said, Vnto you it is ginen to know the
mysteries of the kingdome of God: but to other in
parables, that seeing they might not see, and hearing
they might not understand.

11 Now the parable is this: The seed is the word
of God.

12 Those by the way side, are they that heare, then
comameth the deuil, and taketh away the word out of
their hearts, lest they shoulde beleue, and be saued.

13 They on the rocke, are they whē when they heare,
receive the word whō ioy, & these hane no root, which
for a while beleue, & in time of temptation fal away.

14 And whō which fel among thornes are they which
when they hane heard, go forth, and are choked with
cares & riches, and pleasures of this life, and bring no
fruit to perfacion.

15 But

C H A P. VIII.

15 But that on the good ground, are they, which in an honest and good heart hauing heard the word, keepe it, and bring forth fruit with patience.

16 ¶ No man when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessele, or putteth it vnder a bed: but stretteth it on a candlestickke, that they which enter in, may see the lightr.

17 For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest: neither any thing hid, that shall not be knowne, and come abroad.

18 Take heed therefore how ye heare: for whosoeuer hath, to him shall be giuen; and whosoeuer hath not, from him shall be taken, even that which he seemeth to have.

19 ¶ Then came to him his mother and his brethen, and could not come at him for the ptealle.

20 And it was told him by certaine which said, Thy mother and thy brethen stand without, desiring to see thee.

21 And he answered and said vnto them, My mother and my brethen are these, which heare the word of God, and doe it.

22 ¶ Now it came to passe on a certaine day, that he went into a shipp with his disciples: and he said vnto them, Let vs goe ouer vnto the other side of the lake, and they lanched forth.

23 But as they sailed, he fell asleepe, & there came downe a storne of wind on the lake, and they were filled with water, and were in ieopardy.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Master, master, we perish. Then he rose, and rebuked the wind, and the raging of the water: and they ceased, and there was a calme.

25 And he said vnto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid, wondered, saying one to another, What maner of man is this? For he commandeth euен the windes and water, and they obey him.

26 ¶ And they arived at the countrey of the Gades, which is ouer against Galilee.

27 And whan he went forth to land, there met him out of the city a certaine man, which had deuils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in any house, but in the tombes.

28 When

S. L V K E.

28 When hee saw Iesus, hee cryed out, and fell downe before him, and with a loud voice said, What haue I to doe with thee, Iesus thou Son of God most high? I beseech thee, torment me not.

29 (For he had commanded the vncleane spirit to come out of the man: For oftentimes it had caught him, and he was kept bound with chaunes, and in fetters: and he brake the bands, and was drinc'd of the deuill into the wildernesse.

30 And Iesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he said, Legion: because many devils were entred into him.

31 And they besought him, that he would not command them to goe out into the deepe.

32 And there was there an herd of many swine, feeding on the mountaine: and they besought him that he would suffer the to enter into them: & he suffered them.

33 Then went the devils out of the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steepe place into the lake, and were choaked.

34 When they that fed them, saw what was done, they fled, and went and told it in the city, and in the countrey.

35 Then they went out to see what was done, and came to Iesus, and found the man out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feete of Iesus, cloathed, and in his right mind, and they were afraid.

36 They also w^t saw it, told them by what meanes he that was possessed of the devils, was healed.

37 ¶ Then the whole multitude of the countrey of the Gadarenes round about, besought him to depart from them, for they were taken with great feare: and he went vp into the ship, and returned b^eke againe.

38 Now the man out of whom the devils were departed, besought him, that he might bewi^b h him: but Iesus sent him away, saying,

39 Returne to thine owne house, and shew how great things God hath done vnto thee. And he went his wa^r, and published throughout the whole city, how great things Iesu had done vnto him.

40 And it came to passe, that when Iesus was returned, the people gladly received him: for they were all waiting for him.

41 ¶ And behold, there came a man named Iairus, and

C H A P. VIII.

and he was a ruler of the Synagogue, and hee fell downe at Iesus feet, and besought him that he would come into his howse :

42 For hee had one onely daughter about twelve yeeres of age, and she lay a dying. (But as he went, the people thronged him.)

43 ¶ And a woman having an issue of blood twelve yeeres, which had spent all her liuing vpon Physicians, neither could be healed of any,

44 Came behind him, & touched the border of his garment: & immediatly her issue of blood stanched.

45 And Iesus said, Who touched me? When all denied, Peter and they that were with him, said, Master, the multitude throng thee, and press thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

46 And Iesus said, Some body hath touched me: for I perceiue that vertue is gone out of me.

47 And when ſe woman ſaw ſhe was not hid, ſhe came trebling, & falling downe before him, ſhe declared vnto him before all the people, for what caufe ſhe had touched him, & how ſhe was healed immediatly.

48 And he ſaid vnto her, Daughter, be of good comfort, thy faith hath made thee whole, goe in peace.)

49 ¶ While hee yet ſpake, there cometh oue from the ruler of the Synagogues howſe, ſaying to him, Thy daughter is dead, trouble not the Master.

50 But when Iesus heard it, he anſwered him, ſaying, Feare not, beleeue only, & ſhe ſhalbe made whole.

51 And when he came into the howſe, he ſuffered no man to goe in, ſauē Peter, and Iames, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

52 And all wept, and bewailed her: but he ſaid, Weepe not, ſhe is not dead, but ſleepeth.

53 And they laughed him to ſcorne, knowing that ſhe was dead.

54 And he put them all out, and tooke her by the hand, and called, ſaying, Maid, arise.

55 And her ſpirit came againe, & ſhe arose ſtraihtway: and he commanded to giue her meat.

56 And her parents were aſtoniſhed: but he charged them that they ſhould tell no man what was done.

C H A P. IX.

8 Christ ſent forth his Apolleſ. 9 Herod deſired to ſee Christ. 38 Chrifl's transfiguration.

Theſe

S. L V K E.

T Hen hee called his twelve disciples together,
and gaue them power and autoritie ouer all
devils, and to cure diseases.

2 And he sent them to preach the kingdome of
God, and to heale the sicke.

3 And he said vnto them, Take nothing for your
journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, ne-
ther money, neither haue two coats apiece.

4 And whosoever house ye enter into, there abid,
and thence depart.

5 And whosoever will not receive you, when ye
goe out of that city, shake off the very dust from your
feet, for a testimony against them.

6 And they departed, & went thorow the townes,
preaching the Gospel, and healing euery where.

7 ¶ Now Herod the Tetrarch heard of all that was
done by him: and he was perplexed, because that it
was said of some, that John was risen from the dead:

8 And of some, that Elias had appeared: and of
others, that one of the old Prophets was risen again.

9 And Herod said, John haue I beheaded: but
who is this of whom I haue such things? And he
desired to see him.

10 ¶ And the Apostles when they were returned,
told him all that they had done. And he tooke them,
and went aside priuately into a desert place, belong-
ing to the city called Bethsaida.

11 And the people when they knew it, followed
him, and he received them, and spoke vnto them of
the kingdome of God, and healed them that had
need of healing.

12 And when the day began to weare away, then
came the twelue, and said vnto him, Send the multi-
tude away, that they may goe into the townes, and
country round about and lodge, and get victuals:
for we are here in a desert place.

13 But he said vnto them, Give ye them to eat.
And they said, We haue no more but five loaves and
two fishes, except we should goe and buy meat for all
this people.

14 For they were about five thousand men, and
hee said to his discipiles, Make them sit downe by
fifties in a company.

15 And they did so, and mad them all sit downe.

16 Then

C H A P. IX.

16 Then he tooke the five loaves & the two fishes, and looking vp to heauen, he blessed them, & brake, and gaue to the discipiles to set before the multitude.

17 And they did eate, and were all filled. And there was taken vp of fragments that remained to them, twelve baskets.

18 ¶ An. I it came to passe, as he was alone pray-
ing, his discipiles were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am?

19 They aawswering, said, John the Baptist; but some say, Elias: and others say, that one of the old Prophets is risen againe.

20 He said vnto them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answering, laid, The Christ of God.

21 And he straightely charged them, and coman-
ded them to tell no man that thing.

22 Savin., The Sonne of man must suffer many things, & be reviled of the Elders, and chiefe Priests and scribes, and be slaine, and be raised: he third day.

23 ¶ And he said to them all, if any man will come after mee, let him denie himselfe, and take vp his croſe daily and follow me.

24 For whosoeuer will ſave his life, ſhall looſe it: but whosoeuer will loſe his life for my ſake, the ſame ſhall ſave it.

25 For what is a man aduantaged, if he gaue the whole world, and loſe himſelfe, or be caſt away?

26 For whosoeuer shall be ashamed of me, and of my wordes, of him ſhall the Son of man be alaimed, when he thall come in his o vne glory, and in his Fa-
thers, and of the holy Angels.

27 But I tell you of a truthe, There be ſome ſta-
ding here, which thall not taste of death, till they ſee
the kingdome of God.

28 ¶ And it came to passe about an eight dayes
after these ſayings, he tooke Peter, and Ioahn, and
Iames, and went vp into a mountaine to pray:

29 And as he prayed, the fation of his counte-
nance was altered, and his rayment was white and
glaſteing.

30 And behold, there talked with him two men,
which were Moles and Elijs,

31 Who appeared in glory, and ſpake of his de-
ceſſe, which he ſhould accomplish at Hierusalem.

32 But

S. L V K E.

32 But Peter and they that were with him , were
heavy with sleepe: and when they were awake, they
saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.

33 And it came to passe , as they departed from
him, Peter said vnto Iesus, Master it is good for vs to
be here: and let vs make three tabernacles , one for
thee, and one for Moles, and one for Elias: not know-
ing what he said.

34 While he thus spake there came a clond, and
ouershadowed them, and they feared, as they entred
into the cloud.

35 And there came a voyce out of the cloud say-
ing, This is my beloved Sonne, heare him.

36 And when the voyce was past, Iesus was found
alone, and they kept it close, & told no man in thole
dayes any of those things which they had seene.

37 ¶ And it came to passe that on the next day,
when they were come downe from the hill , much
people met him.

38 And behold, a man of the company cried out,
saying, Master, I beseech thee, looke vpon thy sonne
for he is mine onely childe.

39 And loe, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly
crieth out, and it teareth him that he someth againe,
and bruising him hardly departed from him.

40 And I besought thy disciples to cast him out,
and they could not.

41 And Iesus answering said, O faithlesse and per-
verse generation, how long shall I be with you, and
suffer you? bring thy sonne hither.

42 And as he was yet a comming, the denyl threw
him do vne, and tare hym: and Iesus rebuked the vr-
cleane spirit, and healed the child, and deliuered him
againe to his father.

43 ¶ And they were all amazed at the mighty
power of God : but while they wondered every one
at all things which Iesus did , he said vnto his dis-
ciples,

44 Let these sayings sinke downe into your eares :
for the Son of man shall be delincred into the hands
of men.

45 But they vnderstood not this saying , and it
was hid from them, that they perceined it not: and
they feared to aske him of that saying .

46 ¶ Then

C H A P. IX.

46 ¶ Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest.

47 And Iesus perceiuing the thought of their heart, tooke a child, and set him by him,

48 And said vnto them, Whosoeuer shall receive this child in my Name, receiueth me, and whosoever shall receive me, receiueth him that sent me: For he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.

49 ¶ And John answered and said, Master we saw one casting out devils in thy Name, and wee forbad him, because he followeth not with vs.

50 And Iesus said vnto him, Forbid him not: for he that is not against vs, is for vs.

51 ¶ And it came to passe, when the time was come that he should be received vp, he stedfastly set his face to goe to Hierusalem,

52 And sent mesengers before his face, and they went and entred into a village of the Samaritans to make ready for him.

53 And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would goe to Hierusalem.

54 And when his disciples, Iames and John saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come downe from heauen, and consume them, even as Elias did?

55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner spirit ye are of.

56 For the Sonne of man is not come to destroy mens liues, but to saue them. And they went to another village.

57 ¶ And it came to passe that as they went in the way, a certaine man said vnto him, Lord, I wil follow thee whitherseeuer thou goest.

58 And Iesus said vnto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the ayre haue nests, but the Sonne of man hath not where to lay his head.

59 And he said to another, Follow me: But he said, Lord, suffer me first to goe and bury my father.

60 Iesus said vnto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.

61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee: but let me first goe bid them farewell, which are at home at my house.

62 And Iesus said vnto him, No man having put

S. LVKE.

his hand to the plough, and looking backe, is fit for
the kingdome of God.

C H A P. X.

1 The seventy disciples, 17 admonished to be humble
38 Martha reprehended, and Mary commended.

A fter these things, the Lord appointed other
seventy also, and sent them two and two before
his face, into every citie and place, whither hee him-
selfe would come.

2 Therefore said he vnto them, The haruest truly
is great, but the laboures are few, pray ye therefore
the Lord of the haruest, that hee would send sooth
Labourers into his haruest.

3 Goe your wayes: Behold, I send you foorth as
lambes among wolves.

4 Carry neither purse nor scrip, nor shooes, and
salute no man bythe way.

5 And into whatsoeuer house yee enter, first say,
Peace be to this house.

6 And if the sonne of peace be there, your peace
shall rest vpon it: if not, it shall turne to you againe.

7 And in the same house remaine, eating and
drinking such things as they giue: For the labouer
is worthy of his hire Goe not from house to house.

8 And into whatsoeuer citie yee enter, and they
receiue you, eat such things as are set before you:

9 And heale the sicke that are thererin, & say vnto
them, the kingdome of God is come nigh vnto you.

10 But into whatsoeuer c ty ye enter, and they re-
ceiue you not, goe your wayes out into the streets of
the same, and say,

11 Euen the very dust of your citie which cleaueth
on vs, wee doe wipe off against you: notwithstanding,
be ye sure of this, that the kingdome of God
is come nigh vnto you.

12 But I say vnto you, that it shall be more tol-
erable in that day for Sodome, then for that city.

13 Woe vnto thee Chorazin, woe vnto thee Beth-
saida: For if the mighty workes had beeene done in
Tyre and Sidon, which haue beeene done in you, they
had a great while agoe repented sitting in sackcloth
and ashes.

14 But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Si-
don at the iudgement, then for you.

15 And

CHAP. X.

15 And thou Capernaum , v hich art exalted so
heauen shalst be thrust downe to hell.

16 He that heareth you, heareth me : and he that
despiseth you, despiseth me : and hee that despiseth
me, despiseth him that sent me.

17 ¶ And the seruantes returned againe with joy,
saying, Lord, euен the devils are subject vnto vs
through thy Name,

18 And hee said vnto them, I beheld Satan as
lightning fall from heauen,

19 Behold, I giue vnto you power to tread on ser-
pents and scorpions, and ouer all : the power of the
emy : and nothing shall by any meanes hurt you.

20 Notwithstanding in this reioyce not, that the
spiriutes are subiect vnto you : but rather reioyce, be-
cause your names are written in heauen.

21 ¶ In that houre Iesus rejoyced in Spirit, and
said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heauen and
earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise
and prudent, and hast revealed them vnto babes :
men in, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

22 All things are deliuert to mee of my Father :
and no man knoweth who the Sonne is, but the Fa-
ther : and who the Father is, but the Sonne, and hee
to whom the Sonne will reueale him.

23 ¶ And he turned him vnto his Disciples, and
said priuately, Blessed are the eyes which see the
things that ye see.

24 For I tell you, that many Prophets, and Kings
have desired to see those things which ye see, and
have not seen them : & to hear those things which
ye heare, and have not heard them.

25 And behold a certayne Lawyer stood vp, and
tempted him, saying, Master, what doe I do to ha-
ve eternall life? He said vnto him,

26 What is written in þ Law? How readest thou?

27 And hee answering, said, Thou shalt loue the
Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy
soule, and with all thy strength, and with all thy
mind, and thy neighbour as thy selfe.

28 And Iee said vnto him, thou hast answered
right : this doe, and thou shalt live.

29 But hee willing to iustifie himselfe, said vnto
Iesus, And who is my neighbour?

S. L V X E.

30 And Iesus answering, said, A certaine man went downe from Ierusalem to Iericho , and fell among theues , which stripped him of his raiment , and wounded him, and departed, leaving him halfe dead,

31 And by chance there came downe a certaine Prie^t that way, and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side.

32 And likewise a Leuite, when hee was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.

33 But a certayne Samaritane as hee journeyed, came where hee was, and when he saw him, hee had compassion on him.

34 And went to him, & bound vp his wounds, pouring in oile and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an Inne, and tooke care of him.

35 And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence, & gave them to the hoste, & said vnto him, Take care of him, and whatsoeuer thou spendest more, when I come againe I will repay thee.

36 Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour vnto him that fell among the theue?

37 And hee said, Hee that shewed mercy on him, Then said Iesus vnto him, Goe & doe thou likewise.

38 ¶ Now it came to passe, as they went, that he entered into a certayne village, and a certayne woman named Martha, received him into her house.

39 And sliue had a sister called Mary , which also sat at Iesus feet, and heard his word :

40 But Martha was embred about much seruing, and came to him, and said, Lord, doest thou not care that my sister hath left mee to serue alone ? Bid her therefore that she helpe me.

41 And Iesus answered, and said vnto her, Martha, Martha, thou art carefull, and troubled about many things:

42 But one thiug is needfull, and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not bee taken away from her.

C H A P . XI .

¶ Christ teacheth to pray instantly. 14 He casteth out a dumbbe deuill.

A nd it came to passe, that as he was praying in a certayne place, when he ceased, one of his disci-

C H A P. X I.

ple said, vnto him, Lord, teach vs to pray , as John also taught his disciples.

2 And hee said vnto them , When yee pray, say, Our Father, which art in heauen, Hallowed be thy Name, thy kingdome come, Thy will be done, as in heauen, so in earth.

3 Give vs day by day our daily bread.

4 And forgive vs our sinnes, for wee also forgive every one that is indebted to vs. And leade vs not into temptation, but deliver vs from euill.

5 And hee said vnto them , Which of you shall have a friend, and shall goe vnto him at midnight, and say vnto him, Friend, lend me three loaves :

6 For a friend of mine in his iourney is come vnto me, and I haue nothing to set before him :

7 And hee from within shall answere and say, Trouble me not, the doore is now shut, and my children are with me in bed : I cannot rise & give thee.

8 I say vnto you , Though hee will not rise , and give him, because he is his friend: yet because of his importunitie, he wil rise and give him as many as he needeth.

9 And I say vnto you, Ask, and it shall be given you : seeke and ye shall find : knocke, and it shall be opened vnto you.

10 For every one that asketh, receieth: and hee that seeketh, findeth : and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened.

11 If a sonne shall aske bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stome ? or if hee aske a fish, will he for a fith give him a serpent ?

12 Or if he shall aske an egge, will he offer him a scorpion ?

13 If ye then being euill, know how to gine good gifts vnto your children: how much more shall your heavenly Father give the holy Spirit to them that aske him?

14 ¶ And he was casting out a deuill, and it was dumbe. And it came to passe , when the deuill was gone out, the dumbe spake, and the people wondred.

15 For some of them said , Hee casteth out devils through Beelzebub the chiefe of the devils.

16 And other tempting him, sought of him a signe from heauen.

S. L V X E.

17 But hee knowing their thoughtes, said vnto them, Every kingdome diuided against it selfe, is brought to desolation : and a house diuided against a house, falleth.

18 If Satan also be diuided against himselfe, how shall his kingdome stand ? Because ye say that I cast out devils through Beelzebab.

19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom doe your sonnes cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges.

20 But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdome of God is come vpon you.

21 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace:

22 But when a stronger then he shall come vpon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and diuideth his spoiles.

23 He that is not with me, is against me : and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

24 When the vncleane spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and finding none, he saith, I will retorne vnto my house whence I came out.

25 And when he commeth, he findeth it swept and garnished.

26 Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked then himselfe, and they enter in and dwell there : and the last state of that man is worse then the first.

27 ¶ And it came to passe as he spake these things, a certaine woman of the company lift vp her voyce, and said vnto him, Blestid is the wombe that bare thee, and the paps which thou haft sucked.

28 But hee said, Yea, rather blessed are they that heare the word of God, and keepe it.

29 ¶ And when the people were gathered thicke together, he began to say, This is an enill generation, they seeke a signe, and there shall no signe be given unto them, but the signe of Jonas the Prophet:

30 For as Jonas was a signe vnto the Nineuites, so shall also the Sonne of man be to this generation.

31 The Queene of the South shall rise vp in the iudgement with the men of this generation, and condemne them; for the came from the vtmost parts

of

C H A P. I X.

of the earth, to heare the wisedome of Solomon: and behold, a greater then Solomon is here.

32 The men of Nineue shall rise vp in the iudgement with this generation, and shall condigne it: for they repented at the preaching of Ionas, and behold a greater then Ionas is here.

33 No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a secret place, neither vnder a bushell, but on a candlestick, y^they which come in may see the light.

34 The light of the bodie is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light: but when thine eye is euill, thy body also is full of darenesse.

35 Take heed therefore, that the light which is in thee, be not darenesse.

36 If thy whole body therefore be full of light, haing no part darke, the whole shalbe full of light, as when the bright thinning of a candle doth giue thee light.

37 ¶ And as he spake, a certayne Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and hee went in, and sat downe to meat.

38 And when the Pharisee saw it, hee maruelled that he had not first walshed before dinner.

39 And the Lord said vnto him, Now daye Pharisees make cleane the outside of the cup and the plater: but your inward part is full of rauening and wickednesse.

40 Ye fooles, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also?

41 But rather giue almes of such things as you haue: and behold all things are cleane vnto you.

42 But woe vnto you Pharisees: for yee tythe Mint, and Rue, and all manner of herbes and passe ener judgement, and the loue of God: their ought ye to haue done, and not to leaue the other vndose.

43 Woe vnto you Pharisees: for ye loue the uppermost seats in the Synagogues, and greetings in the markets.

44 Woe vnto you Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites: for ye are as granes which appeare not, & the men that walke ouer them, are not aware of them.

45 ¶ Then answered one of the Lawyers, and said vnto him, Master, thus saying, thou reprochest vs also

S. L V K E.

46 And he said, Woe vnto you also yee Lawyer, for ye lade men with burthens grieuous to be borne, and ye your selues touch not the burthens with one of your fingers.

47 Woe vnto you : for ye build the sepulchres of the Prophets, and your fathers killed them.

48 Truly ye beare witnes that ye allow the deeds of your fathers : for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres.

49 Therefore also said the wisdome of God, I will send them Prophets and Apostles, and some of them they shall slay and persecute :

50 That the blood of all the Prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation.

51 From the blood of Abel to the blood of Zecharias, which perished betweene the Altar and the Temple : verely I say vnto you, it shall be required of this generation.

52 Woe vnto you Lawyers: for ye have taken away the key of knowledge : yee entred not in your selues, and them that were entring in ye hindred.

53 And as hee said these things vnto them, the Scribes & the Pharisees began to vrge him vehemently, and to provoke him to speake of many things:

54 Laying wait for him : & seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

C H A P. XII.

¶ To auoyd hypocrisie and fearfullnesse in publishing Christis doctrine.

IN the meane time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one vpon another, hee began to say vnto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leauen of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisie.

2 For there is nothing couered that shall not be revealed, neither hid, that shall not be knowne.

3 Therefore whatsoener ye haue spoken in darknesse, shall be heard in the light : and that which ye haue spoken in the eare, in closets, shall be proclaimed vpon the house tops.

4 And I say vnto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that, haue no more that they can doe :

5 But

C H A P. XII.

3 But I will forewarne you whom ye shall feare: Feare him, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say vnto you, Feare him.

6 Are not five sparowes sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God?

7 But euē the very haire of your head are all numbered: feare not therefore, ye are of more value then many sparowes.

8 Also I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall confesse me before men, him shal the Sonne of man also confesse before the Angels of God.

9 But he that denieth me before men, shall be denyed before the Angels of God.

10 And whosoeuer shall speake a word against the Sonne of man, it shall be forgiuen him: but vnto him that blasphemeth against the holy Ghost, it shal not be forgiuen.

11 And when they bring you into the Synagogues, and vnto Magistrates, & powers, take ye no thought how or what thing yee shall answere, or what yee shall say:

12 For the holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour, what ye ought to say.

13 ¶ And one of the company said vnto him, Master, speake to my brother, that hee divide the inheritance with me.

14 And he said vnto him, Man, who made mee a Judge, or a diaider ouer you?

15 And he said vnto them, Take heed and beware of covetousnesse: for a mans life consisteth not in the abundance of things which he posselleth.

16 And he spake a parable vnto them, saying, The ground of a certaine rich man brought foorth plentifullly:

17 And he thought within himselfe, saying, What shall I doe, because I haue no roome where to bestow my fruits?

18 And he said, This will I doe, I will pull downe my barnes, and build greater, and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods:

19 And I will say to my soule, Soule thou hast much goods laid vp for many yeeres, take thine ease, eate, drinke, and be merrie.

20 But God said vnto him, Thou fool, this night

S. L V K E.

37
thy sonle shall be required of thee : then whose shall
those things be which thou hast provided ?

31 So is he that layeth up treasure for himselfe, &
is not rich toward God.

32 ¶ And he said vnto his disciples , Therefore I
say vnto you,take no thought for your life what ye
shall eat & neyther for the body what ye shall put on,

33 The life is more then meat, & the body is more
then raiment.

34 Consider the rauens,for they neither sow nor
reape,which neither haue stowchouse nor barne , and
God feedeth them. How much more are yee better
then the soules ?

35 And which of you with taking thought can adde
to his stature one cubite ?

36 If ye then be not able to doe that thing which
is least,why take ye thought for the rest ?

37 Consider the lillies how they grow,they toyle
not;they spinne not : and yet I say vnto you ſay Solo-
mon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these

38 If then God ſo clothe ſy gracie, which is to day
in the field, and to morrow is cast into the ouer ſhew
much more will he clothe yee O ye of little faith ?

39 And ſeeke not ye what ye ſhall eate, or what ye
ſhall drinke,neither be ye of doubtfull minde :

40 For all these things doe the nations of the world
ſeeke after : and your Father knoweth that yee haue
neede of these things.

41 ¶ But rather ſeeke ye the kingdome of God, and
all these things shall be added vnto you.

42 Feare not little fluke,for it is your Fathers
good pleasure to give you the kingdome.

43 Sell that ye haue, and giue alnes: prouide your
ſelves bags, which waxe not old,a treaſure in the hea-
uenes that faileth not, where no thiefe approacheth,
neither moth corrupteth.

44 For where your treaſure is, there will your heart
be also.

45 Let your loynes be girded about, & your lights
burning,

46 And yee your ſelves like vnto mea that waite
for the Lord, when he will returne from the wedding
cheft when he commeth and knocketh,they may open
vnto him immedately.

47 Blessed

C H A P. XII.

37 Blessed are those seruants, whom the Lord when he commeth shall finde watching: Verely I say vnto you, That he shall gird himselfe, & make them to sit downe to meat, and will come forth and serue them.

38 And if hee shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find them so, blessed are those seruants.

39 And this know, that if the good man of the house had knowne what houre the thiefe wold come, he would haue watched, and not haue suffered his house to be broken thorow.

40 Be yee therefore ready also: for the Sonne of man commeth at an houre when ye thinke not.

41 ¶ Then Peter said vnto him, Lord, Speakest thou this parable vnto vs, or euен to all?

42 And the Lord said, Who then is that faithfull and wise steward, whom his Lord shall make ruler ouer his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season?

43 Blessed is that servant, whom his Lord when he commeth shall find so doing.

44 Of a truth, I say, vnto you, that he will make him ruler ouer all that he hath.

45 But and if that servant say in his heart, My Lord delayeth his comming, and shall begin to beat the mens seruants, and the maidens, and to eate and drinke, and to be drunken:

46 The Lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for him, and at an houre when he is not ware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the vnbelieuers.

47 And that servant which knew his Lords will, and prepaered not himselfe, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.

48 But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For vnto whomsoever much is given, of him shalbe much required: and to whom men haue committed much, of him they will aske the more.

49 ¶ I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled?

50 But I haue a baptisme to be baptized with, and how am I straitened till it be accomplished?

51 Suppose yet that I am come to give peace on earth?

S. M V K E.

garth? I tell you, Nay, but rather division.

52 For from henceforth there shall be five in one house diuided, three against two, & two against three.

53 The father shall be diuided against the sonne, and the sonne against the father: the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother: the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

54 And hee said also to the people, When yee see a cloud arise out of the West, straightway yee say, There commeth a shoure, and so it is.

55 And when ye se the South wind blow, yee say, There will be heat, and it commeth to passe.

56 Ye hypocrites, yee can discerne the face of the skie, and of the earth: but how is it that yee doe not discerne this time?

57 Yea, and why, euen of your selues, iudge ye not what is right?

58 ¶ When thou goest with thine aduersary to the Magistrate, as thou art in the way, giue diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him, lest he hale thee to the Judge, and the Judge deliuer thee to the Officer, and the Officer cast thee into prison.

59 I tell thee thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite.

C H A P. X I I I.

3 Christ preacheth repentence upon the punishment
of the Galileans and others. 6 The figtree cursed.

T

Hete were present at that season, some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

2 And Iesus answering, said vnto them, Suppose yee that these Galileans were sinners aboue all the Galileans, because they suffered such things?

3 I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

4 Or those eightene vpon whom the tower in Siloe fell, and slew them, thinke ye that they were sinners aboue all men that dwelt in Hierusalem?

5 I tell you, Nay: but except ye repent, yee shall all likewise perish.

6 ¶ He spake also this parable, A certaine man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard, and hee came and sought fruit theron, and found none,

7 Then

C H A P. XIII.

7 Then said he vnto the dresser of his vineyard,
Behold, these three yeeres I come seeking fruit of
this fig-tree, and find none: cut it downe, why cum-
breth it the ground?

8 And he awswering, said vnto him, Lord, let it a-
lone this yéere also, till I thal dig about it, & dung it.

9 And if it beare fruit, Well: and if not, then af-
ter that thou shalt cut it downe.

10 And he was teaching in one of the Synagogues
on the Sabbath.

11 ¶ And behold there was a woman which had
a spirit of infirmitie eightene yeeres, and was bowed
together, and could in no wise lift vp her selfe.

12 And when Iesus saw her, he called her to him, &
said vnto her, woman, Art loosed frō thy infirmitie.

13 And he laid his hands on her, and immediatly
she was made straight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the Synagogue awnswered with
indignation, because that Iesus had healed on the
Sabbath day, and said vnto the people, There are six
daies in which men ought to worke, in them therfore
come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath day.

15 The Lord then awnswered him, and said, Thou
hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the Sabbath
loose his oxe or his asse from the stall, and lead him
away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman, being a daughter of
Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo these eighteen
yeeres, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day?

17 And when he had said these things, all his ad-
uersaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoyced
for all the glorious things that were done by him.

18 ¶ Then said he, Vnto what is the kingdome of
God like? and wherewnto shall I resemble it?

19 It is like a graine of mustard seed which a man
ooke, and cast into his garden, and it grew and
waxed a great tree: and the soules of the ayre lodged
in the branches of it.

20 And againe he said, Wherewnto shall I liken
the kingdome of God?

21 It is like leauen which a woman tooke and hid
in three measures of meale, tylly whole was leauened
at And hee went thorow the cities and villages,
teaching and journeyng toward Hierusalem.

23 Then

S. L V K E.

33 Then said one vnto him, Lord are there fewe
that be saned? And he said vnto them,

34 ¶ Strive to enter in at the strait gates for many, I
say vnto you, wil seeke to enter in, & shall not be able.

35 When once the master of the house is risen vp,
and hath shut to the doore, and yee begin to stand
without, and to knocke at the doore, saying, Lord,
Lord open to vs, and he shall answer, and say vnto
you, I know ye not whence ye are:

36 Then shall yee begin to say, Wee haue eaten
and drunken in thy presence, and thou haft taught
in our streets.

37 But he shal say, I tel you, I know you not whence
you are; Depart from me all ye workers of iniugity.

38 There shall be weeping and gnathing of teeth,
when yee shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Iacob,
and all the Prophets in the kingdome of God, and
you your selues thrust out.

39 And they shall come from the East, and from
the West, and from the North, and from the South,
and shall sit downe in the kingdome of God.

40 And behold, there are last, which shall be first,
and there are first, which shall be last.

41 ¶ The same day there came certaine of the
Pharisees, saying vnto him, Get thee out, and depart
hence; for Herod will kill thee.

42 And he said vnto them, Goe ye and tell þ Fox,
Behold, I cast out devils, and I doe cures to day and
to morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected.

43 Neuerthelesse, I must walke to day and to mor-
row, and the day following: for it cannot be that a
Prophet perish out of Hierusalem.

44 O Hierusalem, Hierusalem, which killest the
Prophets, and stonest them that are sent vnto thee;
how often would I haue gathered thy children to-
gether, as a heune doth gather her brood vnder her
wings, and ye would not?

45 Behold, your house is left vnto you desolate.
And verely I say vnto you, ye shall not see me, vntill
the time come when ye shall say, Blessed is hee that
comaneth in the Name of the Lord.

C H A P. X I I I.

3. The dropſie healed on the Sabbath. 15 The parab'ſe
of the great Supper.

And

C H A P. XIIII.

¶ And it came to passe, as he went into the house of one of the chiefe Pharisees, to eate bread on the Sabbath day, that they watched him.

¶ 2 And behold, there was a certayne man before him, which had the dropcie.

¶ 3 And Iesus answering, spake vnto the Lawyers & pharisees saying, Is it lawfull to heale on the Sabbath day?

¶ 4 And they held their peace. And he tooke him, & healed him, and let him goe.

¶ 5 And answered them, saying, Which of you shal have an assie or an oxe fall into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the Sabbath day?

¶ 6 And they could not answere him againe to these things.

¶ 7 ¶ And he put forth a parable vnto those that were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chiefe romes, saying vnto them,

¶ 8 When thou art bidden of any man to a weddung, sit not downe in the highest roome, lest a more honourable man then thou be bidden of him;

¶ 9 And he that bad thee and him, come, and say to thee, Give this man place: & thou begin with shame to take the lowest roome.

¶ 10 But when thou art bidden, goe and sit downe in the lowest roome, that when hee that bads thee commeth, he may lay vnto thee, Friend goe vp higher: then shalt thou haue worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee.

¶ 11 For whosoever exalteh himselfe, shall bee abased: and he that humbleth himselfe, shalbe exalted.

¶ 12 ¶ Then said he also to him that bad him, when thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor thy rich neighbours, lest they also bid thee again, and a recompence be made thee.

¶ 13 But when thou makest a feast, call the poore, the maimed, the lame the blind,

¶ 14 And thou shalt be blessed, for they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed, at the resurrection of the iust.

¶ 15 ¶ And when one of them that sat at meat with him, heard these things, he said vnto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdome of God.

¶ 16 Then

S. L V K E.

16 Then said he vnto him, A certaine man made
a great supper, and bade many:

17 And sent his seruants at supper time, to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are
now ready.

18 And they all with one consent began to make
excuse: The first said vnto him, I have bought
a piece of ground, and I must needs goe and see it: I
pray thee haue me excused.

19 And another said, I have bought five yoke of
oxen, and I goe to prooue them: I pray thee haue
me excused.

20 And another said, I haue married a wife: and
therefore I cannot come.

21 So that seruant came and shewed his lord these
things. Then the master of the house being angry,
said to his seruant, Goe out quickly into the streetes
and lanes of the citie, and bring iu hither the poore,
and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind.

22 And the seruant said, Lord, it is done as thou
haft commanded, and yet there is roome.

23 And the Lord said to the seruant, Goe out into
the high-wayes and hedges, and compell them to
come in, that my house may be filled.

24 For I say vnto you, that none of those men
which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.

25 ¶ And there went great multitudes with him:
and he turned and said vnto them,

26 If any man come to mee, and hate not his fa-
ther and mother, and wife, and children, and bre-
thren, and sisters, yea, and his owne life also, he can-
not be my disciple.

27 And whioeuer doth not beare his crosse, and
come after me, cannot be my disciple.

28 For which of you intending to build a towre
sitteth not downe first, and counteth the cost, whe-
ther he haue sufficient to finish it?

29 Left happily after he hath laid the foundation,
and is not able to finish it, all that behold it, begin
to mocke him.

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not
able to finihi.

31 Or what King going to make war against ano-
ther King, sitteth not downe first, and consulteth
whether

C H A P. XV.

whether he be able with ten thousand, to meet him that commeth against him with twenty thousand?

32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace.

33 So likewise, whosoever hee be of you, that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

34 ¶ Salt is good: but if the salt haue lost his savor, wherewith shall it be seasoned?

35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill: but men cast it out. He that hath ears to heare, let him heare.

C H A P. XV.

1 The parable of the lost sheepe. 8 Of the piece of silver. 11 Of the prodigall sonne.

T

hen drew neere vnto him all the Publicans and sinners, for to heare him.

2 And the Pharisees and Scribes murmurred, saying, this man receiuesth sinners and eateth with them

3 ¶ And he spake this parable vnto them, saying,

4 What man of you hauing an hundred sheepe, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninty and nine in the wilderness, and goe after that which is lost vntill he find it?

5 And when he hath found it, hee layeth it on his shoulders rejoicing.

6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends & neighbours, saying vnto them, Reioyce with me, for I haue found my theepe that was lost.

7 I say vnto you that likewise joy shalbe in heauen ouer one sinner that repenteth, more then ouer ninety and nine iust persons, which need no repentance.

8 ¶ Either what woman hauing ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweepe the house, & seeke diligently, till she find it?

9 And when shee hath found it, shee calleth her friends, and her neighbours together, saying, Reioyce with me, for I haue found the piece which I had lost.

10 Likewise I say vnto you, there is joy in the presence of the Angels of God, ouer one sinner that repenteþ.

11 ¶ And he said, A certaine man had two sons:

12 And the younger of them said to his father, Father, giue me the portion of goods that falleth to me

S. L V X E.

to me. And he diuided vnto them his liuing.

13 And not many dayes after, the younger sonne gathered all together, and tooke his iourney into a farre countrey, and there wasted his substance with riotous liuing.

14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land, and he began to be in wast.

15 And he went and ioyned himselfe to a citizen of that countrey, and he sent him into his fields to feed swine.

16 And he would faine haue filled his belly w^t the husks y^t the swine did eat : & no man gaue vnto him.

17 And when he came to himselfe, he said, How many hired seruants of my fathers haue bread eⁿough, and to spare, and I perish with hunger ?

18 I will arise and goe to my father, and will say, vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen and before thee,

19 And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired seruants.

20 And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his necke, and kissed him.

21 And the sonne said vnto him, Father, I haue sinned against heauen, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy sonne.

22 But the father said to his seruants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shooes on his feet.

23 And bring hither the fatted calfe, and kill it, and let vs eat and be merry.

24 For this my sonne was dead, and is aliu^e againe; he was lost, and is found. and they began to be merry.

25 Now his elder sonne was in the field, and as he came and drew nigh to the house, hee heard musike and dancing.

26 And hee called one of the seruants, and asked what these things meant.

27 And he said vnto him, Thy brother is come, and thy father hath killed the fatted calfe, because he hath received him safe and sound.

28 And hee was angry, and would not goe in: wherefore

C H A P. XVI.

therefore came his father out, and intreated him,

39 And he answering said to his father, Lo, these many yeeres doe I serue thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandement, and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merrie with my friends:

40 But alsoone as this thy sonne was come, which hath devoured thy lining with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calfe.

41 And he said vnto him, Son, thou art euer with me, and all that I have is thine.

42 It was meet that wee shoulde make merrie, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alise againe; and was lost, and is found.

C H A P. XVI.

1 Of the uniusl Reward. 14 The hypocrite of the numerous Pharisees reprented.

1 And he said also vnto his disciples, There was a certaine rich man, wh had a steward, & the same was accused vnto him that he had wasted his goods.

2 And he called him, and said vnto him, How is it that I heare this of thee? Give an account of thy stewardship, for thou mayest be no longer steward.

3 Then the steward said within himselfe, What shall I doe, for my Lord taketh away from mee the stewardship? I cannot dig, to beg I am ashamed.

4 I am resoluued what to doe, that when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive mee into their houses.

5 So hee called enery one of his Lords debtors vnto him, and said vnto the first, How much oweſt thou vnto my Lord?

6 And he said, An hundred measures of oile. And he said vnto him, Take thy bill and sit downe quickly, and write fiftie.

7 Then said hee to another, And how much oweſt thou? And hee said, An hundred measures of wheat, And he said vnto him, take thy bil & write fourscore.

8 And the lord commended the vnjuſt steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser then the children of light.

9 And I say vnto you, Make to your ſelues friends of the Mammens of unrighteouſneſſe, that when

S. L V K E.

when ye faile, they may receive you into everlastinge habitations.

10 He that is faithfull in that which is least, is faithfull also in much: and hee that is vnjust in the least, is vnjust also in much.

11 If therefore ye haue not beeene faithfull in the unrighteous Mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches?

12 And if ye haue not beeene faithfull in that which is another mans, who shall gine you that which is your owne?

13 ¶ No servant can serue two masters, for either he will hate the one, and loue the other: or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other: ye can not serue God and Mammon.

14 And the Pharisees also who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him.

15 And he said vnto them, Yee are they which blasphemate your selues before me, but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men, is abomination in the sight of God.

16 The Law and the Prophets were vntill John: since that time the kingdome of God is preached, and every man pre setteth into it.

17 And it is easier for heauen and earth to passe, then one tittle of the Law to faile.

18 Whosoeuer putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adulterie: and whosoeuer marrieth her that is put away from her husband, committeth adulterie.

19 ¶ There was a certainerich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linnen, and fared sumptuously euery day.

20 And there was a certaine begger named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate full of sores.

21 And desiring to be fed with the crumbes which fell from the rich mans table: moreouer the dogges came and licked his sores.

22 And it came to passe that the begger dyed, and was earied by the Angels into Abrahamis bosome: the rich man also dyed, and was baried.

23 And in hell hee lift vp his eyes being in torment, and seeth Abraham afarre off, and Lazarus in his bosome,

24 And

24 A
mercie
the tip
for I a

25 Be
in thy
wife La
and the

26 A
there in
passee fr
passee tu

27 T
thou w

28 Fe
them, I

29 A
the Pr

30 A
went v

31 A
and th
though

1 To a
ther.

T H
through

3 I
hanger
that h

3 ¶
passee a
gine hi

4 A
aday,
saying

5 A
our fa

6 A
of mu
tree,
plant

C H A P. XVII.

24 And he cryed and said, Father Abraham, haue mercie on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dippe the tip of his finger in water, and coole my tongue, for I am tormented in this flame.

25 But Abraham said, Sonne, remember that thou in thy life time receinedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus euill things, but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.

26 And besydes all this, betweene vs and you there is a great gulfe fixed, so that they which would passe from hence to you, cannot, neither can they passe to vs, that would come from thence.

27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my fathers house:

28 For I haue five brethren, y hee may testifie vnto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.

29 Abraham saith vnto him, They haue Moses and the Prophets, let them heare them.

30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went vnto them from the dead, they will repent.

31 And hee said vnto him, If they heare not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rose from the dead.

C H A P. XVIII.

1 To avoide occasions of offence. 3 One to forgive exoner. 6 The power of frawsh.

T

hen said he vnto the disciples, It is impossible but that offences will come, but woe vnto him through whom they come.

3 It were better for him that a milstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, then that he shoulde offend one of these little ones.

3 ¶ Take heed to your selues: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him, and if hee repente, forgive him.

4 And if hee trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seuen times in a day turne againe to thee, saying, I repent, thou shalt forgive him.

5 And the Apostles said vnto the Lord, increase our faith.

6 And the Lord said, If yee had faith as a graine of mustard seed, yee might say vnto this Sycamine tree, Be thou plucked vp by the root, and be thou planted in the Sea, and it shoulde obey you.

7 But

S. L V X E.

7 But which of you hauing a seruant plowing or feeding cattell, will say vnto him by and by when he is come from the field, Goe, and sic downe to meat?

8 And will not rather say vnto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thy selfe, and serue me, till I haue eaten and drunken: and afterward thou shalt eat and drinke.

9 Doeth hee thanke that seruant, because hee did the things that were commiandued him? I trow not.

10 So likewise yee, when yee shall haue done all those things which are commiandued you, say, We are vnprofitable seruants: we haue done that which was our dutie to doe.

11 ¶ And it came to passe, as he went to Hierusalem, that he passed thorow the mids of Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entred into a certaine village, there met him ten men ¶ were lepers, which stood afar off.

13 And they lifted vp their voices, and said, Iesus, Maister, haue mercie on vs.

14 And when he saw them, he said vnto them, Goe shew your selues vnto the Priests. And it came to passe, that as they went, they were cleansed.

15 And one of them when he saw that he was healed, turned backe, and w aloud voice glorified God,

16 And fell downe on his face at his feet, giuing him thankes: and he was a Samaritan.

17 And Iesus answering, said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where are the nine?

18 There are not found that returned to give glorie to God save this stranger.

19 And he said vnto him, Arise, goe thy way, thy faith hath made thee whole.

20 ¶ And when he was demanded of the Pharis es when the kingdome of God should come, he answered them, and said, The kingdome of God com geth not with observation.

21 Neither shall they say, Loe here, or loe there; for behold, the kingdome of God is within you.

22 And he said vnto the disciples, The dayes will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the dayes of the Sonne of man, and yee shall not see it.

23 And they shall say to you, See here, or see there; goe not after them, nor follow them.

24 For

C H A P. XVIII.

24 For as the lightning that lightneth out of the one part vnder heauen, shineth vnto y other part vnder heauen, so shall also the Son of man be in his day.
25 But first must hee suffer many things, and bee reviled of this generation.

26 And as it was in the dayes of Noe : so shall it be also in the dayes of the Sonne of man.

27 They did eat, they dranke, the married wheres, they were ginen in mariage, vntill the day that Noe entred into the Arke : and the flood came, and destroyed them all.

28 Likewise also it was in the dayes of Lot, they did eate, they dranke, they bought, they sold, they planted they builded :

29 But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heauen, and destroyed them all.

30 Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is reuealed.

31 In that day hee which shall be vpon the house top, and his stoufe in the house, let him not come downe to take it away : and hee that is in the held, let him likewise not returme backe.

32 Remember Lots wife.

33 Whosoever shall seeke to save his life, shal lose it, and who soever shall lose his life, shall preserve it.

34 I tell you, in that night there shalbe two men in one bed; the one shalbe taken, the other shalbe left.

35 Two women shall be grinding together, the one shalbe taken, and the other left.

36 Two men shall be in the field ; the one shalbe taken, and the other left.

37 And they answered, and said vnto him, Where Lord? And he said vnto them, Wheresoever the body is, thither will the Eagles be gathered together.

C H A P. XVIII.

1 The importunate widow. 9 The Pharisee, and the Publican. 15 Children brought to Christ.

A nd hee speake a parable vnto them, so shal end, that men ought alwayes to pray, & not to faint.

2 Saying, There was in a citie a Judge, which feared not God, neijher regarded man.

3 And there was a widow in that city, and shee came

vnto

S. L V K E.

vnto him, saying, Avenge me of mine aduersary:

4 And he woulde not for awhile. But afterward he said within himselfe; Though I feare not God, nor regard man,

5 Yet because this widdow troubleth mee, I will avenge her, left by her continuall comming the way me.

6 And the Lord said, Hearc what the vniuft lidy faith.

7 And shall net God avenge his owne elect, which cry day and night vnto him, though hee bear long with them?

8 I tell you that hee will avenge them speedily, Neuerthelesse, when the Sonne of man commed, shall he find faith on the earth?

9 And he spake this parable vnto certaine which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised other:

10 Two men went vp into the Temple to pray, the one a Pharisee, and the other a Publican.

11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himselfe, God I thanke thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, vniuft, adulterers, or euен as this Publican.

12 I fast twice in the weeke, I giue tithes of all that I possesse.

13 And the Publican standing afar off, would not lift vp so much as his eyes vnto heauen: but smote vpō his brest, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner.

14 I tell yow, this man went downe to his houe iustified rather then the other: for euery one that exalteth himselfe, shall be abased: and he that humbleth himselfe, shall be exalted.

15 And they brought vnto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them.

16 But Iesus called them vnto him, and said, Suffer little children to come vnto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdome of God.

17 Verely I say vnto you, Whosoeuer shall not receive the kingdome of God as a little child, shall in no wise enter therein.

18 And a certaine ruler asked him, saying, Good master, what shall I doe to inherit eternall life?

19 And

C H A P. X V I I I .

19 And Iesus said vnto him , Why callest thou me good? none is good save one, shas i, God.

20 Thou knowest the commandements , Doe not commit adultery, Doe not kill, Doe not steale, Doe not beare false witness, Honour thy father & thy mother.

21 And he said , All these haue I kept from my youth vp.

22 Now when Iesus heard these things, he said vnto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: Sell all that thos hast, and distribute vnto the poore, and thou shalt haue treasure in heauen, and come, follow me.

23 And when he heard this, he was very sorrowfull, for he was very rich.

24 And when Iesus saw that he was very sorrowfull, he said, How hardly shall they that haue riches, enter into the kingdome of God ?

25 For it is easier for a camell to goe thorow a needles eye , then for a rich man to enter into the kingdome of God.

26 And they v̄ heard it said, Who the can be saved?

27 And he said, The things which are vnpossible with men, are possible with God.

28 Then Peter laid, Loe, we haue left all, and followed thee.

29 And he said vnto them, Verely I say vnto you, There is no man that hath leit house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children , for the kingdome of Gods sake,

30 Who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, & in the world to come life euerlasting.

31 ¶ Then he tooke vnto him the twelue, and said vnto them, Behold, we gre vp to Hierusalem, and all things that are written by the Prophets concerning the Sonne of man shall be accomplished.

32 For he shall be deliuered vnto the Gentiles, and shalbe mocked, & spitefully intreated, and spitted on:

33 And they shall scourge him , and put him to death, and the third day he shall rile againe.

34 And they vnderstood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them , neither knew they the things which were spoken.

35 ¶ And it came to passe, that as he was come nigh vnto Iericho, a certayne blind man sat by the way side begging.

S. L V K E.

36 And hearing the multitude passe by , he asked what it meant.

37 And they told him that Iesus of Nazareth passeth by.

38 And he cryed, saying, Iesus thou sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

39 And they which went before , rebuked him, that he shoulde hold his peace; but he cryed so much the more, thou Sonne of Dauid, haue mercy on me.

40 And Iesus stood , and commanded him to be brought vnto him : and when he was come neare, he asked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I shall doe vnto thee? And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight

42 And Iesus said vnto him, Receiue thy sight, thy faith hath sauied thee.

43 And immediatly he received his sight, and followed him glorifying God: and all the people wher they saw it, gane praise vnto God.

C H A P. X I X.

1 Zacheus a Publicane. 2 The ten pieces of money
28 Christ rideith into Ierusalem.

A Nd Iesus entred, and passed thorow Iericho.
2 And behold, there was a man named Zacheus, which was the chiefe among the Publicaners, and he was rich.

3 And he sought to see Iesus who he was, & could not for the prease, because he was little of stature.

4 And he ran before and climbēd vp into a Sycomore tree to see him, for he was to passe that way.

5 And when Iesus came to the place, he looked vp and saw him, and said vnto him, Zacheus make haste, and come down, for to day I must abide at thy house.

6 And he made haste, and came downe, and receiued him ioysfully.

7 And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, that he was gone to be a guest with a man that is a sinner.

8 And Zacheus stood , and said vnto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the halfe of my goods I give to the poore; and if I haue taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him foure fold.

9 And Iesus said vnto him, This day is salvation come to this house, forasmuch as he also is the sonne of Abraham.

10 For

C H A P. XIX.

10 For the Sonne of man is come to seeke, and to
fame that which was lost.

11 And as they heard these things, he added, and
spake a parable, because he was nigh to Hierusalem,
and because they thought that the kingdome of God
should immediatly appeare.

12 He said therefore, A certaine noble man went
into a farie countrey, to receiue for himselfe a king-
dome, and to returne;

13 And hee called his ten seruants, and deliuered
them ten pounds, and said vnto them, Occupie till
I come.

14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a message
after him, saying, Wee will not haue this man to
reigne ouer vs.

15 And it came to passe, that when he was retur-
ned, hauing receiued the kingdome, then he com-
manded these seruants to be called vnto him, to
whom he had giuen the money, that he might know
how much every man had gained by trading.

16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound
hath gained ten pounds.

17 And hee said vnto him, Well, thou good ser-
vant: b. cause thou hast beeene faithfull in a very lie-
tle, haue thou authority ouer ten cities.

18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound
hath gained five pounds.

19 And he said likewise to him, Be thou also ouer
five cities.

20 And another came, saying, Lord, behold, here is
thy pound which I haue kept laid vp in a napkin:

21 For I feared thee, because thou art an austere
man: thou takest vp that thou laydest not downe,
and reapest that thou didst not sowe.

22 And hee saith vnto him, Out of thine owne
month will I judge thee, thou wicked servant: Thou
knewest that I was an austere man, taking vp that I
layd not downe, and reaping that I did not sowe:

23 Wherfore then gaest not thou my money in-
to the banke, that at my comming I might haue re-
quired mine owne with vsury?

24 And he said vnto them that stood by, Take
from him the pound, and give it to him that hath
ten pounds.

S. L V K E.

25 And they said vnto him, Lord, he hath tenne pounds.

26 For I say vnto you, That vnto everyone which hath, shalbe giuen, and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him.

27 But those mine enemies which would not the I should reigne over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending vp to Hierusalem.

29 And it came to passe, when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called the mount of Oliues, he sent two of his disciples,

30 Saying, Goe yee into the village ouer against you, in the which at your entring ye shall find a colt tied, whereon yet never man sate: loose him, and bring him hither.

31 And if any man aske you, Why doe ye looke him, thus shall ye say vnto him, Because the Lord hath need of him.

32 And they that were sent, went their way, and found even as he had said vnto them.

33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners therof said vnto them, Why loose ye the colt?

34 And they said, The Lord hath need of him.

35 And they brought him to Iesus: and they cast their garments vpon the colt, & they set Iesu's theron.

36 And as he went, they spread their clothes in the way.

* 37 And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Oliues, the whole multitude of the discipiles began to rejoyce and praise God with a lond voyce, for all the mighty works that they had seen.

38 Saying, Blessed bee the king that commeth in the Name of the Lord, peace in heauen, and glory is the Highest.

39 And some of the Pharises from among the multitude laid vnto him, Master, rebuke thy discipiles.

40 And he answered, and said vnto them, I tell you, that if these shoulde hold their peace, y^e stones would immediatly cry out.

41 ¶ And when he was come neare, he beheld the citie: and wept ouer it.

C H A P. X X.

42 Saying, If thou hadst knownen, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong vnto thy peace : but now they are hid from thine eyes.

43 For the dayes shall come vpon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compasse thee round, and keepe thee in on every side,

44 And shall lay thee euен with the ground, and thy children within thee, and they shall not leaue in thee one stone vpon another, because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

45 And he went into the Temple, & began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought,

46 Saying vnto them, It is written, My house is the house of prayer: but ye haue made it a den of theues.

47 And hee taught daily in the Temple. But the chiefe Priests, and the Scribes, and the chiefe of the people sought to destroy him,

48 And could not finde what they might doe : for all the people were very attentive to heare him.

C H A P. X X.

i Christ auoucheth his authorisay by a question of Johns Baptisme. 9 The parable of the vineyard.

A Nd it came to passe that on one of these dayes, as he taught the people in the Temple, & preached the Gospel, the chiefe Priests and the Scribes came vpon him with the Elders,

2 And spake vnto him, saying, Tell vs by what authority doest thou these things ? or who is hee that gaue thee this authority?

3 And he answered, and said vnto them, I will also aske you one thing, and answere me.

4 The Baptisme of Iohn, was it from heauen, or of men ?

5 And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heauen, he will say, Why then beleeeued ye him not ?

B But and if we say, Of men, all the people will stone vs ; for they bee persuaded that Iohn was a Prophet.

7 And they answered, That they could not tell whence it was.

8 And Iesus said vnto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I doe these things.

9 Then began hee to speake to the people this parable:

S. L V K E.

parable : A certaine man planted a vineyard , and let it foorth to husbandmen ; and went into a farre countrey for a long time .

10 And at the season , he sent a seruant to the husbandmen , that they shoulde give him of the fruit of the vineyard : but the husbandmen beat him , and sent him away empty .

11 And againe he sent another seruant , and they beat him also , and entreated him shamefully , and sent him away empty .

12 And againe he sent the third , and they wounded him also , and cast him out .

13 Then said the Lord of the vineyard , What shall I doe ? I will send my beloued sonne : it may be they will reverence him when they see him .

14 But when the husbandmen saw him , they reasoned among themselues , saying , This is the heire , come , let vs kill him , that the inheritance may be ours .

15 So they cast him out of the vineyard , and killed him . What therefore shall the Lord of the vineyard doe vnto them ?

16 He shall come and destroy these husbandmen , and shall gine the vineyard to others . And when they heard it , they said , God forbid .

17 And he beheld them , and said , What is this then that is written , The stone which the builders rejected , the same is become the head of the corner .

18 Whosoever shall fall vpon that stone , shall be broken : but on whomsoever it shall fall , it will grinde him to powder .

19 ¶ And the chiefe Priests and the Scribes the same houre sought to lay hands on him , and they feared the people , for they perceived that hee had spoken this parable against them .

20 And they watched him , and sent foorth spies , which shoulde faine themselves iust men , y they might take hold of his words , that so they might deliuere him vnto the power and authority of the gouernour .

21 And they asked him , saying , Master , wee know that thou sayest and teacheſt rigtly , neither accepteſt thou the person of any , but teacheſt the way of God rigtely .

22 Is it lawfull for vs to giue tribute vnto Cesar , or no ?

23 But

C H A P. X X.

23 But he perceiued their craftiuelle, and said vnto them, Why tempt ye me?

24 Shew me a peny: whose image and superscription hath it? They answered and said, Cesar's.

25 And he said vnto them, Render therefore vnto Cesar the things which be Cesar's, and vnto God the things which be Gods.

26 And they could not take hold of his words before the people, and they maruailed at his answere, and held their peace.

27 ¶ Then came to him certaine of the Sadduces (which deny that there is any resurrection) and they asked him,

28 Saying, Master, Moses wrotes vnto vs, If any mans brother die having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise vp seed vnto his brother.

29 There were therefore seuen brethren, and the first tooke a wife, and died without children.

30 And the second tooke her to wife, and he died childlesse:

31 And the third tooke her, and in like manner the seuen also. And they left no children, and died.

32 Last of all, the woman died also. Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of them is she? for seuen had her to wife.

34 And Iesus answering said vnto them, The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage;

35 But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtaine that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage.

36 Neither can they die any more: for they are equal vnto the Angels, and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

37 Now y' the dead are raised, even Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Iacob:

38 For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living, for all live vnto him.

39 ¶ Then certaine of the Scribes, answering, said Master, thou hast well said.

40 And after that, they durst not aske him any question at all.

41 And he said vnto them, How say they of Christ is Davids sonne? H 4

42 And

S. L V K E.

42 And Dauid himselfe saith in the booke of Psalmes, The Lord said vnto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

43 Till I make thine enemies thy footstooles,

44 Dauid therefore calleth him, Lord, how is he then his sonne?

45 ¶ Then in the audience of all the people, he said vnto his disciples,

46 Beware of the Scribes, which desire to walke in long robes, and loue greetings in the markes, and the highest seats in the Synagogues, and the chiefe rownes at feasts:

47 Which deuoure widowes houses, and for a shew, make long prayers: the same shall receiuē greater damnation.

C H A P. X X I.

1 The poore widow is commended. 5 The destruction of the Temple and city is foretold. 23 The signes thereof.

A Nd he looked vp, and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury.

3 And he saw also a certayne poore widow cast-
ing in thither two mites.

3 And he said, Of a trueth, I say vnto you, that this poore widow hath cast in more then they all.

4 For all the same of their abundance cast in vnto the offerings of God, but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.

5 ¶ And as some spake of the Temple, how it was adoened with goodly stones, and gifts, he said.

6 As for these things which ye behold, the dayes will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone vpon another, that shall not be throwen down.

7 And they asked him, laying, Master, but when shall these things be? and what signe will there be, when these things shall come to passe?

8 And he said, Take heed that ye be not decei-
ved: for many shall come in my Name, saying, I am Christ, and the time draweth neare: goe ye not there-
fore after them.

9 But when ye shall heare of warres, and comu-
tions, be not terrified: for these things must first come
to passe, but the end is not by and by.

10 Then said he vnto them, Nation shal rise against nation, and kingdome against kingdome:

11 And

C H A P. X X I.

11 And great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and famines, and pestilences; and fearefull sights, and great signes shall there be from heauen.

12 But before all these, they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering you vp to the Synagogues, and into prissons, being brought before kings and rulers for my Names sake.

13 And it shall turne to you for a testimony.

14 Settle it therefore in your hearts, nor to meditate before what ye shall answere,

15 For I will give you a mouth and wisedome, which all your aduersaries shall not be able to gaine-say, nor refut.

16 And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolkes, and friends, and some of you shall they cause to be put to death.

17 And ye shalbe hated of al men for mynames sake.

18 But there shal not an haire of your head perith.

19 In your patience possesse ye your soules.

20 And when ye shal see Hiernusalem cōpassed with armes, then know that the desolation therof is nigh.

21 Then let them that are in Iudea, flee to the mountaines, and let them which are in the midst of it depart out, and let not them that are in the countreys, enter thereinto.

22 For these be the dayes of vengeance, that all things that are written, may be fulfilled.

23 But woe vnto them that are with child, and to them that giue suck in those dayes, for there shall be great distresse in the land, & wrath vpon this people.

24 And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall bee led away captiuic into all nations, and Hiernusalem shall be troden downe of the Gentiles, vntill the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

25 ¶ And there shall be signes in the Sunne, and in the Moone, and in the staires, and vpon the earth distresse of nations, with perplexity, the sea and the waues roaring,

26 Mens hearts failing them for feare, and for looking after those things which are comming on the earth: for the powers of heauen shall be shaken.

27 And then shall they see the Sonne of man comming in a cloud with power and great glory.

28 And when these things begin to come to passe,

S. L V K E.

then looke vp , and lift vp your heads, for your redemption draweth nigh.

29 And hee spake to them a parable, Behold the figtree, and all the trees;

30 When they now shoothe foorth, ye see & know of your owne selues, that Summer is now nigh at hand,

31 So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to passe, know ye, y^e the kingdom of God is nigh at hand.

32 Verely I say vnto you, This generation shall not passe away, till all be fulfilled:

33 Heaven and earth shall passe away, but my words shall not passe away.

34 ¶ And take heed to your selues, lest at anytime your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting and drunkenesse, and cares of this life, and so that day come vpon you vnawares.

35 For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth,

36 Watch ye therefore and pray alwayes, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to passe, and to stand before the Son of man.

37 And in the day time he was teaching in the Temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mount which is called, the mount of Olives.

¶ 38 And all the people came early in the morning to him in the Temple to heare him.

C H A P. XXII.

3 The Jewes conspire against Christ. 3 Satan entred into Judas. 7 The Passover prepared.

Now the feaste of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover.

3 And the chiefe Priests and Scribes sought how they might kill him; for they feared the people.

3 ¶ Then entred Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve.

4 And he went his way, and commanded with the chiefe Priests and Captaines, how he might betray him unto them.

5 And they were glad, and couenant to giue him money.

6 And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

7 ¶ Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the Passover must be killed.

8 And

C H A P. X X I I.

8 And he sent Peter and John, saying, Goe and prepare vs the Pasceouer, that we may eat.

9 And they said vnto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare?

10 And he said vnto them, Behold, when ye are entred into the city, there shall a man meete you, bearing a pitchet of water, follow him into the house where he entreth in.

11 And ye shal say vnto the good man of þ house, The Master saith vnto thee, Where is þ guest chamber where I shall eat the Pasceouer with my disciples.

12 And hee shal shew you a large upper roome furnished, there make ready.

13 And they went, and found as he had said vnto them, and they made ready the Pasceouer.

14 And when the houre was come, he sate downe, and the twelue Apostles with him.

15 And he said vnto them, With desire I haue desired to eat this Pasceouer with you before I suffer.

16 For I say vnto you, I will not any more eate thereof, vntill it be fulfilled in the kingdome of God.

17 And he tooke the cup, and gaue thanks, and said, Take this, and diuide it among your selues.

18 For I say vnto you, I will not drinke of the fruit of the vine, vntill the kingdome of God shall come.

19 ¶ And hee tooke bread and gaue thanks, and brake it, and gaue to them saying, This is my body which is given for you, this doe in remembrance of me.

20 Likewise also the cup after Supper saying, This cup is the New Testament in my blood, which is shed for you.

21 ¶ But behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me, is with me on the table.

22 And truely the Sonne of man goeth as it was determined, but woe vnto that man by whom he is betrayed.

23 And they began to enquire among themselves, which of them it was that should doe this thing.

24 ¶ And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest.

25 And he said vnto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship ouer them, and they that exercise authority vpon them, are called benefactors.

26 But ye shall not be so : but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger, and he that is chief, as he that doeth serue.

27 For whether is greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serueth ? Is not he that sitteth at meat? But I am among you as he that serueth.

28 Ye are they which haue contynned with me in my temptations.

29 And I appoinete vnto you a kiengdome , as my Father hath appoineted vnto me.

30 That ye may eate and drinke at my table in my kiengdome , and sit on thrones iudging the twelue Tribes of Israel.

31 ¶ And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to haue you, that hee may sift you as wheate.

32 But I haue prayed for thee, that thy faith faile not; and when thou art conuerted, strengthen thy bretheren.

33 And he said vnto him, Lord, I am ready to goe with thee, both into prison, and to death.

34 And he said, I tell thee Peter, the cocke shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrise deny that thou knowest me.

35 And he said vnto them, when I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shooes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing.

36 Then said he vnto them, But now he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip : and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.

37 For I say vnto you, that this that is written, must yet be accomplished in me, And he was reckoned among the transgressors : For the things concerning me haue an end.

38 And they said, Lord, behold here are two swords. And he said vnto them, It is enough.

39 ¶ And he came out, and went as he was wont, to the mount of Olives , and his disciples also followed him.

40 And when he was at the place, he said vnto them, Pray that ye enter not into temptation.

41 And he was withdrawne from them about a stones cast, and kneeled downe, and prayed,

42 Saying,

C H A P . X X I I .

42 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remoue
this cup from me: neuerthelesse, not my will, but
thine be done.

43 And there appeared an Angel vnto him from
heauen strengthening him.

44 And being in an agony, he prayed more earnestly,
and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood
falling downe to the ground.

45 And when he arose vp from prayer, & was come
to his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow.

46 And said vnto them, Why sleepe ye? Rise, and
pray, lest ye enter into temptation.

47 ¶ And while he yet spake, behold, a multitude
& he that was called Iudas, one of the twelue went
before them, and drew neare vnto Iesus, to kisse him.

48 But Iesus said vnto him, Iudas, betrayest thou
the Sonne of man with a kisse?

49 When they which were about him, saw what
would follow, they said vnto him, Lord, shall wee
smite with the iword.

50 ¶ And one of them smote the seruant of the
high Priest, and cut off his right eare.

51 And Iesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus
farre. And he touched his eare, and healed him.

52 Then Iesus said to the chiefe Priests and Cap-
taines of the Temple, and the Elders which were
come to him, Be ye come out as against a thiefe with
swords and staues;

53 When I was dayly with you in the Temple, ye
stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your
houre, and the power of darkenesse.

54 ¶ Then tooke they him, and led him, and
brought him into the high Priests house, and Peter
followed a far off.

55 And when they had kindled a fire in the mids
of the hall, and were set downe together, Peter sate
downe among them.

56 But a certaine maide beheld him as he sate by
the fire, and earnestly looked vpon him, and said,
This man was also with him,

57 And he denied him, saying, Woman, I knew
him not.

58 And after a little while another saw him, & said
Thou art also of them. And Peter said, Man, I am not

59 And

S. L V K E.

59 And about the space of one houre after, another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a trueth this fellow also was with him; for he is a Galilean.

60 And Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest. And immediately while he yet spake, & cock crew,

61 And the Lord turned and looked vpon Peter, and Peter remembred the word of the Lord, how he had said vnto him, before the cocke crow thou shalt deny me thrise.

62 And Peter went out, and wept bitterly.

63 ¶ And the men that held Iesus, mocked him, and smote him.

64 And when they had blindfolded him, they stroke him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophesie who is it that smote thee.

65 And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

66 ¶ And alioone as it was day the Elders of the people, and the chiese Priests and the Scribes came together and led him into their counsell, saying,

67 Art thou the Christ? Tell vs. And he said vnto them, If I tell you, you will not belieue.

68 And if I also askeyou, you will not answere me, nor let me goe.

69 Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God.

70 Then said they all, Art thou then the Sonne of God? And he said vnto them, Ye say that I am.

71 And they said, What need wee any farther witnessesse? For we our selues haue heard of his owne mouth.

C H A P. XXIII.

1 Jesus is accused before Pilate. 7 Sent to Herod, 11 Sent backe againe, 13 delivered to be crucified.

A Nd the whole multitude of them arose, and led him vnto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this fellow peruerting the nation, and forbidding to giue tribute vnto Cesar, saying that hee himselfe is Christ a King.

3 And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Iewes? and he answered him; and said, Thou sayest it.

4 Then said Pilate to the chiese Priests, and to the

C H A P. X X I I.

the people, I finde no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth vp the people, teaching throughout all Iury, beginning from Galilee vnto this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean,

7 And alsoone as he knew that he belonged vnto Herods iurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himselfe also was at Hierusalem at that time.

8 ¶ And when Herod saw Iesus, he was exceeding glad, for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him, and he hoped to haue seene some miracle done by him.

9 Then he questioned with him in many words, but he answered him nothing.

10 And the chiefe Priests and Scribes stood, and vehemently accused him.

11 And Herod with his men of warre set him at nought, and mocked him, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him againe to Pilate.

12 ¶ And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together, for before they were at enmity betwene themselves.

13 ¶ And Pilate when he had called together the chiefe Priests and rulers, and the people,

14 Said vnto them, Ye haue brought this man vnto me, as one yperuerteth the people, & behold, I having examined him before you, haue found no fault in this man, touching those things wherof ye accuse him.

15 No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him, and loe, nothing worthy of death is done vnto him.

16 I will therefore chastise him, and release him.

17 For of necessitie he must release one vnto them at the feast.

18 And they cryed out all at once, saying, Away with this man, and release vnto vs Barabbas.

19 Who for a certaine sedition made in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison.

20 Pilate therefore willing to release Iesus, spake againe to them:

21 But they cried, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him.

22 And he said to them the third time, Why what euill hath he done? I haue found no cause of death in him, I will therefore chastise him, and let him goe:

23 And

S. L V K E.

23 And they were instant with loud voyces , requiring that he might be crucified : and the voyces of them, and of the chiefe Priests preuailed.

24 And Pilate gaue sentence , that it shoulde as they required.

25 And he released vnto them , him that for sedition and murther was cast into prison , whom they had desired, but he deliuered Iesus vnto their will.

26 And as they led him away , they laid hold vpon one Simon a Cyrenian , comming out of the countrey , and on him they laid the crosse , that he might beare it after Iesus .

27 ¶ And there followed him a great company of people , and of women , which also bewailed and lamented him .

28 But Iesus turning vnto them , said , Daughters of Hierusalem , weape not for me , but weape for your selues , and for your children .

29 For behold , the dayes are commaing , in the which they shall say , Blessed are the barren , and the wombes that never bare , and the paps that never gave sucke .

30 Then shal they begin to say to the mountaines , Fall on vs , and to the hils , Couer vs .

31 For if they doe these things in a greene tree , what shall be done in the dry ?

32 And there were also two other malefactors led with him to be put to death .

33 And when they were come to the place whiche is called Caluerie , there they crucified him , & the malefactors one on the right hand , and the other on the left .

34 ¶ Then said Iesus , Father , forgiue them , for they know not what they doe : And they parted his rayment , and cast lots .

35 And the people stood beholding , and the rulers also with them derided him , saying , He sauued others , let him sauue himselfe , if he be Christ y chosen of God .

36 And the souldiers also mocked him , comming to him , and offering him vineger .

37 And saying , If thou be the King of the Iewes , sauue thy selfe .

38 And a superscription also was written ouer him in letters of Greeke , and Latine , and Hebrew , THIS IS THE KING OF THE IEWES .

39 ¶ And one of the malefactors which were han- ged

C H A P. X X I I I.

ged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thy selfe and vs.

40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Docit thou not seare God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And we indeed iustly: for we receive the due reward of our deedes, but this man hath done nothing amisse.

42 And he sajd vnto Iesus, Lord, remember mee when thou commest into thy kingdome.

43 And Iesus said vnto him, Verely, I say vnto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in Paradise.

44 And it was about the sixt hour, and there was a darkenesse ouerall the earth, vntil the ninth houre,

45 And the Sunne was darkened, and the vaille of the Temple was rent in the mids.

46 ¶ And when Iesus had cryed with a lond voyce, he said, Father, into thy hands I command my spikis: and having said thus, he gane vp the ghost.

47 Now when the Centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly, this was a righteous man.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afarre off, beholding these things.

50 ¶ And behold, there was a man named Ioseph, a counsellor, and he was a good man, and iust.

51 (The same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them) he was of Arimathea a city of Iewes (who also himselfe waited for the kingdom of God.)

52 This man went vnto Pilate, and begged the body of Iesus.

53 And he tooke it downe, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a Sepulchre that was hewen in stone, where neuert man before was layd.

54 And that was the Preparation, and the Sabbath drew on.

55 And the women also which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the Sepulchre, and how his body was layd.

56 And they returned, and prepared spices and oyn-

S. L V K E.

oyments, and rested the Sabbath day, according to the Commandement.

C H A P. XXIIII.

1 Christ's resurrection declared to two women. 9 Thy report is to others.

Now vpon the first day of the weeke, very early in the morning, they came vnto the sepulchre, bringing the splices which they had prepared, and certaine others with them.

2 And they found the stoue rolled away from the sepulchre.

3 And they entred in, and found not the body of the Lord Iesus.

4 And it came to passe, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments.

5 And as they were afayrd, and bowed downe their faces to the earth, they said to them, Why seeke ye the living among the dead?

6 He is not here, but is risen: Remember how he spake vnto you, when he was yet in Galilee.

7 Saying, The Sonne of man must be deliuered into the hands of sinfull men, and be crucified, and the third day rise againe.

8 And they remembred his words,

9 And returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things vnto the eleuen, and to all the rest.

10 It was Mary Magdalene, and Ioanna, and Mary the mother of Iames & other women that were with them, which told these things vnto the Apostles.

11 And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they beleueed them not.

12 Then arose Peter, and ran vnto the sepulchre, and stouping downe, he beheld the linnen clothes layd by themselues, and departed, wondring in himselfe at that which was come to passe.

13 ¶ And behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Hierusalem about threescore furlongs.

14 And they talked together of all these things which had happened.

15 And it came to passe, that while they communed together, and reasoned, Iesus himselfe drew neer, and went with them.

16 But

C H A P. XXI I I I.

16 But their eyes were holden, that they should
not know him.

17 And he said vnto them, What maner of com-
munications are these that ye haue one to another, as
ye walke, and are fad?

18 And the one of them whose name was Cle-
phas, answering, said vnto him, Art thou onely a
stranger in Hierusalem, and hast not knownen the
things which are come to passe there in these dayes?

19 And he said vnto them, What things? And
they said vnto him, Concerning Iesus of Nazareth
which was a Prophet, mighty in deed and word, be-
fore God and all the people.

20 And how the chiefe Priests and our rulers de-
livered him to be condemned to death, and hanc cru-
cified him.

21 But wee trusted that it had beene he, which
should haue redeemed Israel: and besides all this, to
day is the third day since these things were done.

22 Yea, & certaine women also of our company made
vs astonished, which were early at the sepulchre:

23 And when they found not his body, they came
saying, that they had also seene a vision of Angels,
which said that he was aline.

24 And certaine of them which were with vs, went
to the sepulchre, and found it even so as the women
had said, but him they saw not.

25 Then he said vnto them, O fooles, and slow of
heart, to beleeme all that the Prophets haue spoken:

26 Ought not Christ to haue suffered these things,
and to enter iuto his glory?

27 And beginning at Moses, and all the Pro-
phets, he expounded vnto them in all the Scriptures,
the things concerning himselfe.

28 And they drew nigh vnto the village whither
they went, and he made as though hee would haue
gone further.

29 But they constrained him, saying, Abide with
vs, for it is toward euening, and the day is farre
spent: And he went in to tarry with them.

30 And it came to passe as he sat at meat w^t the, he
ooke bread, & blessed it, and brake, & gave to them,

31 And their eyes were opened, and they knew
him, and he vanished out of their sight.

32 And

S. L V K'E.

32 And they said one to another, Did not our heart burne within vs while he talked with vs by the way, and while he opened to vs the Scriptures?

33 And they rose vp the same houre, and returned to Hierusalem, and found the eleuen gathered together, and them that were with them,

34 Saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon.

35 And they told what things were done in þ way, and how he was knownen of the in breaking of bread.

36 ¶ And as they thus spake, Iesus himselfe stood in the midst of them, and saith vnto them, Peace be vnto you.

37 But they were terrifid, and affrighted, and supposed that they had seene a spirit.

38 And he said vnto them, Why are ye troubled, and why doe thoughts arise in your hearts?

39 Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I my selfe: handle me, and see, for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me haue.

40 And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands and his feet.

41 And while they yet beleued not for joy, and wondred, he said vnto them, Haue ye here any meat?

42 And they gaue him a piece of a broyled fish, and of an hony combe.

43 And he tooke it, and did eate before them.

44 And he said vnto them, These are the words which I spake vnto you while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the Law of Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalmes concerning me.

45 Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the Scriptures,

46 And laid vnto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoued Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third d.y:

47 And that repentece and remission of sinnes should be preached in his Name, among all nations, beginning at Hierusalem.

48 And ye are witnesses of these things.

49 ¶ And behold, I send the promise of my Father vpon you: but tary ye in the city of Hierusalem, vntill ye be endued with power from on high.

50 ¶ And

C H A P. I.

50 ¶ And he led them out as farre as to Bethany, and he lift vp his hands, and blessed them.

51 And it came to passe while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and caried vp into heauen.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Hierusalem with great ioy :

53 And were continually in the Temple, praising and blessing God, Amen.

¶ The Gospel according to S. John.

C H A P. I.

1 Christis divinity, humanity, & office. 15 Johns testimoni of him. 39 The calling of Andrew, Peter, &c.

N the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

2 The same was in the beginning with God.

3 All things were made by him, and without him was not any thing made, that was made.

4 In him was life, and the life was the light of men.

5 And the light shineth in darkenesse, and the darkenesse comprehendeth it not.

6 ¶ There was a man sent from God, whose name was Iohn.

7 The same came for a witnes, to beare witnes of the light, that all men through him might beleeme.

8 Hee was not that light, but was sent to beare witnesse of that light.

9 That was the true light, which lighteth every man that commeth into the world.

10 He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

11 He came vnto his owne, and his owne receiued him not.

12 But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sonnes of God, *even* to them that beleue on his Name :

13 Which were borne, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

14 And the Word was made fleshe, and dwelt among vs (& we beheld his glory, the glory as of the onely begotten of the Father) full of grace & trueth.

15 ¶ Iohn bare witnesse of him, and cried, saying,

This

S. I O H N.

This was he of whom I spake, He that commeth after me, is preferred before me, for he was before me.

16 And of his falnesse have all we received, and grace for grace.

17 For the Law was given by Moses, but grace and trueth came by Iesus Christ.

18 No man hath seene God at any time: the onely begotten Sonne, which is in the bosome of the Father, he hath declared him.

19 ¶ And this is the record of Iohn, when the Jewes sent Priests and Leuites from Hierusalem to aske him, Who art thou?

20 And he confessed, and denied not: but confessed, I am not the Christ.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that Prophet? And he answered, No.

22 Then said they vnto him, Wher art thou, that we may give answere to them that sent vs? What sayest thou of thy selfe?

23 He said, I am the voyce of one crying in the wildernes: make straight the way of the Lord, as said the Prophet Elias.

24 And they which were sent, were of the Pharisees.

25 And they asked him, and said vnto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that Prophet?

26 Iohn answered them, saying, I baptize with water, but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not,

27 He it is, who comming after me, is preferred before me, whose shooes latchet I am not worthy to vnloose.

28 These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where Iohn was baptizing.

29 ¶ The next day, Iohn seeth Iesus comming vnto him, and saith, Behold the Lambe of God, which taketh away the sinne of the world.

30 This is he of whom I said, After me commeth a man, which is preferred before me: for he was before me.

31 And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.

32 And

C H A P. I.

32 And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a Dove, and it abode upon him.

33 And I knew him not: but hee that sent me to baptize with water, the same said vnto mee, Vpon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the holy Ghost.

34 And I saw and bare record, that this is the Sonne of God.

35 ¶ Againe the next day after, John stood, and two of his disciples.

36 And looking vpon Iesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lambe of God.

37 And the two disciples heard him speake, and they followed Iesus.

38 Then Iesus turned, and saw them following, and saide vnto them, What seeke ye? They said vnto him, Rabbi, (which is to say being interpreted, Master) where dwellest thou?

39 He saith vnto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth houre.

40 One of the two which heard John speake, and followed him, was Andrew Simon Peters brother.

41 He first findeth his owne brother Simon, and saith vnto him, We haue found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, the Christ.

42 And he brought him to Iesus. And when Iesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the Sonne of Iona, thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, a stone.

43 ¶ The day following, Iesus would goe foorth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith vnto him, Follow me.

44 Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter.

45 Philip findeth Nathaneel, and saith vnto him, We haue found him of whom Moses in the Law and the Prophets did write, Iesus of Nazareth the sonne of Joseph.

46 And Nathaneel said vnto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith vnto him, Come and see.

S. I O H N.

47 Iesus saw Nathaneel coming to him, & saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed in whom is no guile.

48 Nathaneel saith vnto him, Whence knowest thou me? Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast vnder the fig-tree I saw thee.

49 Nathaneel answered, and said vnto him, Rabbi, thou art the Sonne of God, thou art the King of Israel.

50 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Because I did vnto thee, I saw thee vnder the fig-tree, heleuest thou? thou shalt see greater things then these.

51 And he saith vnto him, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the Angels of God ascending, and descending vpon the Sonne of man.

C H A P. II.

1 Christ turneth water into wine, 12 departeth Caperbaum & Hierusalē, 15 & purgeth the Temple.

A Nd the third day there was a mariage in Cana

of Galilee, and the mother of Iesus was there.

2 And both Iesus was called, and his disciples to

the marriage.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Iesus saith vnto him, They haue no wine.

4 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, what haue I to doe with thee? mine houre is not yet come.

5 His mother saith vnto the seruants, Whatsoeuer he saith vnto you, doe it.

6 And there were set there sixe water pots of stone, after the maner of the purifying of the Iewes, containing three or four firkins a piece.

7 Iesus saith vnto them, Fill the water pots with water. And they filled them vp to the brimsne.

8 And he saith vnto them, Draw out now, & bear vnto the Gouernour of the feast. And they bare it.

9 When the ruler of the feast had tafted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, (but the seruants which drew the water knew) the gouernour of the feast called the bridegrome,

10 And saith vnto him, Every man at the beginning doeth set forth good wine, and when men haue well drunke, then that which is worse; but thou hast kept the good wine vntill now.

faith of
no guile,
nowest
Before
der the

, Rab.
King of

cause I
lseeuef

y I fay
and the
on the

seeth to
temple,
in Casu
here.
oles to

ber si
ne I to
atfor-

stone,
, cor-

s with

beate
it.
e wa-
nce it
(new)
me,
egin-
have
haft

This

bi
disci

13

and

and

13

Iesu

14

sheep

15

card

sheep

mon

16

thinp

of w

17

mn,

18

Wh

doesnt

19

this

20

this

three

21

22

his di

them

which

23

over,

when

24

becau

25

can

1 Cor

742

THE

C H A P. III.

11 This beginning of miracles did Iesus in Cana
of Galilee, and manifested foorth his glory, and his
disciples beleened on him.

12 ¶ After this he went downe to Capernaum he,
and his mother, and his brethren and his disciples,
and they contynred there not many dayes.

13 ¶ And the Iewes Passeouer was at hand, and
Iesus went vp to Hierusalem,

14 And found in the Temple those ſold oxen, and
ſheepe, and doves, and the changers of money ſitting.

15 And when hee had made a ſcourage of ſmall
cards, he droue them all out of the Temple, and the
ſheepe, and the oxen, and poured out the changers
money, and ouerthrew the tables,

16 And ſaid vnto them that ſold doves, Take these
things hence; make not my Fathers houſe an houſe
of merchandize.

17 And his diſciplines remembred that it was writ-
ten, The zeale of thine houſe hath eaten me vp.

18 ¶ Then answered the Iewes, and ſaid vnto him,
What ſigne ſheweft thou vnto vs, ſeeing that thou
doeft theſe things?

19 Iesus answered, and ſaid vnto them, Destroy
this Temple, and in three dayes I will raise it vp.

20 Then ſaid the Iewes, Forty and ſixe yeeres was
this Temple in building, and wilt thou reare it vp in
three dayes?

21 But he ſpake of the Temple of his body.

22 When therefore hee was riſen from the dead,
his diſciplines remembred that hee had ſaid this vnto
them: and they beleeued the Scripture, and the word
which Iesus had ſaid.

23 ¶ Now when he was in Hierusalem at ſeptember,
in the feaſt day, many beleeued in his Name,
when they ſaw the miracles which he did.

24 But Iesus did not commit himſelfe vnto them,
because he knew all men.

25 And needed not that any ſhould teſtifie of
an: for he knew what was in man.

C H A P. III.

Christ teacheth Nicodemus the neceſſity of regene-
ration. 14 Of faith in Christ.

There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nic-
odemus, a ruler of the Iewes.

S. I O H N.

2 The same came to Iesus by night, and said vnto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God : for no man can doe these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

3 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Verily, verily I say vnto thee, Except a man bee borne againe, he cannot see the kingdome of God,

4 Nicodemus saith vnto him, How can a man be borne when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mothers wombe and be borne?

5 Iesus answered, Verily, verily I say vnto thee, except a man be borne of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdome of God.

6 That which is borne of the flesh is flesh, and that which is borne of the spirit is spirit.

7 Marueile not that I said vnto thee, Ye must be borne againe.

8 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cominieth, and whither it goeth : so is every one that is borne of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered and said vnto him, How can these things be?

10 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, Art thou master of Israel, and knowest not these things?

11 Verily, verily I say vnto thee, Wee speake that we doe know, and testifie that we haue seene ; and ye receive not our witnessie.

12 If I haue told you earthly things, and yee be haue not : how shall yee beleue if I tell you of heauenly things?

13 And no man hath ascended vp to heauen, but he that came downe from heauen, even the Sonne of man which is in heauen.

14 ¶ And as Moses lift vp the serpent in the wilderness : even so must the Sonne of man be lifted vp;

15 That whosoeuer beleeueth in him, should not perish, but haue eternall life.

16 ¶ For God so loued the world, that he gave his onely begotten Sonne : that whosoeuer beleuueth in him, should not perish, but haue euerlasting life.

17 For God sent not his Sonne into the world to condamne the world : but that the world through him might be sauad,

C H A P. III.

18 ¶ He that believeth on him, is not condemned: but he that believeth not, is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the Name of the only begotten Sonne of God.

19 And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loued darkenesse rather then light, because their deeds were enill.

20 For every one that doeth euill, hateth the light, neither commeth to the light, lest his deeds should be reprooued.

21 But he that doth trueth, commeth to the light that his deedes may be made manifest that they are wrought in God.

22 ¶ After these things came Iesus and his disci-ples into the land of Iudea, and there he taried with them and baptized.

23 ¶ And John also was baptizing in Aenon, neare to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came and were baptized.

24 For John was not yet cast into prison.

25 ¶ Then there arose a question betweene some of Johns disciples and the Iewes about purifying.

26 And they came vnto John, and said vnto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Iordan, to whom thou barest witnesse, behold, the same baptizeth and all men come to him.

27 John answered, and said, A man can receive nothing except it be given him from heaven.

28 Ye your selues beare me witnesse, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him.

29 He that hath the bride is the bridegrome: but the friend of the bridegrome, which standeth and heareth him, reioyceth greatly because of the bridegromes voyce: This my ioy therefore is fulfilled.

30 He must increase; but I must decrease.

31 He that commeth from above, is aboue all: he that is of the earth, is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: he that commeth from heauen is aboue all.

32 And what he hath seene and heard, that he testifieth, and no man receiveth his testimony:

33 Hee that hath received his testimony, hath set to his seale, that God is true.

34 For hee whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: for God giueth not the Spirit by measure vnto him.

S. I O H N.

35 The Father loueth the Sonne, and hath given all things into his hand.

36 He that belieueth on the Son, hath everlasting life: and hee that belieueth not the Sonne, shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him.

C H A P. IIII.

1 Christ talketh with the woman of Samaria, and reuealeth himselfe vnto her.

W Hen therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisées had heard that Iesus made and baptizēd moe discipiles then Iohn.

2 (Though Iesus himselfe baptizēd not, but his discipiles :)

3 He left Iudea, and departed againe into Galilee,

4 And he must needs goe thorow Samaria.

5 Then commeth hee to a citie of Samaria, which is called Sychar, neere to the parcell of ground that Iacob gane to his sonne Ioseph.

6 Now Jacobs well was there, Iesus therefore being weatied wch his iourney: late thus on the well; and it was about the sixt houete.

7 There commeth a woman of Samaria to draw water: Iesus saith vnto her, Giue me to drinke.

8 For his discipiles were gone away vnto the city to buy meate.

9 Then saith the woman of Samaria vnto him, How is it that thou being a Jew, alkest drinke of me which am a woman of Samaria? For the Jewes haue no dealings with the Samaritanes.

10 Iesus answered, and said vnto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Giue me to drinke, thou wouldest haue asked of him, and he would haue givēn thee living water.

11 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deepe: from whence then haft thou that living water.

12 Art thou greater then our father Iacob, which gabe vs the Well, and dranke thereof himselfe, and his children and his cattell?

13 Iesus answered, and said vnto her, Whosoever drinke of this water, shall thirst againe:

14 But whosoever drinke of the water that I shall give him, shall never thirst: but the water that I shall give him, shalbe in him a well of water springing vp into euerlasting life.

35 The

C H A P. IIII.

15 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, giue mee this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

16 Iesu said vnto her, Goe, call thy husband, and come hither.

17 The woman answered, and said, I haue no husband, Iesu said vnto her, Thou hast well said, I haue no husband:

18 For thou hast had fife husbands, and hee whom thou now hast, is not thy husband: in that saidest thou truely,

19 The woman saith vnto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a Prophet.

20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountaine, and yee say, that in Hierusalem is the place where men ought to worship.

21 Iesu saith vnto her, Woman, beleue me, the houre commeth when ye shall neither in this mountaine, nor yet at Hierusalem, worship the Father.

22 Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for iudgement is of the Iewes.

23 But the houre commeth, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in Spirit, and in trueth, for the Father seeketh such to worship him.

24 God is a Spirit, & they that worship him, must worship him in spirit and in trueth.

25 The woman saith vnto him, I know that Messias commeth, which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell vs all things.

26 Iesu saith vnto her, I ſpeak vnto thee, am he.

27 ¶ And vpon this came his disciples and marueilid that he talked with the woman: yet no man ſaid What ſeekeft thou? or, Why talkest thou with her?

28 The woman then left her water pot, and went her way into the city, and ſaith to the men,

29 Come, ſee a man, which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Christ?

30 Then they went out of the city, and came vnto him.

31 ¶ In the meane while his disciples prayed him, ſaying, Master, eat.

32 But he ſaid vnto them, I haue meat to eat, that ye know not of.

33 Therefore ſaid the disciples one to another,

S. I O H N

Hath any man brought him ought to eate?

34 Iesus saith vnto them, My meate is, to doe the will of him that sent me, and to finish his woorke.

35 Say not ye, There are yet sountre moneths, and then commeth harwest? Behold, I say vnto you, Lift vp your eyes, and looke on the fields: for they are white already to harwest.

36 And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit vnto life eternall: that both hee that soweth, and he that reapeth, may reioyce together.

37 And herein is that saying true: One soweth, and another reapeth.

38 I sent you to reap that, whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and yee are entered into their labours.

39 ¶ And many of the Samaritanes of that citie beloued on him for the saying of the woman, which testified; He told me all that euer I did.

40 So when the Samaritanes were come vnto him, they besought him that he would tary with them; and he abode there two dayes.

41 And many more beleued, because of his owne wordes;

42 And said vnto the woman, Now we beleue, not because of thy saying, for we have heard him our selues, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Sauour of the world.

43 ¶ Now after two dayes hee departed thence, and went into Galiloe:

44 For Iesus himselfe testified, that a Prophet hath no honour in his owne countrey.

45 Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seene all the things that he did at Hierusalem at the Feast: for they also went vnto the Feast.

46 So Iesus came againe into Cana of Galilee where hee made the water wine. And there was a certaine noble man whose sonne was sicke at Capernaum.

47 When hee heard that Iesus was come out of Iudea into Galilee, he went vnto him, and besought him that he would come downe, and heale his son: for he was at the point of death.

48 Then said Iesus vnto him, Except ye see signes and wonderis, ye will not beleue.

49 The

C H A P. V.

49 The Noble man saith vnto him, Sir, come downe ere my childe die.

50 Iesus saith vnto him, Goe thy way, thy sonne liueth. And the man beleueed the word that Iesus had spoken vnto him, and he went his way.

51 And as he was now going downe, his seruants mett him, and told him, saying, Thy son liueth.

52 Then enquired he of them the houre when he began to amend: and they said vnto him, Yesterday at the seuenth houre the feuer left him.

53 So the father knew that it was at the same houre, in the which Iesus said vnto him, Thy son liueth, and himselfe beleueed, and his whole house.

54 This is againe the second miracle that Iesus did, when he was come out of Iudea into Galilee.

C H A P. V.

1 Iesus on the Sabbath day curst him that was diseased eight and thirtie yeeres.

A fter this there was a feast of the leues, and Iesus went vp to Hierusalem.

2 Now there is at Hierusalem by the sheepe-market a poole which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches.

3 In these lay a great multitude of impotent folke, of blinde, halt, withered, waiting for the moeing of the water.

4 For an Angel went downe at a certaine season into the people, and troubled the water; whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

5 And a certayne man was there, which had an infirmitie thirty and eight yeeres.

6 When Iesus saw him lie, and knew that he had beeene now a long time in that case, hee saith vnto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man when the water is troubled, to put me into the poole: but while I am comming, another steppeth downe before me.

8 Iesus saith vnto him, Rise, take vp thy bed, and walke.

9 And immediatly the man was made whole, and tooke vp his bed and walked: And on the same day was the Sabbath.

S. I O H N.

20 ¶ The Lewes therefore said vnto him that was cured, It is the Sabbath day, it is not lawfull for thee to carry thy bed.

21 He answered them, Hee that made me whole, the same said vnto me, Take vp thy bed and walke,

22 Then asked they him, What man is that which he said vnto thee, Take vp thy bed and walke?

23 And he that was healed, wist not who it was: for Iesas had conuoyed himselfe away, a multitude being in that place.

24 Afterward Iesas findeth him in the Temple, and said vnto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sinne no more, lest a worse thing come vnto thee.

25 The man departed, and told the Lewes that it was Iesas which had made him whole.

26 And therfore did the Lewes persecute Iesas, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the Sabbath day.

27 ¶ But Iesas answered them, My father worketh hitherto, and I worke.

28 Therefore the Lewes sought the more to kill him, not onely because hee had broken the Sabbath, but said also, that God was his Father, making himselfe equall with God.

29 Then answered Iesas, and said vnto them, Verely, verely, I say vnto you, the Sonne can do nothing of himselfe, but what he seeth the Father doe: for what things soever he doeth, these also doth the Sonne likewise.

30 For the Father loueth the Sonne, and sheweth him all things that himselfe doth: and he will shew him greater workes then these, that ye may marueile.

31 For as the Father raiseth vp the dead, and quickneth them: even so the Sonne quickneth whom he will.

32 For the Father iudgeth no man: but hath committed all judgement vnto the Sonne:

33 That all men should honour the Sonne, evens as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.

34 Verily, verily I say vnto you, He that heareth my word, and belieueth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation: but is passed from death vnto life.

C H A P. V.

25 Verely, verely I say vnto you, the houre is coming, and now is, when the dead shall heare ſy voyce of the Sonne of God: and they that heare, shall live.

26 For as the Father hath life in himſelfe, ſo hath he giuen to the Sonne to haue life in himſelfe:

27 And hath giuen him authority to execute iudgement alſo, because he is the Sonne of man.

28 Marueile uot at thiſ, for the houre is comming, in the which all that are in the graues ſhall heare his voyce.

29 And ſhall come forth, they that haue done good, vnto the reſurrecſtion of life, and they that haue done euill, vnto the reſurrecſtion of damnation.

30 I can of mine owne ſelfe doe nothing: as I heare I iudget and my iudgment is iuft, because I ſeeke not mine own will, but the will of the father, which hath ſent me.

31 If I beare witneſſe of my ſelfe, my witneſſe is not true.

32 ¶ There is another that beareth witneſſe of me, and I know that the witneſſe which he witneſſeth of me, is true.

33 Ye ſent vnto Iohn, and he bare witneſſe vnto the trueth.

34 But I receiue not testimony from man; but theſe things I ſay, that ye might be ſaued.

35 He was a burning and a ſhining light: & ye were willing for a ſeaſon to rejoyce in his light.

36 ¶ But I haue greater witneſſe then that of Iohn: for the workeſ which the Father hath giuen mee to finiſh, the ſame workeſ that I doe, beare witneſſe of me, that the Father hath ſent me.

37 And the Father himſelfe v̄ hath ſent me, hath borne witneſſe of me. Ye haue neither heard his voyce at any time, nor ſene his ſhape.

38 And ye haue not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath ſent, him ye beleeue not.

39 ¶ Search the Scriptures, for in them ye thinke ye haue eternall life, and they are they which teſtifie of me.

40 And ye will not come to me, that ye might haue life.

41 I receiue not honour from men.

42 But I know you, that ye haue not the loue of God in you.

S. I O H N.

43 I am come in my Fathers Name, and yee receiue mee not : if another shall come in his owne name, him ye will receive.

44 How can yee beleene, which receiue honest one of another, and seeke not the honour that cometh from God onely ?

45 Doe not thinke that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses in whom ye trust.

46 For had ye beleueed Moses, ye would haue beleued me : for he wrote of me.

47 But if ye beleue not his writings, how shall ye beleue my words.

C H A P. V. I.

1 Christ feedeth five thousand with five loaves and two fishes. 52 Declares himselfe to be the bread of life.

A fter these things Iesus went over the Sea of Galilee, which is the Sea of Tiberias :

2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw the miracles which hee did on them that were diseased.

3 And Iesus went vp into a mountaine, and there he sate with his disciples.

4 And the Passeouer a feast of the Iewes, was nigh.

5 ¶ When Iesus then lift vp his eyes, and saw a great company come vnto him, he saith vnto Phillip, Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat ?

6 (And this hee said to prooue him : for himselfe knew what he would doe.)

7 Phillip answered him, Two hundredth peniworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peters brother, saith vnto him ;

9 There is a ladde here, which hath five barley leaues, and two small fishes : but what are they among so many ?

10 And Iesus said, Make the men sit downe. Now there was much grasse in the place. So the men sate downe, in number about five thousand.

11 And Iesus tooke the leaues, and when he had giuen thankes, he distributed to the disciples, and the

C H A P. VI.

the disciples to them that were set down, and likewise of the fishes, as much as they would.

12 When they were filled, hee said vnto his disciples, Gather vp the fragments that remaine, that nothing be lost.

13 Therefore they gathered them together, and filled twelue baskets, with the fragments of the fine barley loaves, which remained ouer and aboue vnto them that had eaten.

14 Then those men, when they had seene the miracle, that Iesus did, said, This is of a trueth that Prophet that shoulde come into the world.

15 ¶ When Iesus therfore perceiued þ they would come and take him by force, to make him a King, he departed againe into a mountaine himselfe alone.

16 And when Euen was now come, his disciples went downe vnto the Sea.

17 And entred into a ship, and went ouer the Sea towards Capernaum : and it was now darke, and Iesus was not come to them.

18 And the Sea arose, by reason of a great wind that blew.

19 So when they had rowed about five & twenty or thirtie furlongs, they see Iesus walking on the Sea, and drawing nigh vnto the shipp: & they were afraid.

20 But he saith vnto them, It is I, be not afraid.

21 Then they willingly received him into the ship, and immediately the ship was at the land whither they went.

22 ¶ The day following, when the people which stod on the other side of the Sea, saw that there was none other boate there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entered, and that Iesus went not with his disciples into the boate, but that his disciples were gone away alone :

23 Howbeit there came other boates from Tiberias, nigh vnto the place where they did eate bread, after that the Lord had ginen thankes :

24 When the people therfore saw that Iesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also tooke shipp, and came to Capernam, seeking for Iesus.

25 And when they had found him on the other side of the Sea, they laid vnto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither ?

as Iesus

S. I O H N.

26 Iesus answered them, and said, Verely, verely, I say vnto you, Yee seeke me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaues, and were filled.

27 Labour not for the meate that perisheth, but for that meate that endureth vnto euerlasting life which the Sonne of man shall giue vnto you: for him hath God the Father sealed.

28 Then said they vnto him, What shall we doe that we might worke the works of God?

29 Iesus answered and said vnto them, This is the worke of God, y^e beleue on him whō he hath sent

30 They said therefore vnto him, What signe shewest thou then, that we may see and beleue thee? What doest thou worke?

31 Our fathers did eat Manna, in the desart, as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat.

32 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Moses gaue you not y^e bread from heauen but my Father giueth you the true bread frō heauē.

33 For the bread of God is hee which commeth downe from heauen, and giueth life vnto the world.

34 Then said they vnto him, Lord, euermore giue us this bread.

35 And Iesus said vnto them, I am the bread of life: he that commeth to me shall never hunger: and he that beleueth on me shall never thirst.

36 But I said vnto you, that ye also haue seene mee and beleue not.

37 All that the Father giueth me, shall come to me; and him y^e commeth to me, I will in no wise cast out.

38 For I came downe from heauen, not to doe mine ownewill, but the will of him that sent me.

39 And this is the Fathers will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath giuen me, I shoule lose nothing, but shoule raise it vp againe at the last day.

40 And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Sonne, and beleueneth on him, may haue euerlasting life: and I will raise him vp at the last day.

41 The Iewes then murmured at him, because hee said, I am the bread which came downe from heauen

42 And they said, Is not this Iesus the Sonne of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How is it

C H A P. VI.

it then that he saith I came downe from heauen ?

43 Iesustherefore answered , and said vnto them ,
Mutmure not among your selues .

44 No man can come to me, except the Father w
hath sent me, draw him:and I will raise him vp at the
last day .

45 It is written in the Prophets, And they shalbe all
taught of God. Every man therfore y hath heard &
hath learned of the Father, commeth vnto me,

46 Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he
which is of God, he hath seen the Father.

47 Verely, verely I say vnto you, He that believeth
on me, hath everlasting life .

48 I am the bread of life .

49 Your fathers did eat Manna in the wildernesse,
and are dead .

50 This is the bread which commeth downe frō
heauen, that a man may eat thereof and not die .

51 I am the liuing bread which came downe from
heauen, if any man eate of this bread he shall live for
ever: and the bread that I will gine, is my flesh, which
I will gine for the life of the world .

52 The lewes therefore stroake among themselves,
saying, How can this man give vs his flesh to eate ?

53 Then Iesus said vnto them, Verely , verely I say
vnto you, Except ye eate the flesh of the Son of man,
and drinke his blood, ye haue no life in you .

54 Who so eareth my flesh, and drinketh my blood
hath eternall life , and I will raise him vp at the last
day .

55 For my flesh is meat indeede, and my blood is
drinke indeede .

56 He that eareth my flesh & drinketh my bloed,
dwelleth in me and I in him .

57 As y living Father hath sent me, & I live by the
Father: so he y eareth me, even he shall live by me .

58 This is that bread which came downe frō hea-
uen: not as your fathers did eat Manna, and are dead:
he that eareth of this bread shall live for ever .

59 These things said he in the Synagogue , as hee
taught in Capernaum .

60 Many therefore of his disciples , when they had
heard shū, said, This is an hard saying, who can heare
it?

61 When

S. I O H N.

61 When Iesus knew in himselfe, that his disci-
ples murmured at it, he said vnto them, Doth this offend you?

62 Wheras and if ye shall see the Sonne of man ascend vp where he was before?

63 It is the Spirit that quickeneth, the flesh profiteth nothing: the wordes that I speake vnto you, they are spirit, and they are life.

64 But there are some of you that beleue not: For Iesus knew from the beginning, who they were that beleueed not, and who shold betray him.

65 And he said, Therefore said I vnto you, that no man can come vnto me, except it were given vnto him of my Father.

66 ¶ From that time many of his disciples went backe, and walked no more with him.

67 Then said Iesus vnto the twelue, Will ye also goe away?

68 Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we goe? Thou hast the words of eternall life.

69 And we beleue, and are sure that thou art that Christ, the sonne of the living God.

70 Iesus answered them, Hane not I chosen you twelue, and one of yon is a denill?

71 Hee spake of Iudas Iscarior, the sonne of Simon: for hee it was that shold betray him, being one of the twelue.

C H A P. VII.

1 Jesus reproacheth his kinshmen, 10 goesth up to the feast of Tabernacles, 14 seachesth in the Temple.

A fter these things Iesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walke in Iury, because the Iewes sought to kill him.

2 Now ſ Iewes feast of Tabernacles was at hand.

3 His brethren therefore ſaid vnto him, Depart hence and goe into Iudea, that thy disciplies alſo may ſee the workes that thou doest.

4 For there is no man that doeth any thing in ſecret, and he himſelfe ſeeketh to bee knowne openly: If thou doe these things, ſhew thy ſelfe to the world.

5 For neither did his brethren beleue in him.

6 Then Iesus ſaid vnto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway ready.

7 The world cannot hate you, but me it hateth, be-

cause

C H A P. VII.

saue I testifie of it, that the works thereof are enill.

8 Goe ye vp vnto this Feast: I goc not vp yet
vnto this Feast, for my time is not yet full come.

9 When he had said these words vnto them, hee
abode still in Galilee.

10 But when his brethren were gone vp, then
went he also vp vnto the Feast, not openly, but as it
were in secret.

11 Then the Iewes sought him at the Feast, and
said, Where is he?

12 And there was much murmuring among the
people concerning him. For some said, He is a good
man: Others said, Nay, but he deceiueth the people.

13 Howbeit, no man spake openly of him, for
fear of the Iewes.

14 ¶ Now about the middest of the Feast, Iesus
went vp into the Temple, and taught.

15 And the Iewes marueiled, saying, How know-
eth this man letters, hauing never learned?

16 Iesus answered them, My doctrine is not mine,
but his that sent me.

17 If any man will doe his will, he shall know of
the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I
speak of my selfe.

18 He that speakeþ of himselfe, seeketh his owne
glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him,
the same is true, and no unrighteousnesse is in him.

19 Did not Moses give you the Law, & yet none of
you keepeth the Law? Why go ye about to kill me?

20 The people answered, and said, Thou hast a
devil: Who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Iesus answered, and said vnto them, I haue
done one worke, and ye all marueile.

22 Moses therefore gane vnto you Circumcision,
(not because it is of Moses, but of the Fathers) and
ye on the Sabbath day circumcise a man.

23 If a man on the Sabbath day receive Circum-
cision, that the Law of Moses shoulde not be broken: are
ye angry at me, because I haue made a man every
whit whole on the Sabbath day?

24 Judge not according to the appearance, but
judge righteous iudgement.

25 Then said some of them of Hierusalem, Is not
this he whom they seek to kill?

S. I O H N.

26 But loe, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing vnto him: Doe the rulers know indeede that this is the very Christ?

27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh no man knoweth whence he is.

28 Then cryed Iesus in the Temple as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am, and I am not come of my selfe, but he that sent me, is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I know him, for I am from him, & he hath sent me.

30 Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his houre was not yet come.

31 And many of the people beleueed on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he doe more miracles then these which this man hath done?

32 ¶ The Pharisees heard that the people murmurred such things concerning him: and the Pharisees & the chiefe Priests sent officers to take him.

33 Then said Iesus vnto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and then I goe vnto him that sent me.

34 Ye shall seeke me, and shall not finde me: and where I am, thither ye cannot come.

35 Then said the Iewes among themselves, Whither will he goe, that we shall not finde him? will he goe vnto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles?

36 What manner of saying is this that he said, Ye shall seeke me, and shall not finde me? and where I am, thither ye cannot come?

37 In the last day, that great day of the feast, Iesus stood, and cryed, saying, If any man thirit, let him come vnto me and drinke.

38 He that beleeueth on me, as the Scripture hath said, out of his belly shal flow riuets of living water.

39 (But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that beleue on him, shoulde receive. For the holy Ghost was not yet given, because Iesus was not yet glorified.)

40 ¶ Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a trueth this is the Prophet.

41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee?

42 Hath not the Scripture said, that Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the towne of Bethlehem where David was?

C H A P. VIII.

43 So there was a division among the people because of him.

44 And some of them would have taken him, but no man laid hands on him.

45 ¶ Then came the officers to the chiefe Priests and Pharisees, and they said vnto them, Why haue ye not brought him?

46 The officers answered, Never man spake like this man.

47 Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceived?

48 Haue any of the Rulers, or of the Pharisees believed on him?

49 But this people who knoweth not the Law, ye curse.

50 Nicodemus saith vnto them, (he that came to Iesus by night, being one of them,) ¶

51 Doeth our Law judge any man before it heare him, and know what he doeth?

52 They answered and said vnto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search, and looke: for out of Galilee ariseth no Prophet.

53 And every man went vnto his owne house.

C H A P. VIII.

*Christ delivereth the woman taken in adultery, 13
preacheth himselfe the light of the world.*

Iesus went vnto the mount of Olives:

2 And earely in the morning he came againe into the Temple, and all the people came vnto him, and he sate downe and taught them.

3 And the Scribes and Pharisees brought vnto him a woman taken in adultery, and when they had set her in the midift,

4 They say vnto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.

5 Now Moses in the Law commanded vs, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?

6 This they said, tempting him, that they might haue to accuse him, But Iesus stouped downe, and with his finger wrote on the ground, as though hee heard them not.

7 So when they continued asking him, hee lift vp himselfe, and said vnto them, Hee that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.

8 And

S. I O H N.

8 And againe he stooped downe, and wrote on the ground

9 And they which heard it , being connisid by their owne conscience, went out one by one, begining at the eldest, euen vnto the laſt, and Iesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midſt.

10 When Iesus had lift vp himſelfe , and ſaw none but the woman, hee ſaid vnto her, Woman, where are tho'e thine accusers ? Hath no man condeſned thee ?

11 Shee ſaid no man , Lord. And Iefsus ſaid vnto her, Neither doe I condeſne thee: Goe, and ſinne no more.

12 ¶ Then ſpake Iesus againe vnto them, ſaying, I am the light of the world : he that followeth me, ſhall not walke in darkneſſe, but thall haue the light of life.

13 The Pharisees therefore ſaid vnto him, Thou beareſt record of thy ſelfe, thy record is not true.

14 Iefsus anſwered and ſaid vnto them, Though I beare record of my ſelfe, yet my record is true : for I know whence I came, and whither I goe, but ye can not tell whence I come, and whither I goe.

15 Ye judge after the fleſt ; I judge no man.

16 And yet if I judge, my iudgement is true : for I am not alone, but I and the Father that ſent me.

17 It is alſo written in your Law, that the testimony of two men is true.

18 I am one that beare witneſſe of my ſelfe, and the Father that ſent me beareth witneſſe of me.

19 Then ſaid they vnto him , Where is thy Father? Iesus anſwered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father: If ye had knownen me, ye ſhould haue knownen my Father alſo.

20 These words ſpake Iesus in the treasury , as he taught in the Temple : and no man laid hands on him, for his houre was not yet come.

21 Then ſaid Iesus againe vnto them, I go my way, and ye shall ſeeke me , and thall die in your finde : Whither I goe, ye cannot come.

22 Then ſaid the lewes, Will he kill himſelfe? because he ſaith, Whither I goe, ye cannot come.

23 And he ſaid vnto them, Yee are from beneath, I am from aboue: Yee are of this world, I am not of this world.

34 I
your ſide
hall di
35 T
Ieſus ſa
you ſcre
36 I
but he
thoſe t
37 T
the Fa
38 T
vp the
he, and
Fath
39 T
hath t
thiſe g
30 A
31 T
him, c
ople
32 T
hall
33 T
and t
ther
34 T
you,
35 tuer
36 thal
37 to
38 the
fath
39 is a
har
40 tol
shir

C H A P. VIII.

34 I said therefore vnto you, that yee shall die in your sinnes. For if ye beleue not that I am he, yee shall die in your sinnes.

35 Then said they vnto him, Who art thou? And Iesus saith vnto them, Euen the same that I said vnto you from the beginning.

36 I haue many things to say, and to iudge of yow; but he that sent me is true, & I speake to the world those things which I haue heard of him.

37 They vnderstood not that he spake to them of the Father.

38 Then said Iesus vnto them, When ye haue life vnto the Sonne of man, then shall yee know that I am he, and that I doe nothing of my selfe: but as my Father hath taught me, I speake these things.

39 And he that sent me, is with mee: the Father hath not left mee alone: for I doe alwayes those thinges that please him.

40 As he spake thys words many beleueed on him.

41 Then said Iesus to those Iewes that beleueed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my discipiles indeed.

42 And ye shall know the trueth, and the trueth shall make you free?

43 ¶ They answered him, We be Abrahams seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free?

44 Iesus answered them, Verely verely I say vnto you, Whosoeuer committeth sin, is the seruant of sin.

45 And the seruant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Sonne abideth ever.

46 If the Sonne therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

47 I know that ye are Abrahams seed, but ye seeke to kill me, because my word hath no place in you.

48 I speake that which I haue seene with my Father: and ye doe that which ye haue seene with your father.

49 They answered, and said vnto him, Abrahams is our father. Iesus saith vnto them, If ye were Abrahams children, ye would doe the works of Abraham.

50 But now yee seeke to kill me, a man that hath told yee the trueth, which I haue heard of God: this did not Abraham.

51 Yet

S. I O H N.

41 Yee doe the deeds of your father. Then said they to him We be not borne of fornication , wee have one Father, even God.

42 Iesus said vnto them, If God were your Father ye wold loue me, for I proceeded foorth, and came from God : neither came I of my selfe, but he sent me

43 Why doe ye not understand my speech ? even because ye cannot heare my word.

44 Ye are of your father the deuill, and the lusts of your father will ye do: he was a murtherer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no trueth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speketh of his own : for he is a lyar and the father of it

45 And because I tell you the trueth , ye beleue me not.

46 Which of you conuinceth me of sinne ? And if I say the trueth, why doe ye not beleue me ?

47 He that is of God, heareth Gods words : ye therefore heare them not, because ye are not of God.

48 Then answered the Iewes, and said vnto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritane and hast a deuill ?

49 Iesus answered, I haue not a deuill : but I honour my Father, and ye doe dishonour me.

50 And I seeke not mine owne glory, there is one that seeketh and iudgeth.

51 Verely, verely I say vnto you, If a man keepe my saying, he shall never see death.

52 Then said the Iewes vnto him, Now we know that thou hast a deuill. Abraham is dead , and the Prophets: and thou sayest, If a man keepe my saying, he shall never taste of death.

53 Art thou greater then our father Abraham, which is dead , and the Prophets are dead : whom makest thou thy selfe ?

54 Iesus answered, If I honour my selfe , my honour is nothing : it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, that he is your God :

55 Yet ye haue not knowne him, but I know him : and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a lier like vnto you: but I know him, and keepe his saying,

56 Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day : and he saw it, and was glad.

57 Then said the Iewes vnto him , Thou art not yet

aid
wee
ther
ame
me
men

s of
s the
here
pea-
of it
ene

And

ye
ed.
him,
haft

ho-

ent

eepe

now
the
say-

am,
om

ho-
me,

im:
liar
ing,
ay:

not
yet

yet
58
you,
19
Jesus
ing t

1 He

A

2
who
born

3
not 1
be on

4
whil
work

5
the 1
6

grea
the e

7
Sloa
his u

8
befor
this a

9
him
to

eyes
11
sus n

ne G
and
12

laid,
13
time
14

C H A P. IX.

yet fifty yeares old, and hast thou seene Abraham?
¶ 8 Iesus said vnto them, Verely, verely I say vnto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

¶ 9 Then tooke they vp stones to cast at him: but Iesus hid himselfe, and went out of the Temple, going therv the mids of them, and so passed by.

C H A P. IX.

¶ 1 He that was borne blind, is restored to sight. ¶ 2 He is brought to the Pharisees.

A Nd as Iesus passed by, hee saw a man which was blind from his birth.

¶ 3 And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did finne, this man or his parents, that hee was borne blind?

¶ 4 Iesus answered, Neither hath this man finned, nor his parents: but that the woorkes of God shoulde be made manifest in him.

¶ 5 I must worke the woorkes of him that sent mee, while it is day: the night commeth, when no man can worke.

¶ 6 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

¶ 7 When hee had thus spokea, hee put on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay;

¶ 8 And said vnto him, Goe vnto the poole of Siloam (Which is by interpretation, Sent) He went his way therefore and wathched, and came seeing.

¶ 9 The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seene him, that hee was blind, said, Is not this he that sate and begged?

¶ 10 Some said, This is hee: others said, Hee is like him: but he said, I am hee.

¶ 11 Therefore said they vnto him, How were thine eyes opened?

¶ 12 He answered and said, A man that is called, Iesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said vnto me, Goe to the poole of Siloam and wash: and I went and wathched, and I received sight.

¶ 13 Then said they vnto him? Where is hee? Hee said, I know not.

¶ 14 They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blinde.

¶ 15 And it was the Sabbath day when Iesus made the

S. I O H N.

the clay, and opened his eyes.

15 Then againe the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said vnto them, He put clay vpon mine eyes, and I washed, and doe see.

16 Therefor said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he kerperth not the Sabbath day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner, doe such miracles? and there was a diuision among them.

17 They say vnto the blind man againe, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a Prophet.

18 But the lewes did not beleene concerning him, that he had beeene blind, and received his sight, vntill they called his parents of him, & had received his sight.

19 And they asked the, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was borne blind? How then doth he now see?

20 His parents answered them, & said, We know that this is our sonne, and that he was borne blind;

21 But by what meanes he now seeth, we know not, or who hath opened his eyes we know not: he is of age, aske him, he shall speake for himselfe.

22 These words spake his parents, because they feared the lewes: for the lewes had agreed already, that if any man did confesse that he was Christ, he should be put out of the Synagogue.

23 Therefor said his parents, He is of age, aske him.

24 Then againe called they the man that was blinde, and said vnto him, Giue God the praise, we know that this man is a sinner.

25 He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: One thing I know, that whereas I was blinde, now I see.

26 Then said they to him againe, What did he to thee? How opened he thine eyes?

27 He answered them, I haue told you already, and ye did not heare: wherefore would you heare it againe? Will ye also be his disciples.

28 Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple, but we are Moses disciples.

29 We know that God spake vnto Moses; as for this fellow, we know not from whence he is.

30 The man answered, and said vnto them, Why

C H A P. X.

Ierein is a marueilous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man bee a worshipper of God and doth his will, him he heareth.

32 Since the world began was it not heard that a man opened the eyes of one that was borne blind.

33 If this man were not of God he could do nothing.

34 They answered, and said vnto him, Thou wilst altogether borne in sinnes, and doest thou teach vs? And they cast him out.

35 Iesus heard that they had cast him out, and when he had found him, he laid vnto him, Doest thou beleue on the Sonne of God?

36 He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might beleue on him?

37 And Iesus said vnto him, Thou haft both seene him, and it is he that talketh with thee.

38 And he said, Lord, I beleue; and he worshipped him.

39 ¶ And Iesus said, For iudgement I am come into this world, that they which see not might see, and that they which see might be made blinde.

40 And some of the Pbarisees which were with him, heard these words, and said vnto him, Are we blinde also?

41 Iesus said vnto them, If ye were blinde, yee should haue no sinne: but now ye say, We see, therefore your sinne remaineth.

C H A P. X.

1 Christ is the doore and the good Shepheard. 24 He prooueth by his workes, that he is the Christ.

V Erily, verily I say vnto you, he that entreth not by the doore into the sheepfold, but climeth vp some other way, the same is a thiefe, and a robber.

2 But he that entreth in by the doore, is the shepheard of the sheep:

3 To him the porter openeth, and the sheep heare his voyce, and he calleth his owne sheep, by name, and leadeth them out.

4 And when he putteth foorth his owne sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him; for they know his voyce.

5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee

from

S. I O H N.

from him, for they know not the voyce of strangers;

6 This parable spake Iesus vnto them : but they waderstood not what things they were which he spake vnto them.

7 Then said Iesus vnto them againe, Verily, verily I say vnto you, I am the doore of the sheepe.

8 All that euer came before mee are theues and robbers : but the sheepe did not heare them.

9 I am y^e doore, by me if any man enter in, he shall be saued, and shall goe in and out, and find pasture.

10 The thiefe commeth not, but for to steale and to kil, & to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly.

11 I am the good Shepheard : the good shepheard giue^sth his life for the sheepe.

12 But he that is an hireling & not the shepheard, whose owne the sheepe are not, seeth the Wolfe coming, and leaueth the sheepe, and fleeth: and the Wolfe catcheth them, and scattereth the sheepe.

13 The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheepe.

14 I am the good Sh. pheard, and know my sheep, and am knowne of mine.

15 As the Father knoweth mee, euē so know I the Father : and I lay downe my life for the sheepe.

16 And other sheepe I haue, which are not of this fold: them also must I bring and they shall heare my voyce ; and there shalbe one fold, and one shepheard.

17 Therefore doth my Father loue me : because I lay do vne my life, that I might take it againe.

18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it downe of my selfe. I haue power to lay it downe, and I haue power to take it againe. This commandement haue I received of my Father.

19 ¶ There was a diuision therefore againe among the lewes for these sayings.

20 And many of them said, he hath a deuill, and is mad, why heare ye him ?

21 Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a deuill, Can a deuill open the eyes of the blind?

22 ¶ And it was at Hierusalem the feast of the Dedication, and it was winter.

23 And Iesus walked in the Temple in Solomons porch.

C H A P. X.

24 Then came the Iewes round about him, and said vnto him, How long doest thou make vs to doubt? if thou be the Christ, tell vs plainly.

25 Ies.5 answered them, I told you, and ye beleue not: the workes that I doe in my Fathers Name, they beare witnesse of me.

26 But yee beleue not, because yee are not of my sheep, as I said vnto you.

27 My sheep heare my voyce, and I know them, and they follow me.

28 And I give vnto them eternall life: and they shall never perish, neither shall any man plucke them out of my hand.

29 My Father which gave them to mee, is greater then all: and no man is able to plucke them out of my Fathers hand.

30 I and my Father are one.

31 Then ſix Iewes took vnto them ſtones again to ſtone him

32 Iesus answered them, Many good workes haue I ſhewed you from my Father; for which of thofe workes doe ye ſtone me?

33 The Iewes answered him, ſaying, For a good worke we ſtone thee not, but for blaſphemey, and becauſe that thou bein a man makeſt thy ſelfe God.

34 Iesus anſwered them, Is it not written in your Law, I ſaid, Ye are gods?

35 If he called them gods, vnto whom the word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken:

36 Say ye of him whom the Father hath ſanctified and ſent into the world, Thou blaſphemest; because I ſaid, I am the Sonne of God?

37 If I doe not the workes of my Father, beleue me not.

38 But if I doe, though yee beleue not me, beleue the workes: that yee may know and beleue that the Father is in me, and I in him.

39 Therefore they ſought againe to take him: but he escaped out of their hand.

40 And went away againe beyond Jordan, into the place where Iohn at firſt baptizid & there he abode.

41 And many retorted vnto him, and ſaid, Iohn did no miracle: but all things that Iohn ſpake of this man, were true.

42 And many beleefed on him there.

S. I O H N.
C H A P. XI.

1 Christ raiseth Lazarus fourte dayes buried. 47 The Priests and Pharisees gather a counsell.

N O w a certayne man was sicke named Lazarus of Bethany, y towne of Mary, & her sister Martha.

2 (It was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feete with her haire, whose brother Lazarus was sicke.)

3 Therefore his sister sent vnto him, saying, Lord behold, he whom thou louest, is sicke.

4 When Iesus heard that he said, This sickenesse is not vnto death, but for the glory of God, that the Sonne of God might be glorified thereby.

5 Now Iesus loued, Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

6 When hee had heard therefore that hee was sicke, hee abode two dayes still in the same place where he was.

7 Then after that, saith he to his disciples, Let vs goe into Iudea againe.

8 His disciples say vnto him, Master, the Jewes of late sought to stone thee, & gneft thou thither again?

9 Iesus answered, Are there not twelve houres in the day? If any man walke in the day, hee stumbelth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

10 But if a man walke in the night, he stumbelth because there is no light in him.

11 These things said hee, and after that hee saith vnto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth, but I goe that I may awake him out of sleepe.

12 Then said his discipiles, Lord, if he sleepe, he shall doe well.

13 Howbeit Iesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleepe.

14 Then said Iesus vnto them plainly, Lazarus is dead:

15 And I am glad for your sakes, that I was not there (to the intent yee may beleue:) neuerthelesse let vs goe vnto him.

16 Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, vnto his fellow discipiles, Let vs also goe, that we may die with him.

17 Then when Iesus came, hee found that hee had liyn in the grane fourte dayes already.

18 Now

C H A P. XI.

18 (Now Bethanie was nigh unto Hierusalem, aboue fiftene furlongs off:)

19 And many of the Iewes came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.

20 Then Martha, as soone as shee heard that Iesus was comming, went and met him: but Mary satte still in the house.

21 Then said Martha vnto Iesus, Lord, If thou hadst beeene here, my brother had not died.

22 But I know that euen now, whatsoeuer thou wilst aske of God, God will give it thee.

23 Iesus saith vnto her, Thy brother shall rise againe.

24 Martha saith vnto him I know that he shall rise againe in the resurrection at the last day.

25 Iesus said vnto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that belieueth in mee, though hee were dead, yet shall hee live.

26 And whosoever liveth, and belieueth in mee, shall never die: Belieuest thou this?

27 Shee saith vnto him, Yea Lord, I beleue that thou art the Christ the Sonne of God, which shoulde come into the world.

28 And when shee had so said, shee went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee.

29 As soone as shee heard that, shee arose quickly, and came vnto him.

30 Now Iesus was not yet come into the towne, but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Iewes then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that shee rose vp hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth to the graue, to weape there.

32 Then when Mary was come, where Iesus was, & saw him, she fell downe at his feete saying vnto him, Lord, if thou hadst bin here, my brother had not died.

33 When Iesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Iewes also weeping which came with her, hee groaned in the spirit, and was troubled.

34 And said, Where haue ye laid him? They say vnto him, Lord, Come and see.

35 Iesus wepte.

36 Then said the Iewes, Behold, how he loued him!

37 And some of them said, Could not this man

S. I O H N.

which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died?

38 Iesus therefore againe groaning in himselfe, commeth to the graue. It was a caue, and a stome lay upon it.

39 Iesus said, Take ye away the stone. Marthas the sister of him that was dead, faith vnto him, Lord, by this time hee stinketh: for hee hath beene dead fourteene dayes.

40 Iesus faith vnto her, Said I not vnto thee, that if thou wouldest beleue, thou shouldest see the glory of God?

41 Then they tooke away the stone from the place where he dead was laid. And Iesus lift vp his eyes, and said father I thanke thee, that thou haft heard me.

42 And I knew that thou hearest me alwayes: but because of the people that stand by, I said it, that they may beleue that thou haft sent me.

43 And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voyce, Lazarus come foorth.

44 And he that was dead, came forth, bound hand and foot with graue clothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin, Iesus faith vnto them, Loose him, and let him goe.

45 Then many of the Iewes which came to Mary, and had seene the things which Iesus did; beleuened on him.

46 But some of them went their wayes to the Pharisées, and told them what things Iesus had done.

47 ¶ Then gathered the chiefe Priests and the Pharisées a counsell, and said, What doe wee? For this man doeth many miracles.

48 If we let him thus alone, all men will beleue on him, and the Romanes shall come, and take away both our place and nation.

49 And one of them named Caiaphas, being the high Priest that same yeere, said vnto them, Ye know nothing at all,

50 Nor consider that it is expedient for vs, that one man should die for the people, & that the whole nation perish not.

51 And this spake hee not of himselfe: but being high Priest that yeere: hee prophesied that Iesus should die for that nation;

52 And

C H A P. XII.

52 And not for that nation onely, but that also hee
should gather together in one, the children of God
that were scattered abroad.

53 Then from that day forth they tooke counsell
together for to put him to death.

54 Iesus therefore walked no more openly among
the Iewes, but went thence vnto a country neare to the
wildernes, into a city called Ephraim, and there conti-
nued with his disciples.

55 ¶ And the Iewes pascouer was nigh at hand, &
many went out of the countrey up to Hierusalem be-
fore the Pascouer to purifie themselves.

56 They sought they for Iesus, & spake among them-
selves, as they stood in the Temple, What thinke yee
that he will not come to the feaste?

57 Now both y^e cliefe Priest & the Pharisees had
ginnen a commandement, that if any man knew where
he were, he shold shew it, that they might take him.

C H A P. XIII.

1 Iesus excuseth Mary anointing his feet. 9 The people
flocke to see Lazarus.

T
hen Iesus fixe dayes before the Pascouer, came
to Bethany, where Lazarus was, which had bene
dead, whom he raised from the dead.

2 There they made him a supper and Martha ser-
ued: but Lazarus was one of them that sate at the ta-
ble with him.

3 Then tooke Mary a pound of oyntment of Spike-
nard very costly, and anointed the feet of Iesus, & wi-
ped his feet with her haire, and the house was filled w^t
the odour of the oyntment.

4 Then saith one of his disciples Iudas Iscariot, Si-
mons sonne, which should betray him,

5 Why was not this oyntment sold for three hun-
dred pence and given to the poore?

6 This he said, not that he cared for the poore but
because he was a thiefe, and had the bag, & bare what
was put therein.

7 Then said Iesus, Let her alone, against the day
of my burying hath she kept this.

8 For the poore alwayes haue with you: but me
ye haue not alwayes.

9 Much people of the Iewes therefore knew that
he was there: and they came not for Iesus sake onely,

S. I O H N.

but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead.

10 ¶ But the chiefe Priests consulted, that they might put Lazarus also to death.

11 Because that by reason of him many of the Jewes went away, and beleueed on Iesus.

12 ¶ On the next day, much people that were come to the Feast, when they heard that Iesus was comming to Hierusalem,

13 Tooke branches of palme trees, and went forth so meet him, and cryed, Hosanna. Blessed is the King of Israel, that commeth in the Name of the Lord.

14 And Iesus, when he had found a young asse, sat thereon, as it is written:

15 Fear not, daughter of Sion, behold, thy King commeth sitting on an asse's colt.

16 These things vnderstood not his Disciples at the first: but when Iesus was glorified, then remembred they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things vnto him.

17 The peoule therefore that was with him, when he called Lazarus out of his graue, and raised him from the dead, bare record.

18 For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceiue ye how ye preuaile nothing? Behold, the world is gone after him.

20 ¶ And there were certaine Greekes among them that came vp to worship at the Feast

21 The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we wouold see Iesus.

22 Philip commeth and telleth Andrew: and againe, Andrew and Philip told Iesus.

23 ¶ And Iesus answered them, saying, The hour is come that the Sonne of man should be glorified.

24 Verily, verily, I say vnto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.

25 Hee that loueth his life, shall lose it: and hee that hateth his life in this world, shall keepe it vnto life eternall.

26 If any man serues me, let him follow mee, and where

C H A P. XII.

where I am, there shall also my servant bee : If any man serue me, him will my Father honour.

27 Now is my soule troubled, and what shall I say? Father, take mee from this houre : but for this cause came I vnto this houre.

28 Father, glorifie thy Name. Then came there a voyce from heauen, saying, I haue both glorified it, and will glorifie it againe.

29 The people therefore that stood by, and heard it said, that it thundered : others said, An Angel spake to him.

30 Iesu answered, and said. This voyce came not because of me, but for your sakes.

31 Now is the iudgement of this world : now shall the prince of this world be cast ouer.

32 And I, if I bee lifted vp from the earth, will draw all men vnto me.

33 (This bee said, signifying what death he shoulde die.)

34 The people answered him, Wee haue heard out of the Law, that Christ abideth for euer : and how sayest thou, The Sonne of man must bee lift vp? Who is this Sonne of man?

35 Then Iesu said vnto them, Yet a little while is the light with you, walke while yee haue the light, lest darkenesse come vpon you : for hee that walketh in darkenesse, knoweth not whither he goeth.

36 While yee haue light, beleue in the light, that yee may bee the children of light. These things spake Iesu, and departed, and did hide himselfe from them.

37 ¶ But though hee had done so many miracles before them, yet they beleueued not on him :

38 That the saying of Elias the Prophet might be fulfilled, which hee spake, Lord, who hath beleueued our report ? and to whom hath the arme of the Lord beeene revealed ?

39 Therefore they could not beleue, because that Elias said againe,

40 Hee hath blinded their eyes, and hardned their heart, that they shoulde not see with their eyes, nor understand with their heart, and bee converted, and I shoulde heale them.

41 These things said Elias, when hee saw his glory, and spake of him.

S. I O H N.

42 ¶ Neuerthelesse, among the chiefe rulers also, many beleeveth on him, but because of the Pharisees they did not confesse him, lest they should be put out of the Synagogue.

43 For they loued the praise of men more then the praise of God.

44 ¶ Iesus cryed and said, Hee that beleeveth on me, beleeveth not on me, but on him that sent me.

45 And he that feeth me, feeth him that sent me.

46 I am come a light into the world, that whosoever beleeveth on me, should not abide in darkenesse.

47 And if any man heare my words, and beleeveth not, I judge him not : for I came not to judge the world, but to sauue the world.

48 Hee that reiecteth, and receiueth not my words, hath one that iudgeth him : the word that I haue spoken, the same shall iudge him in the last day.

49 For I haue not spoken of my selfe, but the Father which sent me, hee gaue mee a commandement, what I shoulde say, and what I shoulde speake.

50 And I know that his commandement is life everlasting : whatsoeuer I speake therefore, even as the Father said vnto me, so I speake.

I C H A P. X I I I.

¶ *Iesus washing the disciples feete, 14 exhorteth to humilitie and charitee.*

NO before the feast of the Pasceouer, when Iesus knew þ his houre was come, that hee should depart out of this world vnto the Father, hauing loued his owne which were in the world, hee loued them vnto the end.

2 And supper being ended (the devill having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simons sonne to betray him)

3 Iesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that hee was come from God, and went to God :

4 Hee riseth from supper, and layd aside his garments, and tooke a towell, and girded himselfe.

5 After that, he poureth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples feet, and to wipe them with the towell wherewith he was girded.

6 Then commeth he to Simon Peter : and Peter saith vnto him, Lord, doest thou wash my feet ?

7 Iesus

C H A P. XIII.

7 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, What I doe, thou knowest not now: but thou shalt know hereafter.

8 Peter saith vnto him, Thou shalt never wash my feete. Iesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou haft no part with mee.

9 Simon Peter saith vnto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head.

10 Iesus saith vnto him, He that is washed, needeth not saue to wash his feete, but is cleane euery whit: and yee are cleane, but not all.

11 For he knew who shold betray him, therefore said he, Ye are not all cleane.

12 So after he had washed their feete, and had taken his garments, and was set downe againe, he said vnto them, Know ye what I haue done to you?

13 Ye call me Master, and Lord, and yee say well: for so I am.

14 If I then, your Lord and Master, haue washed your feet, ye also ought to wash one anothers feet.

15 For I haue given you an example, that yee shold doe as I haue done to you.

16 Verily, verily I say vnto you, The servant is not greater then his lord, neither hee that is sent, greater then he that sent him.

17 If yee know these things, happy are yee if yee doe them.

18 ¶ I speake not of you all, I know whom I haue chosen: but that the Scripture may bee fulfilled, He that eateth bread with mee hath lift vp his heele against me.

19 Now I tell you before it come, that when it is come to passe, ye may beleeme that I am he.

20 Verily, verily I say vnto you, He that receiueth whomsoeuer I send, receiueth me: and he that receiueth me, receiueth him that sent me.

21 When Iesus had thus said, he was troubled in Spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily I say vnto you, That one of you shall betray me.

22 Then the Disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

23 Now there was leaning on Iesus bosome one of his Disciples, whom Iesus loued.

24 Simon Peter therefore beckened to him, that he

S. I O H N.

should aske who it shold be of whom he spake.

35 He then lyng on Iesus breast, saith vnto him, Lord, who is it?

36 Iesus answered, He it is to whom I shall gine a soppe, when I haue dipped it. And when hee had dipped the sop, hee gaue it to Judas Iscariot the sonne of Simon.

37 And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then laid Iesus vnto him, That thou doest, doe quickly.

38 Now no man at the Table knew, for what intent he spake this vnto him.

39 For some of them thought, because Judas had the bagge, that Iesus had said vnto him, Buy those things that we haue neede of against the Feast: or that he shold give something to the poore.

40 Hethen hauing receiuied the sop, went immediatly out; and it was night.

41 ¶ Therefore when hee was gone out, Iesus said, Now is the Sonne of man glorified: and God is glorified in him.

42 If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorifie him in himselfe, and shall straightway glorifie him.

43 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me, and as I said vnto the Iewes, whither I goe, ye cannot come: so now I say to you,

44 A new commandement I give vnto you, That ye loue one another, as I haue loued you, that ye also loue one another.

45 By this shall all men know that ye are my discipiles, if ye haue loue one to another.

46 ¶ Simon Peter said vnto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Iesus answered him, Whither I goe, thou canst not follow me now: but thou shalt follow me afterwards.

47 Peter said vnto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay downe my life for thy sake.

48 Iesus answered him, Wilt thou lay downe thy life for my sake? Verely, verely I say vnto thee, The cocke shall not crow till thou haft denied me thrice.

C H A P. X I I I I.

¶ Christ comforteth his discipiles, & profiteth him selfe the Way, Truth, Life, and one with the Father.

I Et not your heart be troubled: yee believe in God, becaus also in me.

CHAP. XIII.

3 In my Fathers house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would haue told you: I goe to prepare a place for you.

4 And if I goe and prepare a place for yow, I will come againe, and receive you unto my selfe, that where I am, there ye may be also.

5 And whither I go, ye know, and the way ye know

6 Thomas saith vnto him, Lord, wee know not whither thou goest: and how can we know the way?

7 Iesus saith vnto him, I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life: no man cometh vnto the Father, but by me.

8 Philip saith vnto him, Lord, shew vs the Father, and it sufficeth vs.

9 Iesus saith vnto him, Have I beeene so longe time with you, and yet haft thou not knowne me, Philip? He that hath seen mee, hath seen the Father, and how sayest thou then, Shew vs the Father?

10 Belieuest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The words that I speake vnto you, I speake not of my selfe: but the Father that dwelleth in me, he doeth the workes.

11 Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works sake.

12 Verely, verely I say vnto you, Hee that belieueth on me, the workes that I doe, shall he doe also, and greater workes then these shall he doe, because I goe vnto my Father.

13 And whatsoever yee shall aske in my Name, that will I doe, that the Father may be glorified in the Sonne.

14 If yee shall aske any thing in my Name, I will doe it.

15 ¶ If ye loue me, keepe my Commandements.

16 And I will pray the Father, & he shall give you another Comforter, y^e he may abide w^t you for euer.

17 Even the Spirit of truthe, whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but yee know hym, for he dwelleth w^t you, and shall be in you.

S. I O H N.

28 I will not leau you comfortlesse, I will come to you.

29 Yet a little while and the world seeth mee no more, but ye see me: because I liue, ye shall liue also.

30 At that day ye shall know, that I am in my Father, and you in me, and I in you.

31 He that hath my commandements, and keepeth them, he it is that loueth me: and he that loueth me, shall be loued of my Father, and I will loue him: and will manifest my selfe to him.

32 Indasfaith vnto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thy selfe vnto vs, and not vnto the world?

33 Iesus answered, and said vnto him, If a man loue mee, hee will keepe my words: and my Father will loue him, and wee will come vnto him, and make our abode with him.

34 Hee that loueth mee not, keepeth not my sayings, and the word which you heare, is not mine, but the Fathers which sent mee.

35 These things haue I spoken vnto you, being yet present with you.

36 But the Comforter, which is the holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my Name, hee shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said vnto you:

37 Peace I leau with you, my peace I giue vnto you, not as the world giueth, giue I vnto you: let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.

38 Yee haue heard how I said vnto you, I goe away, and come againe vnto you. If yee loued me, yee would reioyce, becaule I said, I goe vnto the Father: for my Father is greater then I.

39 And now I haue told you before it come to passe, that when it is come to passe, ye might beleene.

40 Hereafter I will not talke much with you: for the prince of this world commeth, and hath nothing in me.

41 But that the world may know that I loue the Father: and as the Father gaue mee commandement, euens so I doe, Arise, let vs goe hence.

C H A P. XV.

¶ The consolation and mutuall loue betweene Christ & his members, under the parable of the vine.

C H A P. X V

I Am the true Vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

3 Every branch in mee that beareth not fruite, he taketh away : and every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring foorth more fruit.

4 Now yee are cleane through the word which I have spoken vnto you.

5 Abide in mee, and I in you : as the branch can not beare fruite of it selfe, except it abide in the vine, no more can ye, except ye abide in me.

6 I am the Vine, ye are the branches : he that abideth in mee and I in him , the same bringeth foorth much fruit: for without me ye can doe nothing.

7 If a man abide not in mee, he is cast foorth as a branch, and is withered, and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.

8 Herein is my Father glorified , that yee beare much fruit, so shall ye be my disciples.

9 As the Father hath loued me , so haue I loued you: continue ye in my loue.

10 If yee keepe my commandements, yee shall abide in my loue , evn as I haue kept my Fathers Commandements, and abide in his loue.

11 These things haue I spoken vnto you , that my ioy might remaine in you , and that your ioy might be full.

12 This is my Commandement , that yeloue one another, as I haue loued you.

13 Greater loue hath no man then this, that a man lay downe his life for his friends.

14 Ye are my friends, if ye doe whatsoever I command you.

15 Henceforth I call you not seruants , for the seruant knoweth not what his lord doeth , but I haue called you friendes : for all things that I haue heard of my Father I haue made knowne vnto you.

16 Ye haue not chosen me, but I haue chosen you, and ordained you , that you should goe and bring foorth fruit, and that your fruit should remaine : that whatsoever yee shall aske of the Father in my Name he may give it you.

17 These things I command you, that ye loue one another,

S. I O H N.

18 If the world hate you, yee know that it hated me before it hated you.

19 If ye were of the world, the world wold loue his owne: But because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

20 Remember the word that I said vnto you. The seruant is not greater then the Lord: if they haue persecuted me, they will also persecute you, if they haue kept my sayng, they will keepe yours also.

21 But all these things will they doe vnto you for my Names sake, because they know not him that sent me.

22 If I had not come, and spoken vnto them, they had nee had sinne: but now haue they no cloake for their sinne.

23 He that hateth me, hateth my Father also.

24 If I had not done among them the works which no other man did, they had not had sin: but now haue they both seene, and hated both me and my Father. I

25 But this commeth to passe, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their Law, They hated me without a cause.

26 But when the Comforter is come, whom I wil send vnto youf. o the Father, even the Spirit of truthe, w^e procedeth from the Father, he shall testifie of me.

27 And ye also shall beare witnesse, because yee haue beeue with me from the beginning.

C H A P. XVI.

1 Christ comforteth his disciples against tribulation. 23
Prayers in Christ's Name acceptable to the Father.

T Hese things haue I spoken vnto you that yee should not be offended.

2 They shall put you out of the Synagogues, yea, the time commeth, that whosoever killeth you, will thinke that he doeth God service.

3 And these things will they doe vnto you, because they haue not knownen the Father, nor me.

4 But these things haue I told you, that when the time shall come, yee may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not vnto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

5 But now I goe my way to him that sent mee, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?

C H A P. XVI,

6 But because I haue said these things vnto you; sorrow hath filled your heart.

7 Neverthelesse, I tell you the truthe, it is expedient for you that I goe away: for if I goe not away, the Comforter will not come vnto you: but if I depart, I will sent him vnto you.

8 And when hee is come, hee will reprooue the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgement:

9 Of sinne, because they beleue not on me.

10 Of righteousness, because I goe to my Father, and ye see mee no more.

11 Of judgement, because the Prince of this world is judged.

12 I haue yet many things to say vnts you, but yee cannot bear them now:

13 Howbeit, when he the spirit of truthe is come, he will guide you into all truthe, for he shal not speake of himselfe: but whatsoever he shal heare, that shal he speake, and he will shew you things to come,

14 Hee shall glorie mee, for hee shall receive o f mine, and shal shew it vnto you.

15 All things that the Father hath, are mine therefore said I, that he shal take of mine, and shal shew it vnto you.

16 A little while and yee shal not see me: and againe a little while, and yee shall see mee: because I goe to the Father.

17 Then said some of his disciples among themselves, What is this that hee saith vnto vs. A little while, and yee shall not see me: & againe, a little while and yee shall see me: and, because I goe to the Father?

18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot telle what he saith.

19 Now Iesus knew that they were desirous to aske him, & said vnto them, Do ye enquire amōg your selues of that I said, A little while and yee shall not see me: and againe, A little while, & ye shall see me?

20 Verily, verely I say vnto you, That ye shall weepe & lament, but the world shall reioyce: And ye shalbe sorrowfull, but your sorrow shall be turned into ioy.

21 A woman when she is in trauaile, hath sorrow because her houre is come: but assoone as shee is deliuered of the child, she remembreth no more the anguish for joy that a man is boorne into the world.

22 And

S. I O H N.

22 And ye now therefore haue sorrow : but I will see you againe , and your heart shall reioyce , and your ioy no man taketh from you .

23 And in that day ye shall aske me nothing : Verely, verely I say vnto you , Whatsoeuer ye shall aske the Father in my Name, he will give it you .

24 Hitherto haue yee asked nothing in my Name : aske , and ye shall receive , that your ioy may be full .

25 These things haue I spoken vnto you in proverbs : the time commeth when I shall no more speake to you in proverbs , but I shall shew you plainly of the Father .

26 At that day ye shall aske in my Name : and I say not vnto you , that I will pray the Father for you .

27 For the Father himself loueth you , because ye haue loued me , and haue beleeuued that I came out from God .

28 I came soorth from the Father , and am come into the world : againe , I leaue the world , and goe to the Father .

29 His disciples said vnto him , Lo , now speakest thou plainly , and speakest no proverbe .

30 Now are we sure that thou knowest all thing and needest not that any man should aske thee : By this we beleue that thou camest soorth from God .

31 Iesus answered them , Doe ye now beleue ?

32 Behold , the houre commeth , yea is now come , that ye shall bee scattered , every man to his owne , and shall leaue me alone : and yet I am not alone , be cause the Father is with me .

33 These things haue I spoken vnto you , that in me ye might haue peace , in the world yee shall haue tribulation : but be of good cheere , I haue overcome the world .

C H A P. XVII.

1 Christ prayeth to his Father to gloriifie him . 6 To preserue his Apostles , 11 in unity , 17 and trueth .

T Hese words spake Iesus , and lift vp his eyes to heauen , & said , Father , the houre is come , gloriifie thy Son , that the Son also may gloriifie thee .

2 As thou haft giuen him power ouer all flesh , that he shoulde give eternall life to as many as thou haft giuen him .

3 And this is lifeteuall , that they might know

þeir

C H A P. XVII.

thee the onely true God, and Iesu Christ, whom thou haft sent.

4 I haue glorified thee on the earth, I haue finisched the worke which thou gauest me to doe.

5 And now, O Father, glorifie thou mee with thine owneselfe, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was,

6 I haue manifested thy Name vnto ſ men, which thou gaest me out of ſ world : thine they were, and thou gaest them me, and they haue kept thy word.

7 Now they haue knowen that all things what-bever thou haft given me, are of thee.

8 For I haue given vnto them the words which thou gaest mee, and they haue receiued them, and haue knownen surely, that I came out from thee, and they haue beleaved that thou didſt ſend me.

9 I pray for them, I pray not for the world : but for them which thou haft given me, for they are thine
10 And all mine are thine, and thine are mine : and I am glorified in them.

11 And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, kepe through thine owne Name, those whom thou haft given me, that they may be one as we are.

12 While I was with them in the v orld, I kepe them in thy Name : those that thou gaest mee, I haue kept, and none of them is lost, but the ſonne of perdition : that the Scripture might be fulfilled.

13 And now come I to thee, and theſe thingſ ſpeak in the world, that they might haue my ioy ſulfillid in themſelues.

14 I haue given them thy word, and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the v orld.

15 I pray not that thou ſhouleſt take them out of the world, but that thou ſhouleſt keepe them from the euill.

16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

17 Sanctifie them through thy trueth : thy word is trueth.

18 As thou haſt ſent mee into the world : even ſo haue I alſo ſent them into the world.

19 And for their ſakes, I sanctifie my ſelſe, that they

S. I O H N.

they also might be sanctified through the truth.

20 Neither pray I for these alone; but for them also which shall believe on me through their word:

21 That they all may be one, as thou Father art in mee, and I in thee, that they also may bee one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me.

22 And the glory which thou gauest me, I haue given them, that they may be one, even as we are one

23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent me and haft loued them, as y haft loued me.

24 Father, I will that they also whom thou haft given me, be with mee where I am that they may behold my glory which thou haft giuen mee: for thou louedst me before the foundation of the world.

25 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee, but I haue known thee, and these haue knowne that thou haft sent me.

26 And I haue declared vnto them thy Name, and will declare it: that the loue wherewith thou haft loued me may be in them, and I in them.

C H A P. X V I I .

3 *Iudas betrayeth Iesus. 6 The officers fall to the ground. 12 Iesus is taken and led unto Annas and Caiaphas.*

WHEN Iesus had spoken those words, hee went forth with his disciples over the brooke Cedron, where was a garden, into the which hee entered and his disciples.

2 And Iudas also w^t betrayed him, knew the place: for Iesus oft times resorted thither with his disciples.

3 Iudas then having received a band of men, and officers from the chiefe Priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns and torches and weapons.

4 Iesus therefore knowing all things that should come vpon him, went foorth, and said vnto them, Whom seeke ye?

5 They answered him, Iesus of Nazareth. Iesus saith vnto them, I am hee. And Iudas also which betrayed him, stood with them.

6 Alldone then as hee had said vnto them, I am hee, they went backward, and fell to the ground.

7 Then asked hee them againe, Whom seeke ye? And they said, Iesus of Nazareth.

C H A P. XVIII.

8 Iesus answered, I have told you that I am hee
therefore ye seeke me, let these goe their waye:

9 That the saying might be fulfilled sy hee spake,
Of them which thou gauest me, haue I lost none.

10 Then Simon Peter hauing a sword, drew it,
and smote the high Priests seruant, and cut off his
right eare : the seruantes name was Malchus.

11 Then said Iesus vnto Peter, Put vp thy sword
into the sheath : the cup which my Father hath giuen
me shal I not drinke it ?

12 Then the band and the captaine, and officers
of the Lewes tooke Iesus and bound him,

13 And led him away to Annas first (for he was
father in law to Caiphas) which was the high Priest
that same yere.

14 Now Caiphas was hee which gaue counsell
to the Lewes, that it was expedient that one man
should die for the people.

15 ¶ And Simon Peter followed Iesus, and so did
another Disciple : that Disciple was knownen vnto
the high Priest, and went in with Iesus into the pa-
lace of the high Priest.

16 But Peter stood at the doore without. Then
went out that other Disciple, which was knownen vnto
the high Priest, and spake vnto her that kept the
doore, and brought in Peter.

17 Then laid the Damefull that kept the doore,
vnto Peter, Art not thou also one of this mans Disci-
ples ? He saith, I am not.

18 And the seruants and officers stod there, who
had made a fire of coales (for it was cold) and they
warmed themselves : and Peter stood with them, and
warmed himselfe.

19 ¶ The high Priest then asked Iesus of his Dis-
ciples, and of his doctrine.

20 Iesus answered him, I speake openly to the
world, I ever taught in the Synagogue, and in the
Temple, whither the Lewes alwayes resort, and in se-
cret haue I said nothing.

21 Why askeft thou me ? Ask them which heard
me, what I haue said vnto them : behold, they know
what I said.

22 And when he had thus spoken, one of the offi-
cers which stod by, strooke Iesus with the palme of
his

S. I O H N.

his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high Priest so?
23 I-tus answered him, If I haue spoken euill, bear
witnessse of the euill: but if well, whys smitest thou
me?

24 Now Annas had sent him bound vnto Caiaphas the high Priest.

25 And Simon Peter stood and warmed himselfe:
They said therefore vnto him, Art not thou also one
of his disciples? He denied it, and said, I am not.

26 One of the seruants of the high Priest (being his
kinseman whose eare Peter cut off) saith, Did not I see
thee in the garden with him?

27 Peter then denied againe, and immediatly the
cocke crew.

28 ¶ Then led they Iesus from Caiaphas vnto the
hall of iudgement: and it was early, and they them-
selves went not into þ judgment hall, lest they should
be defiled: but þ they might eate þ Passeouer.

29 Pilate then went out vnto them, & said, What
accusation bring you against this man?

30 They answered and said vnto him, If he were
not a malefector, wee would not haue deliuered him
up vnto thee.

31 Then said Pilate vnto them, Take yee him, and
judge him according to your law. The Iewes therefore
said vnto him, It is not lawfull for vs to put any man
to death;

32 That the saying of Iesus might be fulfilled, wh.
spake signifying what death he should die.

33 Then Pilate entred into the judgment hall
again, and called Iesus, and said vnto him, art thou the
king of the Iewes?

34 Iesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of
thy selfe? or did others tell it thee of me?

35 Pilate answered, Am I a Iew? thine own nation,
and the chiefe Priests haue deliuered thee vnto mee:
What hast thou done?

36 Iesus answered, My kingdome is not of this world:
if my kingdome were of this world, then would my
seruants fight, that I shouldest not be deliuered to the
Iewes: but now is my kingdome not from hence.

37 Pilate therefore said vnto him, Art thou a king
then? Iesus answered, Thou sayest þ I am a king: To
this end was I borne, and for this cause came I into
the

{ for
bear
them

Cai-

selfe;
no one

ng his
I fee

ly the

to the
them-
should

What

were
d him

m, and
re before
y man

ed, w

alla-
you, the

ng of
ation,

mee:

world:
ld my
e the

king
: Te
I into
the

chev

cuer

38

he h

and l

39

vize

I tele

40

man

1 CH

2 CH

3 CH

4 CH

5 CH

6 CH

7 CH

8 CH

9 CH

10 CH

11 CH

12 CH

13 CH

14 CH

15 CH

16 CH

17 CH

18 CH

19 CH

20 CH

21 CH

22 CH

23 CH

24 CH

25 CH

26 CH

27 CH

28 CH

29 CH

30 CH

31 CH

32 CH

33 CH

34 CH

35 CH

36 CH

37 CH

38 CH

39 CH

40 CH

41 CH

42 CH

43 CH

44 CH

45 CH

46 CH

47 CH

48 CH

49 CH

50 CH

51 CH

52 CH

53 CH

54 CH

55 CH

56 CH

57 CH

58 CH

59 CH

60 CH

61 CH

62 CH

63 CH

64 CH

65 CH

66 CH

67 CH

68 CH

69 CH

70 CH

71 CH

72 CH

73 CH

74 CH

75 CH

76 CH

77 CH

78 CH

79 CH

80 CH

81 CH

82 CH

83 CH

84 CH

85 CH

86 CH

87 CH

88 CH

89 CH

90 CH

91 CH

92 CH

93 CH

94 CH

95 CH

96 CH

97 CH

98 CH

99 CH

100 CH

101 CH

102 CH

103 CH

104 CH

105 CH

106 CH

107 CH

108 CH

109 CH

110 CH

111 CH

112 CH

113 CH

114 CH

115 CH

116 CH

117 CH

118 CH

119 CH

120 CH

121 CH

122 CH

123 CH

124 CH

125 CH

126 CH

127 CH

128 CH

129 CH

130 CH

131 CH

132 CH

133 CH

134 CH

135 CH

136 CH

137 CH

138 CH

139 CH

140 CH

141 CH

142 CH

143 CH

144 CH

145 CH

146 CH

147 CH

148 CH

149 CH

150 CH

151 CH

152 CH

153 CH

154 CH

155 CH

156 CH

157 CH

158 CH

159 CH

160 CH

161 CH

162 CH

163 CH

164 CH

165 CH

166 CH

167 CH

168 CH

169 CH

170 CH

171 CH

172 CH

173 CH

174 CH

175 CH

176 CH

177 CH

178 CH

179 CH

180 CH

181 CH

182 CH

183 CH

184 CH

185 CH

186 CH

187 CH

188 CH

189 CH

190 CH

191 CH

192 CH

193 CH

194 CH

195 CH

196 CH

197 CH

198 CH

199 CH

200 CH

201 CH

202 CH

203 CH

204 CH

205 CH

206 CH

207 CH

208 CH

209 CH

210 CH

211 CH

212 CH

213 CH

214 CH

215 CH

216 CH

217 CH

218 CH

219 CH

220 CH

221 CH

222 CH

223 CH

224 CH

225 CH

226 CH

227 CH

228 CH

229 CH

230 CH

231 CH

232 CH

233 CH

234 CH

235 CH

236 CH

237 CH

238 CH

239 CH

240 CH

241 CH

242 CH

243 CH

244 CH

245 CH

246 CH

247 CH

248 CH

249 CH

250 CH

251 CH

252 CH

253 CH

254 CH

255 CH

256 CH

257 CH

258 CH

259 CH

260 CH

261 CH

262 CH

263 CH

264 CH

265 CH

266 CH

267 CH

268 CH

269 CH

270 CH

271 CH

272 CH

273 CH

274 CH

275 CH

276 CH

277 CH

278 CH

279 CH

280 CH

281 CH

282 CH

283 CH

284 CH

285 CH

286 CH

287 CH

288 CH

289 CH

290 CH

291 CH

292 CH

293 CH

294 CH

295 CH

296 CH

297 CH

298 CH

299 CH

300 CH

301 CH

302 CH

303 CH

304 CH

305 CH

C H A P. XIX.

the world, that I should beare witnes vnto the truthe: every one that is of the truthe heareth my voyce.

38 Pilate saith vnto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, hee went out againe vnto the Jewes, and saith vnto them, I finde in him no fault at all.

39 But yee haue a custome that I should release vnto you one at the Pasconer: will ye therefore that I release vnto you the King of the Jewes?

40 Then cryed they all againe, saying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

C H A P. XIX.

*Christ is scourg'd, crowned with thornes, and bea-
tis 16 Delivered to be crucified.*

T
hen Pilate therefore tooke Iesus, and scourged him.

2 And syndies platted a crowne of thornes and put it on his head, and they put on him a purple robe,

3 And said, Haile King of the Jewes: and they smote him with their hands.

4 Pilate therefore went foorth againe, and saith vnto them, Behold, I bring him foorth to you, that ye may know that I finde no fault in him.

5 Then came Iesus foorth, wearing the crowne of thornes, and the purple robe: and Pilate saith vnto them, Behold the man.

6 When the chiefe Priests, therefore and officers lay him, they cryed out, saying, Crucifie him, crucifie him. Pilate saith vnto them, Take ye him, and crucifie him: for I finde no fault in him.

7 The Jewes answered him, Wee haue a law, and by our law hee ought to die, because hee made himselfe the Sonne of God.

8 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, hee was the more afraid.

9 And went againe into the judgement hall, and saith vnto Iesus, Whence art thou? but Iesus gaue him no answere.

10 Then saith Pilate vnto him, Speakest thou not into mee? Knowest thou not, that I haue power to crucifie thee, and haue power to release thee?

11 Iesus answered, Thou couldest haue no power at all against mee, except it were given thee from above: therefore hee that deliuered mee vnto thee, hath the greater sinne.

S. I O H N.

12 And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him : but the Jewes cried out, saying, If thou let this man goe, thou art not Cesars friend : whosoever maketh himselfe a king, speaketh against Cesar.

13 ¶ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Iesus foorth, and sette downe in the iudgement seat, in a place that is called the pauement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the preparation of the Passover, and about the sixt houre : and hee saith vnto the Jewes, Behold your King.

15 But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucifie him. Pilate saith vnto them, Shall I crucifie your King ? The chiefe Priests answered, We haue no king but Cesar.

16 Then deliuered he him therefore vnto them to be crucified : and they tooke Iesus and led him away.

17 And hee bearing his crosse, went foorth into a place called the place of a skille, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha :

18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either side one, and Iesus in the midift.

19 ¶ And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the crosse. And the writing was, I E S V S O F N A Z A R E T H T H E K I N G O F T H E I E W E S .

20 This title then read many of the Jewes : for the place where Iesus was crucified, was nigh to the citie, and it was written in Hebrew, and Greeke, and Latine.

21 Then said the chiefe Priests of the Jewes to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jewes : but that he said, I am King of the Jewes.

22 Pilate answered, What I haue written I haue written.

23 ¶ Then the souldiers, when they had crucified Iesus, tooke his garments (and made somre parts, to every souldier a part) and also his coat : Now the coate was without stame, wounen from the toppe throughout.

24 They said therefore among themselves, Let us rent it, but cast lots for it whose it shall be, that the Scripture might bee fulfilled, which saith, They parred my gaignant among them, and for my vesture they did

C H A P. XIX.

did cast lots, These things therefore the soldiers did.

25 ¶ Now there stood by the croſſe of Ieſus, his mother, and his mothers ſister, Mary the wife of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.

26 When Ieſus therefore ſaw his mother, and the diſciple ſtanding by, whom hee loued, hee ſaith vnto his mother, Woman, behold thy ſonne.

27 Then ſaith hee to the diſciple, Behold thy mo-
ther. And from that houre that diſciple tooke her
into his owne home.

28 ¶ After this, Ieſus knowing that all things
were now accoſtomed, that the Scripture might be
fulfilled, ſaith, I thirſt.

29 Now therē was ſet a vefell full of vineger:
And they filled a hyunge with vineger, and put it vpon
myſtope, and put it to his mouth.

30 When Ieſus therefore had received the vine-
ger, hee ſaid, It is finished: and hee bowed his head,
and gaue vp the ghost.

31 The Jewes therefore, because it was the prepa-
ration, that the bodies ſhould not remaine vpon the
croſſe on the Sabbath day (for that Sabbath day was
a high day) beſought Pilate that their legs might be
broken, and that they might be taken away.

32 Then came the ſouldiers, and brake the legs of
the firſt and of the other, which was crucified wth him.

33 But when they came to Ieſus, and ſaw that hee
was dead alreadie, they brake not his legs.

34 But one of the ſouldiers with a ſpear piercēd
his ſide, and foorthwith came there out blood and
water.

35 And he that ſaw it, bare record, and his record
is true: and hee knoweth that hee ſaith true, that yee
might beleeue.

36 For these things were done, that the Scripture
ſhould be fulfilled, A bone of him ſhall not be broken

37 And againe another Scripture ſaith, They ſhall
looke on him whom they piercēd.

38 ¶ And after this, Iofeph of Arimathea (being
a diſciple of Ieſus, but ſecrētly for feare of the Jewes)
beſought Pilate that hee might take away the body
of Ieſus, and Pilate gaue him leave: hee came there-
fore, and tooke the body of Ieſus.

39 And there came alſo Nicodemus, which at the
ſixt

S. I O H N.

first came to Iesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrhe and aloes, about an hundred pound weight.

40 Then tooke they the body of Iesus, and wond it in linnen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Iewes is to bury:

41 Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a new sepulchre, where n was never man yet laid,

42 There laid they Iesus therefore, because of the Iewes preparation day, for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

C H A P. XX.

2 Mary commeth to the sepulchre. 3 So doth Peter and John. 11 Iesus appeareth to Mary Magdalene.

THe first day of the weeke, commeth Mary Magdalene early when it was yet darke, vnto the sepulchre, and seeth the stome taken away from the sepulchre.

3 Then shée runneth and commeth to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple whom Iesus loued, and saith vnto them, They haue taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and wee know not where they haue laid him.

3 Peter therefore went foorth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre.

4 So they ran both together, and the other disciple did ouer run Peter, and came first to the sepulchre.

5 And hee stouping downe and looking in, saw the linnen clothes lying, yet went he not in.

6 Then commeth Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linnen clothes lie

7 And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linnen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by it selfe.

8 Then went in also that other disciple which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and belieued.

9 For as yet they knew not the Scripture, that he must rise againe from the dead.

10 Then the Disciples went away againe vnto their owne home.

11 ¶ But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping, and as shée wept, shée stouped downe, and looked into the sepulchre,

12 And seeth two Angels in white, sitting the one

texture
weight.
and
inner of

there
ulchre,
of the
is high

Penn
dashed
y Mag.
into the
from the

on Pe.
d, and
ord out
y base

her dif-

r dif-
ulchre
n, few

im and
thes lic
ed, not
ogether

which
eened
that he

e unto

ulchre
ne, and

the one
at

at
di

the
an
lay

sel
tha

11
the
the
fun
will

16
and

17
no
thre
and

18
tha
thes

19
day o
the c
came
them

20
his h
when

21
yon:

22
them

23
ted w
they :

24
mus,

25
We k
cept I
and p

CHAP. XX.

at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Iesus had layen:

13 And they say vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith vnto them, Because they haue taken away my Lord, and I know not were they haue layed him.

14 And when shee had thus said, shee turned her selfe backe, and saw Iesus standing, and knew not that it was Iesus.

15 Iesus saith vnto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She supposing him to be the gardener, saith vnto him, Sir, if then haue borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away.

16 Iesus saith vnto her, Mary. She turned her selfe, and saith vnto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master.

17 Iesus saith vnto her, Touch mee not, for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but goe to my brethren, and say vnto them, I ascend vnto my Father and your Father, and to my God, and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seene the Lord, and that he had spoken these things vnto her.

19 ¶ Then the same day at euening, being the first day of the weeke, when the doores were shut, where the disciples were assembled for feare of the Iewes, came Iesus and stood in the midste, and saith vnto them, Peace be vnto you.

20 And when he had so said, he shewed vnto them his hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord.

21 Then said Iesus to them againe, Peace be vnto you: As my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

22 And when hee had said this, hee breathed on them, and saith vnto them, receive ye the holy Ghost.

23 Whose soever sinnes ye remit, they are remitted vnto them, and whose soever sinnes yee retaine, they are retained.

24 ¶ But Thomas, one of the twelue, called Didymus, was not with them when Iesus came.

25 The other disciples therefore said vnto him, We haue seene the Lord. But he said vnto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nailes, and put my fingers into the print of the nailes, and

S. I O H N.

thrust my hand into his side, I will not beleue.

26 ¶ And after eight dayes, againe his disciples were within, and Thomas with them : Then came Iesus, the doores being shut, and stood in the midde, and said, Peace be vnto you.

27 Then saith hee to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands, and reach hither thy hand, and thrust it into my side, and be not fayle, but beleueing.

28 And Thomas answered, and said vnto him, My Lord, and my God.

29 Iesus saith vnto him, Thomas, because thou hast scene me, thou hast beleueed : blessed are they that haue not seen, and yet haue beleueed.

30 ¶ And many other signes truely did Iesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this booke :

31 But these are written, that yee might beleue that Iesus is the Christ the Sonne of God, and that beleueing ye might haue life through his Name.

C H A P. X X I.

3 Christ appeareth to his disciples being a fising.
12 He dineth with them.

A fter these things Iesus shewed himselfe againe to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias, and on this wise shewed he himselfe;

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomis called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the sonnes of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples.

3 Simon Peter saith vnto them, I goe a fising. They say vnto him, Wee also goe with thee. They went foorth and entred into a ship immediatly, and that night they caught nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Iesus stood on the shote : but the disciples knew not that it was Iesus.

5 Then Iesus saith vnto them, Children, haue yee any meat? They answered him, No.

6 And hee said vnto them, Cast the net on the right side of the shope, and yee shall finde. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it, for the multitude of fishes.

7 Therefore that disciple whom Iesus loued,
saith

C H A P. X I.

With vnto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, hee girt his fishers coat vnto him (for he was naked) and did cast himselfe into the sea.

8 And the other disciples came into a little ship (for they were not farre from land, but as it were two hundred cubits) dragging the net with fishes.

9 Alsoone then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coales there, and fish laid theron, and bread.

10 Iesus saith vnto them, Bring of the fish, which ye haue now caught.

11 Simon Peter went vp, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fiftie aed three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

12 Iesus saith vnto them, Come, and dine. And none of the disciples durst aske him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord.

13 Iesus then commeth, and taketh bread, and giveth them, and fish likewise.

14 This is now the third time that Iesus shewed himselfe to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

15 ¶ So when they had dined, Iesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon sonne of Ionas, louest thou mee more then these? He saith vnto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. Hee saith vnto him feed my lambes.

16 He saith to him againe the secound time, Simon, sonne of Ionas, louest thou me? Hee saith vnto him, Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I loue thee. Hee saith vnto him, Feed my sheepe.

17 He saith vnto him the third time, Simon, sonne of Ionas, louest thou me? Peter was grieved, because he said vnto him the third time, Louest thou mee? And he said vnto him, Lord, thou knowest all things, thou knowest that I loue thee. Iesus saith vnto him, Feed my sheepe.

18 Verily, verily I say vnto thee, When thou wast yong, thou girdedst thy selfe, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be olde, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.

19 This spake hee, signifying by what death he

THE ACTES.

Should gloriſe God. And when he had ſpoken thiſ,
he ſaith vnto him, Follow me.

20 Then Peter turning about, ſeeth the Disciple
whom Ieſus loued, following, which alſo leaned on
his breſt at ſupper, and ſaid, Lord, which iſ hee that
betrayeth thee?

21 Peter ſeeing him, ſaith to Ieſus, Lord, and what
ſhall this man doe?

22 Ieſus ſaith vnto him, If I will that hee tari
till I come, what iſ that to thee? Follow thou me.

23 Then went thiſ ſaving abroad among the breſ
thren, that that Disciple ſhould not die: yet Ieſus
ſaid vnto him, He shall not die: but, if I will that
he tary till I come, what iſ that to thee?

24 Thiſ iſ the Disciple which teſtimonieh of thiſe
things, and wrote thiſe things, and we know that
hiſ teſtimony iſ true.

25 And there are alſo many other thiſgs which
Ieſus did, the which iſ they ſhould be written every
one, I ſuppoſe that even the world iſ ſelſe could ne
contayne the bookeſ that ſhould be written, Amen.

The Actes of the Aþofties.

C H A P. I.

1 A repetition of part of Christis history before and
after his paſſion. 9 Of hiſ aſcenſion.

The former Treatise hane I made, O
Theophilus, of all that Ieſus began
both to doe and teach,

2 Untill the day in which hee was
taken vp, after that hee through the
holy Ghost had giuen commandementes vnto the
Aþofties whom he had chosen.

3 To whom alſo hee shewed hiſelfe aliue after
hiſ paſſion, by many infallible prooſes, being ſene
of them ſortie dayes, and ſpeaking of the thiſgs per
taining to the kiŋdomē of God.

4 And being assembled together with them, com
manded them that they ſhould not depart from
Hierusalem, but wait for the promife of the Father,
which, ſaith he, ye hane heard of me.

5 For Iohn truely baptizeth with water, but yee
ſhall be baptizeth with the holy Ghost, not many
dayes hence.

6 When

C H A P. L

6 When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wil thou at this time restore againe the kingdome to Israel?

7 And he said vnto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his owne power.

8 But yee shall receiue power after that the holy Ghost is come vpon you, and yee shall be witnesse vnto me, both in Hierusalem, and in all Iudea, and in Samaria, & vnto the vther most parts of the earth.

9 And when hee had spoken these things, whiche they beheld, he was taken vp, and a cloud received him out of their sight.

10 And while they looked strifally toward heauen as he went vp, behold, two men stood by them in white apparell,

11 Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing vp into heauen? his same Iesas, which is taken vp from yon into heauen, shall so come in like manner, as ye haue seene him goe into heauen.

12 Then returned they vnto Hierusalem from the mount called Oliet, which is from Hierusalem a Sabbath dayes iourney.

13 And when they were come in, they went vp into an upper roome, where abode both Peter and James, and Iohn, and Andrew, Philip and Thomas, Bartholomew, and Matthew, Iames the sonne of Alpheus, and Simon Zelotes, and Iudas the brother of Iames.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Iesas, and with his brethren.

15 ¶ And in those dayes Peter stood vp in the midde of the disciples, and said, (The number of names together were about an hundred and twentie.)

16 Men and brethren, This Scripture must needs haue beeene fulfilled, which the holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Iudas, which was guide to them that tooke Iesas.

17 For he was numbred with vs, and had obtained part of this ministery.

18 Now this man purchased a field with the reward of iniquity, and falling hev'long, hee burst asunder in the mids, and all his bowels gullid out.

THE ACTES.

19 And it was knowen vnto all the dwellers of Ierusalem, in somuch as þy field is called in their propre tongue, Aceldama, that is to say, The field of blood,

20 For it is written in the booke of Psalmes, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: and his Bishopricke let another take,

21 Wherefore of these men which haue compained with vs all the time that the Lord Iesus was in, and out among vs,

22 Beginning from the Baptisme of Iohn, vnto the same day that he was taken vp from vs, must one be ordained to be a witnes with vs of his resurrection.

23 And they appointed two, Ioseph called Barabbas, who was surnamed lustus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed and said, Thou Lord which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two thou haft chosen,

25 That hee may take part of this ministerie and Apostleship, from which Iudas by transgression fell, that he might goe to his owne place.

26 And they gwe forth their lots, and the lot fell vpon Matthias, and he was numbered with the eleuen Apostles.

CHAP. II.

1 The Apostles filled with the holy Ghost, spake divers languages.

A No when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a sound from heaven, as of a rithing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.

3 And there appearede vnto them clouen tongues, like as of fire, and it satte vpon each of them.

4 And they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and began to speake with other tonges, as the Spirit gaue them utterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Hierusalem Iewes, deuent men, out of euery nation vnder heauen.

6 Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, & were confounded, because that euery man heard them speake in his own language.

7 And they were all amazed, and maruiled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speake Galileans?

8 And

C H A P. II.

8 And how heare wee every man in our owne tongue, wherein we were borne?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in India, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia,

10 Phrygia and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya, about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Iewes and Proselytes,

11 Cretes, and Arabians, wee doe heare them speake in our tongues the wonderfull works of God.

12 And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this?

13 Others mocking, said, These men are full of new wine.

14 ¶ But Peter standing vp with the eleuen, lift vp his voyce, and said vnto them, Ye men of Iudea, and all ye that dwell at Hierusalem, be this knowne vnto you, and hearken to my words:

15 For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third houre of the day.

16 But this is that which was spoken by the Prophet Ieiel.

17 And it shall come to passe in the last dayes (saith God) I will powre out of my Spirit vpon all flesh: and your sonnes and your daughters shall prophesie, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dreame dreams:

18 And on my seruants, and on my handmaidens, I will powre out in those dayes of my Spirit, and they shall prophesie:

19 And I will shew wonders in heauen aboue, and signes in the earth beneath: blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke.

20 The Sunne shall be turned into darkenesse, and the Moone into blood, before that great and notable day of the Lord come.

21 And it shall come to passe, that who soever shall call on the Name of the Lord, shall be saved.

22 Yee men of Israel, heare these words, Iesus of Nazareth, a man approoved of God among you, by miracles, wonders, and signes, which God did by him in the midle of you, as ye your selues also know:

23 Him, being deliuerned by the determinate counsell and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken

THE ACTES.

and by wicked hands haue crucified and slainē:

24 Whom God hath raised vp, having loosed the
paines of death, because it was not possible that he
should be holden of it.

25 For Dauid speakeſ concerning him, I ſetſeſ the Lord alwayes before my face, for he is on my
right hand, that I ſhould not be moued.

26 Therefore did my heart reioyce, and my tongue
was glad: Moreouer alio, my flesh ſhall reſt in hope,

27 Because ȳ wile not leaue my ſoule in hell, neſ-
ther wile thou ſuffer thine holy One to ſee corruption.

28 Thou haſt made knowne to me ȳ waies of life,
thou ſhalt make me full of ioy with thy countenance

29 Men and brethren, let mee freely ſpeake vnto
you of the Patriarch Dauid, that he is both dead and
buried, and his ſepulchre is with vs vnto this day:

30 Therefore being a Prophet, and knowing that
God had ſworne with an oath to him, that of the
fruit of his loynes, according to the fleſh, he would
raife vp Christ to ſit vpon his throne:

31 He ſeeing this before, ſpake of the reſurrection
of Christ, that his ſoule was not left in hell, neſ-
ther his fleſh did ſee corruption.

32 This Iefus hath God raife vp, whereof we all
are witneſſe.

33 Therefore being by the right hand of God ex-
alted, and hauing received of the Father the pomyſe
of the holy Ghost, he hath ſhed foorth this which ye
now ſee and heare.

34 For Dauid is not ascended into the heauen, but he ſaith himſelfe, The Lord ſaid vnto my Lord,
Sit thou on my right hand.

35 Vntill I make thy foes thy footſtoole.

36 Therefore let all the house of Israel know al-
ſuredly, that God hath made the ſame Iefus, whom
ye haue crucified, both Lord and Christ.

37 ¶ Now when they heard this, they were pic-
ked in their heart, and ſaid vnto Peter, and to the
reſt of the Apoſtles, Men and brethren, What ſhall
we doe?

38 Then Peter ſaid vnto them, Repent, and bee
baptized every one of you in the Name of Iefus
Christ, for the remiſſion of ſinnes, and yee shall re-
ceiue the gift of the holy Ghost.

C H A P. I I.

39 For the promise is vnto you, and to your children, and to all that are afarre off, euen as many as the Lord our God shall call.

40 And with many other words did he testifie and exhort, saying, Save your selues from this vntoward generation.

41 Then they that gladly received his word were baptized . and the same day there were added unto them about three thousand soules.

42 And they continued stedfastly in the Apostles doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

43 And feare came vpon every soule : and many wonders and signes were done by the Apostles.

44 And all that beleue were together , and had all things common,

45 And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need.

46 And they continuing daily in one accord in the Temple, & breaking bread from house to house, did, eat their meat with gladnes and singlenesse of heart

47 Praising God, and having fauour with all the people. And the Lord added to the Church daily such as should be sauued.

C H A P. I I I.

1 Peter with John restore a lame man to his feet. 10 how the cure was wrought.

N ow Peter & John went vp together into the temple at the houre of prayer, before the ninth houre.

2 And a certaine man lame from his mothers wombe was caried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the Temple which is called Beaultifull , to aske almes of them that entred into the Temple,

3 Who seeing Peter and John about to goe into the Temple, asked as almes.

4 And Peter fastening his eyes vpon him , with John, said, Looke on vs.

5 And hee gaue heed vnto them , expecting to receive something of them.

6 Then Peter said, Siluer and gold have I none, but such as I haue giue I thee : In the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth, Rise vp and walke.

7 And hee tooke him by the right hand, and lift him vp : and immediatly his feet and ankle bones received strength, L 5 8 And

THE ACTES.

8 And he leaping vp, stood and walked, and entered with them into the Temple, walking and leaping, and praising God.

9 And all the people saw him walking, and praising God.

10 And they knew that it was he which falle for almes at the beautifull gate of the Temple: and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened vnto him.

11 And as the lame man which was healed, held Peter and Iohn, all the people ran together vnto them, in the porch, that is called Salomons, greatly wondering.

12 ¶ And when Peter saw it, he answered vnto þe people, Ye men of Israel, why marvel ye at this? or why looke ye so earnestly on vs, as though by our owne power or holines we had madethis man to walke?

13 The God of Abraham, & of Isaac, and of Iacob, the God of our fathers hath glorified his Son Iesus whom he deliuered vp, & denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let him goe.

14 But ye denied the holy One, and the Just, and desired a murtherer to be granted vnto you.

15 And killed the Prince of life, whom God hath raised from the dead, whereof we are witnesses:

16 And his Name through faith in his Name hath made this man strong, whom ye see and know: yea, the faith which is by him, hath giuen him this perfect soundesse in the presence of you all.

17 And now brethren, I wote that through ignorance ye did it, as did also your rulers.

18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his Prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.

19 ¶ Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord.

20 And he shall send Iesus Christ, which before was preached vnto you:

21 Whom the heauen must receive, vntill the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy Prophets since the world began.

22 For Moses truly laid vnto the Fathers, A Prophet

C H A P. IIII.

Prophet shall the Lord your God raise vp vnto you
of your brethre alike vnto me; him shall ye heare in
all things whatsoeuer he shall say vnto you.

23 And it shall come to passe, that euery soule
which will not heare that Prophet, shalbe destroyed
from among the people.

24 Yea, and all the Prophets from Samuel and
those that follow after, as many as haue spoken haue
likewise foretold of these dayes.

25 Ye are the children of the Prophets, and of the
Covenant which God made with our fathers, saying
vnto Abraham, And in thy seed shall all the kinredes
of the earth be blessed.

26 Vnto you first, God haing raised vp his Son
Iesus, sent him to blesse you, in turning away euery
one of you from his iniquities.

C H A P. IIII.

1 *The rulers offended with Peter's sermon, 3 im-
prison him and Iohannes: 5 They examine them.*

A nd as they spake vnto the people, the Priests
and the Captaine of the Temple, and the Sad-
duces came vpon them.

2 Being grieved that they taught the people, and
preached through Iesus' resurrection from y dead.

3 And they layd hands on them, and put them in
hold vnto the next day, for it was now euentide.

4 Howbeit, many of them which heard the
word, beleueed: & the number of the men was about
fve thousand.

5 ¶ And it came to passe on the morrow, that
their Rulers, and Elders, and Scribes,

6 And Annas the hie Priest, & Caiaphas, & Iohn,
and Alexander, and as many as were of the kinted of
of the hie Priest, were gathered together at Ierusalem.

7 And when they had set them in the midst they
asked, by what power, or by what Name haue yee
done this?

8 Then Peter filled with the holy Ghost, said vnto
them, Ye Rulers of the people, and Elders of Israel.

9 If wee this day be examined of the good deed
done to the impotent man, by what meanes he is
made whole:

10 Be it knowne vnto you all, & to all the people
of Israel, y by the Name of Iesus Christ of Nazareth,

Whiche

THE ACTES

whō ye crucified, whō God raised from ſe dead, even by him doth this man ſtand here before you, whēle,

11 This is the ſtone which was ſet at noȝt of yon builders, which is become ſe head of the corner.

12 Neither is there ſaluation in any other : for there is none other name vnder heauen giuen among men, whereby we muſt be ſaved.

13 ¶ Now when they ſaw the boldneſſe of Peter and Iohn, and perceiued that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marueiled, and they tooke knowledge of them that they had been with Iesuſ.

14 And beholding the man which was healed, ſtanding with theſe they could ſay nothing againſt it.

15 But when they had comanded theſe to goe aside out of ſe Cōuercell, they conſerfed among themſelues,

16 Saying, What ſhall we doe to theſe men ? for that indeed a notable miracle hath beepe done by them, is manifest to all them that dwell in Hierusalem, and we cannot deny it.

17 But that it ſpread no further among the people, let vs ſtraiſtly threaten them, that they ſpeak henceforth to no man in his Name.

18 And they caſted them, and comanded them not to ſpeak at all, nor teach in the Name of Iesuſ.

19 But Peter and Iohn auſwered, and ſaid vnto them, Whether it bee right in the ſight of God, to bearken vnto you, more then vnto God, judge ye.

20 For we canoſt but ſpeak the things which we haue ſene and heard.

21 So when they had further threatned them, they leſt them goe, finding nothing how they miſt puñiſh them because of the people : for all men glorified God for that which was done.

22 For the man was aboue fourtie yeaſes olde, on whom this mirſcle of healing was thewed.

23 ¶ And being leſt goe, they went to their own company, and reported all that the chieſe Priests, & Elders had ſaid vnto them.

24 And when they heard that, they liſt vp their voyce to God with one accord, and ſaid, Lord, thou art God which haſt made heauen and earth, and the ſea, and all that in them is,

25 Who by the mouth of thy ſeruant Dauid haſt ſaid, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vainē things?

26 The

C H A P. V.

26 The Kings of the earth stood vp, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord , and against his Christ.

27 For of a trueth against thy holy childe Iesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Geptiles , and the people of Israel were gathered together.

28 For to doe whatsoever thy hand and thy counsell determined before to-be done.

29 An now Lord, behold their threatnings, and grant vnto thy seruants, that with all boldnesse they may speake thy words

30 By stretching forth thine hand to heale : and that signes and wonders may be done by the Name of thy holy childe Iesus.

31 ¶ And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together , and they were all filled with the holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldnesse.

32 And the multitude of them that beleueued, were of one heart, and of one soule: Neither said any of them that ought of the things which he possessed, was his owne, but they had all things common.

33 And with great power gave the Apostles witnessesse of the resurrection of the Lord Iesus, and great grace was vpon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked : for as many as were possessours of lands, or houses solde them , and brought the prices of the things that were sold,

35 And laid them downe at the Apostles feete : and distribution was made to every man according as he had need.

36 And Ioses, who by the Apostles was surnamed Barnabas (which is being interpreted, The sonne of consolation) a Leuite, & of the countrey of Cyprus,

37 Having land, sold it, and brought the money, and laid it at the Apostles feete.

C H A P. V.

I. 10. *Ananias and Sapphira fall downe dead. 13. The Apostles worke many miracles.*

B Vt a certayne man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession.

2 And kept backe part of the price, his wife also being

THE ACTES.

being priuate so is, and brought a certaine pax, and laid it at the Apostles feet.

3 But Peter said, Ananias, Why hath Satan filled thine heart to lye to the holy Ghost, and to keepe backe pax of the price of the land?

4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine owne? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power? why hast thou conceiuied this thing in thy heart? thou hast not lyed vnto men, but vnto God.

5 And Ananias hearing these words, fell downe, and gaue vp the ghost: and great feare came on all them that heard these things.

6 And the young men arose, wound him vp, and carried him out and buried him.

7 And it was about space of three houres after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

8 And Peter answered vnto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much? And she said, Yea, for so much.

9 Then Peter said vnto her, How is it that ye haue agreed together, to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which haue buried thy husband, are at the doore, & shall carry thee out.

10 Then fell she downe straightway at his feete, and yeelded vp the ghost: and the young men came in, and found her dead, and carrying her forth, buried her by her husband.

11 And great feare came vpon all the Church, and vpon as many as heard these things.

12 ¶ And by the hands of the Apostles were many signes & wonders wrought among the people. (And they were all with one accord in Solomons porch.

13 And of the rest durst no man ioyne himselfe to them: But the people magnified them.

14 And beleeuers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women.)

15 Inasmuch that they brought foorth the sicke into the streets, and layd them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by, might overshadow some of them.

16 There came also a multitude out of the cities round about vnto Hierusalem, bringing sicke folkes, and them which were vexed with uncleane spirits, and they were healed every one.

17 ¶ Then

C H A P. V.

17 ¶ Then the high Priest rose vp, and all they that were with him, (which is the sect of the Sadduces) and were filled with indignation,

18 And laid their hands on the Apostles, and put them in the common prison.

19 But the Angel of the Lord by night opened the prison doores, and brought them foorth, and said,

20 Go, stand and speake in the Temple to the people all the words of this life.

21 And when they heard that, they entred into the Temple early in the morning, and taught: but the high Priest came, and they that were with him, and called the Councill together, and all the Senate of the children of Israel, and sent to the prison to have them brought.

22 But when the Officers came, and found them not in the prison, they returned and told,

23 Saying, The prison truly found we shut with all safety, and the Keepers standing without before the doores, but when we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Now when the hie Priest, and the Captaine of the Temple, & the chiese Priests heard these things, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow.

25 Then came one and told them, saying, Behold, the men whom ye put in prison, are standing in the Temple, and teaching the people.

26 Then went the captaine with the officers, and brought them without violence: (for they feared the people, lest they should haue beeene stoned.)

27 And when they had brought the, they set them before the Councill, & the high Priest asked them,

28 Saying, Did not we straitly command you, that you shoulde not teach in this Name? And behold, you haue filled Ierusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this mans blood vpon vs.

29 ¶ Then Peter, and the other Apostles answered, and said, We ought to obey God, rather then men.

30 The God of our fathers raised vp Iesus, whom ye haue slue and hanged on a tree.

31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to gise repentance to Israel, and forgivenesse of sins.

32 And we are his witnesses of these things, and

THE ACTES.

and so is also the holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey him.

33 ¶ When they heard that, they were cut to the heart, and tooke counsell to slay them.

34 Then stood there vp one in the Councill, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a Doctor of Law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the Apostles foorth a little space,

35 And said vnto them, Yee men of Israel, take heed to your selues, what yee intend to doe as touching these men.

36 For before these dayes rose vp Thendas, boasting himselfe to be some body, to whom a number of men, about foure hundred, ioyned themselves: who was slaine, and all as many as obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought.

37 After this man rose vp Iudas of Galilee, in the dayes of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: hee also perished, and all, euen as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.

38 And now I say vnto you, restraine from these men, and let them alone: for if this counsell or this worke be of men, it will come to nought.

39 But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it, lest haply ye be found enen to fight against God.

40 And so him they agreed: and when they had called the Apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they shold not speake in the Name of Iesus, and let them goe.

41 ¶ And they departed from the presence of the Councill, rejoycing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for his Name.

42 And daily in the Temple, and in every house, they ceased not to teach and preach Iesus Christ.

C H A P. VI.

¶ The Apostles care for the poore, and of preaching the word. ¶ Seven men chosen for Deacons.

And in those dayes when ¶ number of the disciples was multiplyed, there arose a murmuring of the Grecians against the Hebrewes, because there widowes were neglected in the daily ministracion.

2 Then the twelue called the multitude of the disciples vnto them, and said, It is not reason that we shold leane the word of God, and serue tables.

¶ Whereso-

C H A P. VII.

3 Wherefore brethren, looke ye out among you
seuen men of honest report, full of the holy Ghost &
wisdome, whom we may appoint ouer this busines.

4 But wee will gine our selues continually to
prayer, and to the ministry of the word;

5 ¶ And the saying pleased the whole multitude
and they chose Steven, a man full of faith and of the
holy Ghost, and Philip, and Prchorus, and Nica-
nor, and Timon, and Permenas, and Nicolas a pro-
felyte of Antioch :

6 Whom they set before the Apostles: and when
they had prayed they layd their hands on them.

7 And the word of God increased, and the num-
ber of the disciples multiplyed in Hierusalem great-
ly, and a great company of the Priests were obedi-
ent to the faith.

8 And Steven full of faith and power, did great
wonders and miracles among the people.

9 ¶ Then there arose certaine of the Synagogue,
which is called *the Synagogue* of the Libertines, and
Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia,
and of Asia, disputing with Steven.

10 And they were not able to resist the wisedome
and the spirit by which he spake.

11 Then they suborned men which said, We have
heard him speake blasphemous words against Moses,
and against God.

12 And they stirred vp the people, and the El-
ders, and the Scribes, and came vpon him, and caught
him, and brought him to the Councells.

13 And set vp false witnesses, which said, This
man ceaseth not to speak blasphemous words against
this holy place, and the Law.

14 For we have heard him say, that this Iesu of
Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change
the customes which Moses delinered vs.

15 And all that late in the Councell, looking sted-
fastly on him, saw his face as it had bene the face of
an Angel.

C H A P. VII.

3 Steven answereth to his accusation. 51 Her prehen-
deth the peoples rebellion and murdering of Christ.

T Hen said the high Priest, Are these things so?

2 And hee said, Men, brethren, and fathers,
hearken:

THE ACTES,

hearken! The God of glory appeared vnto our father Abraham, when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charras,

3 And said vnto him, Get thee out of thy countrey, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee.

4 Then came he out of the land of the Caldeans, and dwelt in Charras: and from thence, when his father was dead, hee remooneed him into this land wherein ye now dwell.

5 And he gane him none inheritance in it, so ne
so much as to set his foot upon: yet he promised that he would give it to him for a possession, and to his seed after him, when as yet he had no child.

6 And God spake on this wise, that his seede should sojourne in a strange land, & that they should bring them into bondage, and intreat them euill four hundred yecres.

7 And the nation to whom they shall be in bondage, will I judge, said God: and after that that they come foorth, and serue me in this place.

8 And he gane him the Covenant of Circumcisio
on: and so Abraham begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day: and Isaac begat Iacob, and Iacob begat the twelue Patriarchs.

9 And the Patriarchs mooued with envy, sold Ioseph into Egypt: but God was with him,

10 And deliuered him out of all his afflictions, and gave him favour and wisedome in the sight of Pharao King of Egypt: and he made him gouernour ouer Egypt and all his house.

11 Now there came a dearth ouer all the land of Egypt, and Chanaan, and great affliction, and our fathers found no sustenance.

12 But when Iacob heard that there was corne in Egypt, he sent out our fathers first:

13 And at the second time Ioseph was made knowne to his brethren, and Iosephs kindred was made knowne vnto Pharaoh.

14 Then sent Ioseph, and called his father Iacob to him, and all his kindred, threescore and fifteen soules.

15 So Iacob went downe into Egypt, and died, he and our fathers,

16 And

C H A P. VII.

*16 And were carried ouer into Sichem, and laid in the sepulchre that Abraham bought for a summe of money of the sounes of Emor *the father* of Sichem.

17 But when the tyme of the promise drew nigh, which God had sworne to Abraham, the people grew and multiplyed in Egypt.

18 Till another king arose, which knew not Ioseph.
19 The same dealt subtilly with our kinred, and entreated our fathers, so that they cast out their yong children, to the end they might not live.

20 In which time Moses was borne, and was exceeding faire, and nourished vp in his fathers house three moneths:

21 And when he was cast out, Pharaohs daughter took him vp, and nourished him for her owne son.
22 And Moses was learned in all the wisdome of the Egyptians, and was mighty in words and in deeds.
23 And when he was ful forty yeres old, it came into his heart to visit his brethren, y^e children of Israel.

24 And seeing one of them suffer wrong, hee defended him, and auenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian:

25 For hee supposed his brethren would have vnderstood how that God by his hand would deliner them, but they vnderstood not.

26 And the next day hee shewed himselfe vnto them as they strome, and would haue set them at one againe, saying, Sirs, yee are brethren, Why doe yee wrong one to another?

27 But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a Judge ouer vs?

28 Wilt thou kill me, as thou didst the Egyptian yesterday?

29 Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where hee begat two sonnes.

30 And when fortie yeeres were expired, there appeared to him in the wildernes of mount Sina, an Angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.

31 When Moses saw it, hee waudred at the sight: and as he drew nere to behold it, the voice of the Lord came vnto him,

32 Saying, I am the God of thy fathers, the God
of

THE ACTES.

of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. Then Moses trembled, and durst not beholde.

33 Then said the Lord to him, Put off thy shooe from thy feet: for the place where thou standest, is holy ground.

34 I haue scene, I haue scene the affliction of my people, which is in Egypt, and I haue heard their groaning, and am come downe to deliuer them: and now come, I will send thee into Egypt.

35 This Moses whom they refused, saying, Who made thee a ruler and a judge? the same did God send to be a ruler and a deliuerer by the hands of the Angel which appeared to him in the bush.

36 He brought them out, after that he had shewed wonders and signes in the land of Egypt, and in the red Sea, and in the wildernes fourtie yeeres.

37 ¶ This is that Moses which said vnto the children of Israel, A Prophet shall the Lord your God raise vp vnto you of your brethren, like unto me: him shall ye heare.

38 This is hee that was in the Church in the wildernes with the Angel, which spake to him in the mount Sinai, and with our fathers: who received the lively oracles to giue vnto vs.

39 To whō our fathers would not obey, but thrust him from them, and in their hearts turned backe againe into Egypt,

40 Saying vnto Aaron, Make vs gods to goe before vs: For as for this Moses, which brought vs out of the land of Egypt, wee wote not what is become of him.

41 And they made a calfe in those dayes, and offered sacrifice vnto the idle, and rejoiced in the workes of their owne hands.

42 Then God turned, and gaue them vp to worship the host of heaven, as it is written in the booke of the Prophets, O ye house of Israel, haue yee offered to me slaine beasts and sacrifices, by the space of fortie yeeres in the wildernes?

43 Yea, yee tooke vp the tabernacle of Moloch, and the starre of your god Renaphan, figures which yee made to worship them: and I will carry you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the Tabernacle of witness in the

C H A P. VII.

the wildernes, as he had appointed, speaking vnto Moses, that hee shoulde make it according to the fashion that he had seene.

45 Which also our fathers that came after, brought in with Iesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drave out before the face of our fathers, into the dayes of David,

46 Who found labour before God, and desired to find a Tabernacle for the God of Iacob

47 But Solomon built him an house.

48 Howbeit the most high dwelleth not in temples made with hands, as saith the Prophet,

49 Heauen is my throne, and earth is my footstole: what house will yee build mee, saith the Lord? Or what is the place of my rest?

50 Hath not my hand made all these things?

51 ¶ Ye stiffe-necked and vncitenned in heart and eares, ye doe alwayes resist the holy Ghost: as your fathers did, so doe ye.

52 Which of the Prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they hane slaine them which thewed before of the comming of the Iult one, of whom yee have beene now the betrayours and murtherers:

53 Who hane received the Law by the dispensation of Angels, and hane not kept it.

54 ¶ When they heard these things, they were ent wte heart, & they gnashed wth him wth their teeth.

55 But he being full of the holy Ghost, looked vp steadfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Iesus standing on the right hand of God,

56 And said, Behold, I see the heauens opened and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God.

57 Then they eryed out with a loude voyce, and stopped their eares, & ran vpon him wth one accord,

58 And cast him out of the city, and stoned him: and the witches laid downe their clothes at a yong mans feet, whose name was Saul.

59 And they stoned Stenen calling tpon God, and saying, Lord Iesus receiuie my spirit.

60 And he kneeled downe, and cryed wth a loude wyce, Lord lay not this finne to their charge. And when he had said this, he fell asleepe.

C H A P. VIII.

3. The Church is planted in Samaria.

And

THE ACTES.

AND Saul was consenting vnto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the Church which was at Ierusalem, and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea, and Samaria, except the Apostles.

2 And devout men carried Steuen to his buriall, and made great lamentation ouer him.

3 As for Saul, hee made hanocke of the Church, entring into euery house, and haling men and women, committed them to prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went every where preaching the word.

5 Then Philip went downe to the citie of Samaria, and preached Christ vnto them.

6 And the people with one accord gane heed vnto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

7 For vncleane spirits, crying with lond voice, came out of many that were possessed with them, and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed.

8 And there was great joy in that citie.

9 But there was a certaine man called Simon, which before time in the same citie vsed sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, gining out that himselfe was some great one.

10 To whom they all gaue heede from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God.

11 And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But when they beleued Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdome of God, and the Name of Iesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

13 Then Simon himselfe beleued also; and when he was baptized, he coniuncted with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signes which were done.

14 Now when the Apostles which were at Ierusalem, heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn,

15 Who when they were come downe, prayed for them that they might receive the holy Ghost.

C H A P. VIII.

16 (For as yet he was fallen vpon none of them: v
sely they were baptizid in the Name of the Lord
Iesus.)

17 Then laid they their hands on them, and they
received the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon saw that through laying on
of the Apostles hands, the holy Ghost was given, he
offered them money,

19 Saying giue me also this power, that on whom-
soever I lay hands, he may receive the holy Ghost.

20 But Peter said vnto him, Thy money perish
with thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of
God may be purchased with money.

21 Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter:
for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse, and
pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may
beforgiven thee.

23 For I perceiue that thou art in the gall of bit-
ternesse, and in the bond of iniquity.

24 Then answered Simon, and said, Pray yee to
the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye
have spoken, come vpon me.

25 And they, when they had testified and pre-
ached the word of the Lord, returned to Hierusalem,
and preached the Gospel in many villages of the Sa-
maritans.

26 And the Angel of the Lord spake vnto Philip,
saying, Arise, and goe toward the South, vnto the way
that goeth downe from Hierusalem vnto Gaza,
which is desert.

27 And he arose, and went: and behold, a man of
Ethiopia, an Eunuch of great authority vnder Can-
dice Queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge
of all her treasure, and had come to Hierusalem for
to worship,

28 Was returning, and sitting in his chariot, read
Elias the prophet.

29 Then the Spirit said vnto Philip, Go neere, and
ayne thy selfe to this charet.

30 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him
read the Prophet Elias, and said, Understandest
thou what thou readest?

31 And hee said, How can I, except some man
should

THE ACTES.

And Saul was consenting vnto his death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the Church which was at Ierusalem, and they were all scattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea, and Samaria, except the Apostles.

3 And devout men carried Steuen to his buriall, and made great lamentation ouer him.

3 As for Saul, hee made haucke of the Churche, entring into euery house, and haling men and women, committed them to prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad, went euery where preaching the word.

5 Then Philip went downe to the citie of Samaria, and preached Christ vnto them.

6 And the people with one accord gave heed vnto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.

7 For vncleane spirits, crying with loud voies, came out of many that were possessed with them, and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed.

8 And there was great joy in that citie.

9 But there was a certaine man called Simon, which before time in the same citie vsed sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, gining out that himselfe was some great one.

10 To whom they all gaue heede from the least to the greatest, saying, This man is the great power of God.

11 And to him they had regard, because that of long time he had bewitched them with sorceries.

12 But when they beleued Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdome of God, and the Name of Iesus Christ, they were baptized, both men and women.

13 Then Simon himselfe beleued also: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and signes which were done.

14 Now when the Apostles which were at Hierusalem, heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they sent vnto them Peter and Iohn.

15 Who when they were come downe, prayed for them that they might receive the holy Ghost.

16 (For

C H A P. VIII.

16 (For as yet he was fallen vpon none of them: v
sely they were baptized in the Name of the Lord
Iesus.)

17 Then laid they their hands on them, and they
received the holy Ghost.

18 And when Simon saw that through laying on
of the Apostles hands, the holy Ghost was given, he
offered them money,

19 Saying giue me also this power, that on whom-
soever I lay hands, he may receive the holy Ghost.

20 But Peter said vnto him, Thy money perish
vnto thee, because thou hast thought that the gift of
God may be purchased with money.

21 Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter:
for thy heart is not right in the sight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickednesse, and
pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may
beforginen thee.

23 For I perceiue that thou art in the gall of bit-
ternesse, and in the bond of iniquity.

24 Then answered Simon, and said, Pray yee to
the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye
have spoken, come vpon me.

25 And they, when they had testified and pre-
ached the word of the Lord, returned to Hierusalem,
and preached the Gospel in many villages of the Sa-
maritans.

26 And the Angel of the Lord spake vnto Philip,
saying, Arise, and goe toward the South, vnto the way
that goeth downe from Hierusalem vnto Gaza,
which is desert.

27 And he arose, and went: and behold, a man of
Ethiopia, an Eunuch of great authority vnder Can-
dice Queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge
of all her treasure, and had come to Hierusalem for
worship,

28 Was returning, and sitting in his charer, read
Esaias the prophet.

29 Then the Spirit said vnto Philip, Go neare, and
issue thy selfe to this charet.

30 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him
read the Prophet Esaias, and said, Understandest
thou what thou readest?

31 And hee said, How can I, except some man
should

THE ACTES.

should guide mee? And hee desired Philip that hee would come vp and sit with him.

32 The place of the Scripture which he read, was this, Hee was led as a sheepe to the slaughter, and like a lambe dumbe before the iherer, so opened he not his mouth.

33 In his humiliation his iudgement was taken away: and who shall declare his generation? For his life is taken from the earth.

34 And the Eunuch answered Philip, and said, I pray thee of whom speaketh the Prophet this? of himselfe, or of some other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same Scripture, and preached vnto him, Iesus.

36 And as they went on their way, they came vnto a certaine water; And the Eunuch said, See, here is water, what doth hinder me to be baptiz'd?

37 And Philip said, If thou belieuest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And hee answered, and said, I belieue that Iesus Christ is the Sonne of God;

38 And he commanded the chariot to stand still: and they went downe both into the water, both Philip and the Eunuch, and he baptiz'd him.

39 And when they were come vp out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the Eunuch saw him no more: and hee went on his way reioycing.

40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and passing through, he preached in all the cities till he cameto Cesarea.

C H A P. IX.

1 Saul going towards Damasew, 4 is stricken downe to the earth.

A nd Saul yet breathing out threatenings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went vnto the high Priest.

2 And desired of him letters to Damasew to the Synagogues, that if hee found any of this way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound vnto Hierusalem.

3 And as he journeyed, he came neere Damasew, and suddenly there shined round about him a light from heauen.

4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voyce saying

vnto

C H A P. IX.

vnto him, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

5 And he said, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Iesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kicke against the prickes.

6 And he trembling and astonished, said, Lord, what wilt thou hane me to doe? And the Lord said vnto him, Arise and goe in to the city, and it shall be told thee what thou must doe.

7 And the men which iourneyed with him, stod speechlesse, hearing a voyce, but seeing no man.

8 And Saul arose from the earth, and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought him into Damascus.

9 And he was three dayes without sight, and neither did eat nor drinke.

10 ¶ And theret was a certayne disciple at Damas-
cus, named Ananias, and to him said the Lord in a vi-
sion, Ananias. And he said, Behold I am here, Lord.

11 And the Lord said vnto him, Arise, and goe into the street which is called Straight, & inquire in the house of Iudas for one called Saul of Tarsus, for behold he prayeth,

12 And hath seene in a vision a man named Ana-
nias comming in, and putting his hand on him, that
he might receive his sight.

13 Then Ananias answered, Lord, I have heard by
many of this man, how much euill he hath done to
thy Saints at Jerusalem:

14 And here he hath authority from the chiefe
Priests to bind all that call on thy Name.

15 But the Lord said vnto him, Go thy way: for he
is a chosen vessel vnto me, to beare my Name before
the Gentiles, and Kings, and the children of Israel.

16 For I will shew him how great things he must
suffer for my Names sake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entred into the
house, & putting his hands on him said, Brother Saul,
the Lord (even Iesus that appeared vnto thee in the
way as thou camest) hath sent me, that thou mightest
receive thy sight, and be filled with the holy Ghost.

18 And immediatly there fell from his eyes as it
had beeene scales, and he received sight foorthwith
and arose and was baptizid.

19 And when he had received meat, he was streng-
M thered

T H E A C T E S.

17 Then was Saul certayne daies with the disci-
ples which were at Damascs.

18 And straightway he preached Christ in the Sy-
nagogues that he is the Sonne of God.

19 But all that heard him, were amazed, & said, Is
not this he y destroyed them w^e called on this Name
in Hierusalem, and came hither for that intent, that
he might bring them bound vnto the chiefe Priests?

20 But Saul encreased the more in strength, and
confounded the Iewes which dwelt at Damascs,
proouing that this is very Christ.

21 ¶ And after that many daies were fulfiled, the
Iewes tooke counsell to kill him.

22 But their laying wait was knownen of Saul: and
they watched the gates day and night to kill him.

23 Then the disciples tooke him by night, and let
him downe by the wall in a basket.

24 And when Saul was come to Hierusalem, he af-
fayed to ioyce himselfe to y Disciples, but they were
all afraid of him, & beleauened not y he was a disciple.

25 But Barnabas tooke him, and brought him to
the Apostles, and declared vnto them how he had
seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to
him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascs
in the Name of Iesus.

26 And he was with them comming in, and going
out at Hierusalem.

27 And he speake boldly in the Name of the Lord
Iesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they
wente about to slay him.

28 Which when the brethren knew, they brought
him down to Cesarea, and sent him soorth to Taras.

29 Then had the Churches reit throughout all Iudea, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified, and
walking in the feare of the Lord, and in the comfort
of the holy Ghost, were multiplied.

30 And it came to passe, as Peter passed throuw-
out all quatters, he came downe also to the Saints
which dwelt at Lydda.

31 And there he found a certaire man named Ae-
neas, which had kept his bed eight yeeres, and was
sick of the palsey.

32 And Peter said vnto him, Aeneas, Ihesus Christ
maketh thee whole; arise and make thy bed. And he
arose immediatly.

33 And

C H A P. X.

35 And all that dwelt at Lydda and Saron, saw him, and turned to the Lord.

36 ¶ Now there was at Ioppa a certaine disciple, named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: this woman was full of good works, and almes-deeds which she did.

37 And it came to passe in those dayes, that she was sick and died: whom when they had washed, they laid her in an upper chamber.

38 And sorasininch as Lydda was nigh to Ioppa, and the Disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring him that he would not delay to come to them.

39 Then Peter arose and went with them; when he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber: and all the widowes stood by him weeping, and shewing the coates and garments which Dorcas made while she was with them.

40 But Peter put them all foorth, and kneeled downe, and prayed, and turning him to the body, said, Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes, and when she saw Peter, she sat vp.

41 And he gave her his hand, and lift her vp: and when he had called the Saints, and widowes, presented her aline.

42 And it was knownen throughout all Ioppa, and many beleueed in the Lord.

43 And it came to passe that he taried many dayes in Ioppa, with one Simon a Tanner.

C H A P. X.

i Cornelius sendeth for Peter. 34 Peter preacheith
44 The holy Ghost falleth on the heauens.

¶ There was a certaine man in Cesarea, called Cornelius, a Centurion of the band called the Italin band:

2 A devout man, and one that feared God with all his house, which gaue much almes to the people, and prayed to God alway.

3 He saw in a vision evidently about the ninth houre of the day, an Angel of God comming in to him, and saying vnto him, Cornelius.

4 And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said, What is it, Lord? And he said vnto him, Thy prayers and thine almes are come vp for a memorial before God.

THE ACTES.

5 And now send men to Ioppa , and call for one Simon whose surname is Peter.

6 He lodgeth with one Simon a Tanner , whose house is by the sea-side ; he shall tell thee what thou oughtest to doe.

7 And when the Angel which spake vnto Cornelius , was departed , hee called two of his houehold seruants , and a denout souldier of them that waited on him continually .

8 And when he had declared all these things vnto them , he sent them to Ioppa .

9 ¶ On the morrow as they went on their iorney , and drew nigh vnto the city , Peter went vp vpon the house to pray , about the sixt houre .

10 And he became very hungry , & would haue eaten : while they made ready , he fell into a trance .

11 And saw heauen opened , and a certaine vessell descending vnto him , as it had beeene a great sheet , knit at the fourte corners , and let downe to the earth :

12 Wherin were all maner of sourefooted beasts of the earth , and wilde beasts , and creeping things , and soules of the ayre .

13 And there came a voice to him , Arise Peter , kill and eate .

14 But Peter said , Not so , Lord ; for I haue auer eaten any thing that is common or vncleane .

15 And the voice spake vnto him againe the second time , What God hath cleansed , that call not thou common .

16 This was done thrice , and the vessell was received vp againe into heauen .

17 Now while Peter doubted in himselfe what this vision which he had seene shoulde meane , behold , the men which were sent from Cornelius , had made enquirie for Simons house , and stood before the gate ,

18 And called , and asked , whether Simon , which was surnamed Peter , were lodged there .

19 ¶ While Peter thought on the vision , the Spirit said vnto him , Behold , three men seeke thee .

20 Arise therefore , and get thee downe , and goe with them , doubting nothing : for I haue sent them .

21 Then Peter went downe to the men which were sent vnto him from Cornelius , & said , Behold , I am he whō ye seeke : what is the cause wherfore ye are come ?

22 And

C H A P. X.

22 And they said, Cornelius the Centurion, a just man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Iewes, was warned from God by an holy Angel, to send for thee into his house, and to heare words of thee.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged them: And on the morrow Peter went away with them, and certaine brethren from Ioppa accompanied him.

24 And the morrow after, they entred into Cesarea: and Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinsmen and neare friends.

25 And as Peter was comming in, Cornelius met him, and fell downe at his feet, and worshipped him.

26 But Peter tooke him vp, saying, Stand vp, I my selfe also am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he said vnto them, Ye know how that it is an vnlawfull thing for a man that is a Iew, to keepe company, or come vnto one of another nation: but God hath shewed me, that should not call any man common or vndeane.

29 Therefore came I vnto you without gainesaying, as soone as I was sent for. I alke therefore for what intent ye have sent me.

30 And Cornelius said, Fourte dayes agoe, I was fassing vntill this houre, and at the ninth houre I prayed in mine house, and behold, a man stood before me in bright clothing.

31 And said, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, & thine almes are had in remembrance in the sight of God.

32 Send therefore to Ioppa, and call hither Simon whose surname is Peter, he is lodged in the house of one Simon a Tanner, by the sea-side, who when he commeth, shall speake vnto thee.

33 Immediatly therefore I sent vnto thee, and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here present before God, to heare all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 ¶ Then Peter opened his mouth, and said, Of a trueth I perceiue y God is no respecter of persons:

35 But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with him.

36 The word which God lent vnto the children

THE ACTES.

of Israel, preaching peace by Iesus Christ (hee is Lord of all)

37 That word (I say) you know which was published throughout all Iudea, and began from Galilee, after the baptisme which Iohn preached:

38 How God annointed Iesus of Nazareth with the holy Ghost, and with power, who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devill: for God was with him.

39 And we are witnesses of all things which hee did, both in the land of the Iewes, and in Hierusalem, whom they slew, and hanged on a tree:

40 Hym God raised up the thirde day, and shewed him openly;

41 Not to all the people, but vnto witnesses chosen before of God, even to vs who did eat and drinke with him after he rose from the dead.

42 And he commanded vs to preach vnto the people, and to testifie that it is he which was ordaine of God to be the Judge of quicke and dead.

43 To him give all the Prophets witnesse, that through his Name whosoeuer believeth in him, shall haue remission of sinnes.

44 Whiles Peter yet spake these words, the holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word.

45 And they of the circumcision which belieued, were astonished, as many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also was pouerted out the gift of the holy Ghost.

46 For they heard them speake with tongues, and magnifie God. Then answered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which haue received the holy Ghost as well as we?

48 And he commanded them to bee baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tary certayne dayes.

C H A P. XI.

¶ Peter accused for going in to the Gentiles, 5 maketh his defence, which is accepted.

A nd the Apostles, and brethren that were in Iudea, heard that the Gentiles had also receiued the word of God.

¶ And when Peter was come up to Hierusalem, they

that
3
and
4
sin
5
tran
had
fou
6
con
wil
7
slay
8
m
9
W
1
dra
1
aln
Co
1
do
m
in
to
1
al
th
th
7
a
C
P
t

C H A P. X I.

that were of the Circumcision, contended with him,

3 Saying, Thou wentest in to men vncircumcised,
and diddest eat with them.

4 But Peter rehearsed the matter from the begin-
ning, and expounded it by order vnto them, saying,

5 I was in the city of Ioppa praying, and in a
trance I saw a vision, a certaine vessell descend as it
had beeene a great sheepe, let down from heauen by
fourte corners and it came even to me.

6 Vpon which when I had fastened mine eyes, I
considered, & saw fourte footed beastes of earth, and
wild beastes, and creeping things, & soules of the ayre.

7 And I heard a voyce saying vnto me, Arise Peter,
slay and eate.

8 But I said, Not so, Lord: for nothing common or
uncleane hath at any time entered into my mouth.

9 But the voyce answered me againe from heauen,
What God hath cleansed, that call not thou common.

10 And this was done three times: and all were
drawen vp againe into heauen.

11 And behold, immediatly there were three men
already come vnto the house where I was, sent from
Cesarea vnto me.

12 And the Spirit bade me go with them, nothing
doubting: moreouer, these sixe brethren accompanied
me, and we entred into the mans house:

13 And he shewed vs, how he had seene an Angel
in his house, which stood & said vnto him, Send men
to Ioppa, and call for Simon whose surname is Peter.

14 Who shall tell thee words, whereby thou, and
all thy house shalbe saued.

15 And as I began to speake, the holy Ghost fel on
them, as on vs at the beginning.

16 Then remembred I the word of the Lord, how
that he said, John indeed baptizeth with waters: but
ye shall be baptizeth with the holy Ghost.

17 Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift
as he did vnto vs, who beleeneon the Lord Jesus
Christ: what was I that I could withstand God?

18 When they heard these things, they held their
peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also
to the Gentiles granted repentance vnto life.

19 ¶ Now they which were scattered abroad, vpon
the persecution that arose about Steuen, tra-

THE ACTES.

tailed as farre as Phenice, and Cyprus and Antioch
preaching the word to none, but vnto the Iewes only

20 And some of them were men of Cyprus, and
Cyrene, which when they were come to Antioch,
spake vnto the Grecians, preaching the Lord Iesus.

21 And the hand of the Lord was with them: and
a great number bleeued and turned vnto the Lord.

22 Then tidings of these things came vnto the
eares of the Church, which was in Ierusalem: and
they sent foorth Barnabas, that hee shoulde gree as
f.rie as Antioch.

23 Who when they came, and had seene the grace
of God, was glad, and exhorted them all that with
purpose of heart they would cleane vnto the Lord.

24 For he was a good man, & full of the holy Ghost,
and of faith: & much people was added vnto the Lord.
¶ 25 Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus for to seeke
Saul.

26 And when he had found him, he brought him
vnto Antioch. And it came to passe, that a whole
yeare they assembled themselves with the Church,
and taught much people, and the disciples were cal-
led Christians first in Antioch.

27 ¶ And in these dayes came Prophets from
Ierusalem vnto Antioch.

28 And there stod vp one of them named Aga-
bus, and signified by the spirit, that there shoulde be
great dearth throughout all the world: which came
to passe in the dayes of Claudio Cesar.

29 Then the disciples euery man according to
his ability, determined to send reliese vnto the bre-
thren which dwelt in Indes.

30 Which also they did, and sent it to the Elders,
by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

C H A P. XI.

¶ Herod persecuteth the Christians, killeth James im-
prisoneth Peter, who is deliuerned by an Angel.

N ow about that time, Herod the king strecthed
forth his hands to vexe certaine of the Church,

2 And he killed Iames the brother of Iohn with
the sword.

3 And because he saw it pleased the Iewes, he pro-
ceeded further to take Peter also. (Then were the
dayes of uncleaned bread.)

¶ And

C H A P. XII.

4 And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of soldiers to keepe him, intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people.

5 Peter therefore was kept in prison, but prayer was made without ceasing of the Church vnto God for him.

6 And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping betweene two scouldiers, bound with two chaines, and the keepers before the doore, kept the prison.

7 And behold, the Angel of the Lord came vpon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him vp, saying, Arise, vp quickly. And his chaines fell off from his hands.

8 And the Angel said vnto him, Gird thy selfe, and bind on thy sandals: And so he did. And he saith vnto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me.

9 And he went out, and followed him, and wist not that it was true, which was done by the Angel: but thought he saw a vision.

10 When they were past the first and the second ward, they came to the iron gate, that leadeth vnto the city, which opened to them of his owne accord: and they went out, and passed on thervone street, and forthwith the Angel departed from him.

11 And when Peter was come to himselfe, he said, Now I know of a certeyn that the Lord hath sent his Angel, & hath delivered me out of y^e hand of Herod, & from all the expectation of y^e people of the Iewes.

12 And when he had considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary the mother of Iohn, whose surname was Marke, where many were gathered together praying.

13 And as Peter knocked at the doore of the gate, a damosell came to hearken, named Rhoda.

14 And when she knew Peters voyce, she opened not the gate for gladnesse, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate.

15 And they said vnto her, Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they, It is his Angel.

16 But Peter continued knocking, & when they had opened the doore, and saw him, they were astonisched.

THE ACTES.

17 But he beckening vnto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared vnto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison: And he said, Goe shew these things vnto Iames, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place.

18 Now as it was day, there was no small stir among the Touldiers, what was become of Peter.

19 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanaded that they shold be put to death. And he went down from Iudea to Cesarea, and there abode.

20 ¶ And Herod was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and having made Blastus the Kings Chamberlaine their friend, desired peace, because their countrey was nourished by the kings countrey.

21 And vpon a set day, Herod arayed in royll apparel, sate vpon his thone, and made an Oration vnto them.

22 And the people gaue a shout, saying, It is the voyce of a god, and not of a man.

23 And immediatly the Appel of the Lord smote him, because he gaue not God the glory, and he was eaten of wormes, and gane vp the ghost.

24 ¶ But the word of God grew and multiplied.

25 And Barnabas and Saul returned from Ierusalem, when they had fulfilled their ministrerie, and tooke with them Iohn, whose surname was Marke.

C H A V P. X I I I.

¶ Paul and Barnabas are chosen to goe to the Gentiles.
¶ Of Serouis Paulus, and Elymas the sorcerer.

Now there were in the Church that was at Antioch, certaine Prophets and teachers: as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought vp with Herod the Tetrarch, and Saul.

2 As they ministred to the Lord and fasted, the holy Ghost said, Separate me Barnabas and Saul for the worke wherunto I haue called them.

3 And when they had fasted and prayed, and layd their hands on them, they sent them away.

4 ¶ So they being sent foorth by the holy Ghost, departed vnto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.

5 And

C H A P. XIII.

5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the Synagogues of the Jewes: and they had also John to their Minister.

6 And when they had gone thorow the Ile vnto Paphos, they found a certaine sorcerer, a false Prophet a Jew, whose name was Barjesus:

7 Which was with the Deputy of the countrey, Sergius Paulus, a prudent man: who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to heare the word of God.

8 But Elymas the sorcerer (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turne away the Deputy from the faith.

9 Then Saul (who also is called Paul) filled with the holy Ghost set his eyes on him,

10 And said, O full of all subtily and all mischiefe, thou childe of the devill, thou enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to peruer the right wayes of the Lord?

11 And Now behold, the hand of the Lord is vpon thee, and thou shalt be blind, not seeing the Sun for a season. And immediatly there fel on him a mist and a darknesse, and he went about, seeking some to lead him by the hand.

12 Then the Deputy when he saw what was done, beleued, being atturnd at his doctrine of the Lord.

13 Now when Paul and his company loosed from Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia: and John departing from them, returned to Hierusalem.

14 But when they departed from Ferga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the Synagogue on the Sabbath day, and sate downe.

15 And after the reading of the Law and the Prophets, the rulers of the Synagogue sent vnto them, saying, Ye men and brethren, if ye haue any word of exhortation, for the people, say on.

16 Then Paul stood vp & beckning with his hand, said, Men of Israel, and ye feare God ghe audience.

17 The God of this people of Israel chose our fathers and exhorted the people when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, and with an high arm brought he them out of it.

18 And about the time of fourty yeers suffered he their manners in the wilderness;

19 And

THE ACTES.

19 And when he had destroyed seven nations in the land of Cauaan he denided their land to thē by lots;

20 And after that he gaue vnto them Judges, about the space of four hundred and fifty yeeres, vntill Samuel the Prophet.

21 And afterward they desired a king, and God gaue vnto them Saul the sonne of Cis, a man of the tribe of Beniamin, by the space offorty yeeres.

22 And when he had remoued him, he raised vp vnto them Dauid to be their king, to whom also he gaue testimony, and said, I haue found Dauid the sonne of Iesse, a man after mine owne heart, which shall fulfill all my will.

23 Of this mans seed hath God, according to his promise, raised vnto Israel a Sauiour Iesuſ.

24 When John had first preached before his comming, the baptisme of repentence to all the people of Israel.

25 And as John fulfilled his course, he said, Whom thinkeye that I am? I am not he. But behold, there commeth one after me, whose shooes of his feet I am not worthy to lose.

26 Men and brethren, children of the stocke of Abraham and whosoeuer among you feareth God, to you is the word of this saluation sent.

27 For they that dwell at Hierusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voices of the Prophets which are read euery Sabbath day, they haue fulfilled them in condemning him.

28 And though they found no cause of death in him, yet desired they Pilate that he should be slaine.

29 And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they tooke him downe from the tree, and laid him in a sepulchre.

30 But God raised him from the dead:

31 And he was scene many dayes of them which came vp with him from Galilee to Hierusalem, who are his witnesſes vnto the people.

32 And we declare vnto you glad tidings, how that the promise which was made vnto the fathers,

33 God hath fulfilled the same vnto vs their chil- dren in that he hath raised vp Iesuſ againe, as it is also written in the second Psalme: Thou art my Son, this day haue I begotten thee.

34 And

C H A P. X I I I .

34 And as concerning that he raised him vp from the dead, now no more to returne to corruption, he said on this wise, I will giue you the sure mercies of Dauid.

35 Wharsote he faith also in another Psalme, Thou shalt not suffer thy holy One to see corruption.

36 For Dauid after he had serued his owne generation by the will of God, fell en sleepe, and was laid vnto his fathers, and saw corruption:

37 But he whom God raised againe, saw no corruption.

38 ¶ Be it knowne vnto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached vnto you the forgiuenes of finnes.

39 And by him all that beleue are iustified from all thiugs, from which yee could not be iustified by the Law of Moses.

40 Beware therefore, lest that come vpon you which is spoken of in the Prophets,

41 Behold ye despisers, and wonder, & perish: for I worke a worke in your dayes, a worke w^t you shall in no wise beleue, though a man declare it vnto you.

42 And when the Iewes were gone out of the Synagoges, the Gentiles besought that these words might be preached to them the next Sabbath.

43 Now when the congregatiom was broken vp, many of the Iewes & religious Proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas, who speaking to them, perswaded them to continue in the grace of God.

44 ¶ And the next Sabbath day came almost the whole city together to heare the word of God.

45 But when the Iewes saw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and spake against those things which were spoken by Paul, contradicting and blaspheming.

46 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and said, It was necessary that the word of God should first haue bin spoken to you: but seeing you put it from you, and judge your selues vnworthy of everlasting life, loe, we turne to the Gentiles.

47 For so hath the Lord commanded vs, saying, I haue set thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for saluation vnto the ends of the earth.

48 And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad

THE ACTES.

glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternall life, beleueued.

49 And the word of the Lord was published throughout all the region.

50 But the Iewes stirred vp the devout and honora-ble women, and the chiefe men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul, and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts.

51 But they shooke off the dust of their feete, against them, and came to Iconium.

52 And the disciples were filled with ioy, and with the holy Ghost.

CHAP. XIII.

1 Paul and Barnabas are persecuted. 7 Paul healing a creape, they are reputed gods. 19 Paul is fained.

And it came to passe in Iconium, that they went both together into the Synagogue of the Iewes and so spake, that a great multitude both of the Iewes, and also of the Greekes beleueed.

2 But the vnbeleueing Iewes stirred vp the Gentiles, and made their minds euill affected against the brethren.

3 Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord, which gane testimony vnto the word of his grace, and granted signes and wonders to be done by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the city was diuided: and part held with the Iewes, & part with the Apostles.

5 And when there was an assault made, both of the Gentiles, and also of the Iewes, with the rulers, to vise them dispitefully, and to stome them,

6 They were ware of it, and fled vnto Lysira and Derbe, cities of Lyconia, and vnto the region that lyeth round about.

7 And there they preached the Gospel.

8 ¶ And there sate a certaine man at Lystra, impotent in his feete, being a creape from his mother's wombe, who never had walked.

9 The same heard Paul speake: who fledfasty beholding him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed,

10 Said with a loud voyce, stand vpright on thy feet: and he leaped and walked.

11 And when the people saw what Paul had done,

C H A P. XIII.

done, they lift vp their voyces, saying in the speches
of Lyæonia, The gods are come downe to vs in the
likenesse of men.

13 And they called Barnabas Jupiter, and Paul
Mercurius, because he was the chiefe speaker.

14 Then the Priest of Iupiter, which was before
their city, brought oxen, and garlands vnto the gates,
and would haue done iacrifice with the people.

14 Which when the Apostles, Barnabas and Paul
heard of, they rent their clothes, and ran in among
the people, crying oue,

15 And saying, Sirs, why doe ye these things?
Wee also are men of like passions with you, and
preach vnto you, that ye shoulde turne from these va-
nities, vnto the living God, which made heauen and
earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein.

16 Who in tyme past, suffered all nations to
walke in their owne wayes.

17 Neverthelesse, he left not himselfe without wit-
nesse, in that he did good, and gaue vs raine from
heauen, and fruitfull seasons, filling our hearts with
food and gladnesse.

18 And with these sayings scarce restrained they the
people, that they had not done sacrifice vnto them.

19 ¶ And there came thither certaine Lewes from
Antioch and Iconium, who perswaded the people,
and hauing stoned Paul, drew him out of the city,
supposing he had been dead.

20 Howbeit, as the discipiles stod round about
him, he rose vp, and came into the city, and the next
day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

21 And when they had preached the Gospel to
that city, and had taught many, they returned againe
to Lystra, and to Iconium and Antioch,

22 Confirming ſoules of ſdiscipiles, & exhorting
them to continue in ſfaith, & that we muſt through
much tribulation enter into the kingdome of God.

23 And when they had ordained them Elders in
every Church, & had prayed with fasting, they com-
mended them to the Lord, on whom they beleueed.

24 And after they had paſſed throughout Pisidia,
they came to Pamphylia.

25 And when they had preached the word in
Perga, they went downe into Attalia.

26 And

THE ACTES.

26 And thence sailed to Antioch, from whence they had been recommended to the grace of God, for the worke which they fulfilled.

27 And when they were come, and had gathered the Church together, they rehearsed all that God had done with them, and how he had opened the doore of faith vnto the Gentiles.

28 And there they abode long time w^t the disciplex.

C H A P. X V.

3 *Dissencion touching the circumcision. 6 The Apostles consult about it. 22 Their determination.*

A Nd certaine men w^t came downe from Iudea, taught the brethren, and said, Except ye be circumcised after y^r maner of Moses, ye cannot be saved.

2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no small dissencion and disputatyon with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas and certaine other of them shoulde goe vp to Hierusalem vnto the Apostles and Elders about this question.

3 And being brought on their way by the Church, they passed thorow Phenice and Samaria, declaring the conuersio[n] of the Gentiles: and they caused great joy vnto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Hierusalem, they were received of the Church, and of the Apostles, and Elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them.

5 But there rose vp certaine of the sect of the Pharisees which beleueed, saying, That it was needfull to circumcise them, and to command them to keepe the Law of Moses.

6 ¶ And the Apostles and Elders came together, for to consider of this matter.

7 And when there had been much disputing, Peter rose vp, and said vnto them, Men and brethren, ye know how that a good while agoe, God made choice among vs, that the Gentiles by my mouth should heare the word of the Gospel, and beleuee.

8 And God w^t knoweth the hearts, bare them witness, giwing them y^r holy Ghost, enē as he did vnto vs,

9 And put no difference betweene vs and them, purifying their hearts by faith.

10 Now therefore why tempt ye God, to put a yoke vpon the necke of the Disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear.

¶ B.R.

C H A P. X V.

11 But we beleeme that through the grace of the Lord Iesus Christ, we shalbe saued even as they.

12 ¶ Then all the multitude kept silence, and gaue audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaringe what miracles and wonders God hath wrought among the Gentiles by them.

13 ¶ And after they had held their peace, James answered, saying, Men & brethren, hearken vnto me.

14 Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visite the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his Name.

15 And to this agree the words of the Prophets, as it is written,

16 After this I wil returne, & wil build againe the Tabernacle of Dauid w^t is fallen downe: and I will build againe the ruines thereof, and I will set it vp:

17 That the residue of men might seeke after the Lord, and all the Gentiles vpon whom my Name is called saith the Lord, who doeth all these things.

18 Knownen vnto God are all his workes from the beginnig of the world.

19 Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them w^t from among the Gentiles are turned to God:

20 But that we write vnto them, that they abstaine from pollutions of Idoles, and from fornication, and from things strangled and from blood.

21 For Moses of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the Synagogues every Sabbath day.

22 Then pleased it the Apostles and Elders, with the whole Church, to send chosen men of their owne company to Antioch, with Paul and Barnabas namely, Iudas surnamed Barsabas, and Silas, chiefe men among the brethren,

23 And wrote letters by them after this manner: The Apostles and Elders, and brethren, send greeting vnto the brethren which are of the Gentiles in Antioch, and Syria and Cilicia.

24 Forasmuch as we have heard, that certaine which went out from vs, haue troubled you with words subuertting your soules, saying, Ye must be circumcised, and keepe the Law, to whom we gave no such commandement:

25 It seemed good vnto vs, being assembled with
one

THE ACTES.

One accord, to send chosen men vnto you , without
beloued Barnabas and Paul.

26 Men that haue hazarded their lynes for the
Name of our Lord Iesus Christ.

27 Wee haue sent therefore Iudas and Silas, who
shall also tell you the same things by mouth.

28 For it seemed good to the holy Ghost , and to
us, to lay vpon you no greater burden then these ne-
cessary things :

29 That ye abstaine from meats offered to idoles,
and from blood, and from things strangled, and from
fornication : from which if ye keepe your selues, ye
shall doe well. Fare ye well.

30 So when they were dismissed , they came to
Antioch : and when they had gathered the multi-
tude together, they deliuered the Epistle.

31 Which when they had read, they rejoyced for
the consolation.

32 And Iudas and Silas, being Prophets also them-
selues, exhorted the brethren with many words, and
confirmed them :

33 And after they had taried there a space , they
were let go in peace frō ſ þ brethren vnto ſ þ Apostles.

34 Notwithstanding, it pleased Silas to abide there
ſtill.

35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch,
teaching and preaching the word of the Lord, with
many others also.

36 ¶ And ſome dayes after, Paul ſaid vnto Barna-
bas, Let vs goe againe and visite our brethren in eve-
ry city , where we haue preached the word of the
Lord, and ſee how they doe.

37 And Barnabas determined to take with them
John, whose ſurname was Marke.

38 But Paul thought not good to take him with
them, who departed from them from Pamphilia, and
went not with them to the worke.

39 And ſ contention was ſo ſharpe between them,
that they departed alunder one from the other : and
ſo Barnabas tooke Marke, and ſailed vnto Cyprus.

40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed , being re-
commended by the brethren vnto the grace of God.

41 And he went thōrow Syria and Cilica, confir-
ming the Churches.

CHAP. XVI.

¶ Paul circumciseth Timothy, 14 converteth Lydia,
casteth out a spirit of divination.

Then came he to Derbe and Lystra: and behold, a certayne disciple was there, named Timotheus, the sonne of a certayne woman which was a Jewesse, and beleevued: but his father was a Greeke:

2 Which was well reported of by the brethren that were at Lystra and Iconium,

3 Him would Paul haue to goe foorth with him, and tooke, and circumcised him, because of the Jewes that were in thoses quarters: for they knew all that his father was a Greeke.

4 And as they went thorow the cities, they delineted them the deenes for to keepe, that were ordeneed of the Apostles and Elders, which were at Hierusalem.

5 And so were the Churches establisched in the faith, and increased in number daily.

6 Now when they had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, and were forbidden of the holy Ghost to preach the word in Asia,

7 After they were come to Mysia, they assayed to goe into Bithynia: but the Spirit suffred them not.

8 And they passing by Mysia, came down to Troas.

9 And a vision appeared to Paul in the night: There stood a man of Macedonia, and prayed him, saying, Come ouer into Macedonia, and helpe vs.

10 And after he had seene the vision, immedately we endeavoured to goe into Macedonia, assuredly gaathering, that the Lord had called vs far to preach the Gospel unto them.

11 Therefore loosing from Troas, we came with a straight course to Samothracia, and the next day to Neapolis:

12 And from theace to Philippi, which is the chief city of that part of Macedonia, and a Colony: and we were in that city abiding certaine dayes.

13 And on ſ Sabbath we went out of the city by a river ſide, where prayer was wont to be made, and we ſat down, & ſpake unto ſ women w reſorted thither.

14 And a certayne woman named Lydia, a ſeller of purple, of the city of Thyatira, which worshipped God, heard vs: whose heart the Lord opened, that ſhe attended unto the things which were ſpoken of Paul.

15 And

THE ACTES.

15 And when she was baptized, and her householde, she besought vs, saying, If ye haue indged me to be faithfull to the Lord, come into my house, and abide there. And she constrained vs.

16 ¶ And it came to passe, as we went to prayer, a certaine damosell possessed with a spirit of divination, met vs : which brought her masters much gaine by soothsaying:

17 The same followed Paul and vs, and cryed, saying, These men are the seruants of the most high God, which shew vnto vs the way of saluation.

18 And this did she many dayes : but Paul being grieved, turned and said to the spirit, I command thee in the Name of Iesus Christ, to come out of her. And he came out the same houre.

19 ¶ And when her masters saw that the hope of their gaines was gone, they caught Paul and Silas, and drew them into the market place vnto the rulers,

20 And brought them to the Magistrates, saying, These men being lewes, doe exceedingly trouble our city,

21 And teach customes which are not lawfull for vs to receive, neirher to obserue, being Romanes.

22 And the multitude rose vp together against them, and the Magistrates rent off their clothes, and commanded to beat them.

23 And when they had layd many stripes vpon them, they cast them into prison, charging the jailor to keepe them safely.

24 Who having received such a charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet fast in the stockes.

25 ¶ And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises vnto God: and the prisoners heard them.

26 And suddenly there was a great earthquake, so that the foundations of the prison were thaken: and immediately all the doores were opened, and every ones bands were loosed.

27 And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his sleepe, and seeing the prison doores open, he drew out his sword, and would haue killed himselfe, supposing that the prisoners had been fled.

28 But Paul cried with a lowd voice, saying, Doe thy selfe no harme, for we are all here.

29 Then

C H A P. XVII.

29 Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and
came trembling, and fell downe before Paul & Silas.
30 And brought them out, and said, Sirs, what
must I doe to be saued?

31 And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ,
and thou shalt be saued, and thy house.

32 And they spake vnto vnto him the word of the
Lord, and to all that were in his house.

33 And hee tooke them the iame houre of the
night, and washed their stripes, and was baptizized,
he and all his, straightway.

34 And when hee had brought them into his
house, he set meat before them, and rejoyced, belie-
ving in God, with all his house.

35 And when it was day, the Magistrates sent the
Sergeants, saying, Let those men goe.

36 And the keeper of the priou told this sayung
to Paul, The Magistrates haue sent to let you goe :
Now therefore depart, and goe in peace.

37 But Paul said vnto them, They haue beaten vs
openly vndeclared, being Romans, & haue cast vs
into prisō, & now do they thrust vs out priuily? Nay
verely, but let them come themselves, & fetch vs our,

38 And the Sergeants told these words vnto the
Magistrates : and they feared, when they heard that
they were Romanes.

39 And they came & besought them, and brought
them out, and desired them to depart out of the city.

40 And they went out of the prison, and entred in-
to the house of Lydia, and when they had seene the
brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

C H A P. XVIII.

1 Paul preacheſt at Theſſalonica, 10 at Berrea,
15 He diſputeth and preacheſt at Athens.

Now when they had passed through Amphipo-
lis and Apollonia, they came to Theſſalonica,
where was a Synagogue of the Iewes.

2 And Paul, as his maner was, went in vnto them,
and three Sabbath dayes reasoned with them out of
the Scriptures,

3 Opening and alledging that Christ must needs
haue suffered and risen againe from the dead, and
that this Iesus whom I preach vnto you, is Christ.

4 And ſome of them beleefed, & comforted with

Paul

THE ACTES.

Paul and Silas; and of the devout Greekes, a great multitude, and of the chiefe women not a few.

5 ¶ But the Iewes which beleueed not, mooneid with enuie, tooke vnto them certayne lewd fellowes of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the citie on an vproare, and assualted the house of Iason, and sought to bring them out to the people.

6 And when they found them not, they drew Iason, and certain brethren vnto the rulers of the city, crying, These that haue turned the world vpside downe, are come hither also,

7 whom Iason hath received: and these all doe contrary to the decesses of Cesar, saying, that there is another King, one Iesus.

8 And they troubled the people, and the rulers of the city, when they heard these things.

9 And when they had taken security of Iason, and of the other, they let them goe.

10 ¶ And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night vnto Berea: who comming thither, went into the Synagogue of the Iewes.

11 These were more noble then those in Theffalonica, in that they receiued the word with all readinesse of mind, and searched the Scriptures dayly, whether those things were so.

12 Therefore many of them beleueed: also of honourable women which were Greekes, and of men not a few.

13 But when the Iewes of Theffalonica had knowlidge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, & stirred vp the people.

14 And then immediatly the brethren sent away Paul, to goe as it were to the Sea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there still.

15 And they that conducted Paul, brought him vnto Athens, and receiuing a commandement vnto Silas and Timotheus, for to come to him with all sped, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when hee saw the citie wholly given to idolatry.

17 Therefore disputed he in the Synagogue with the Iewes, and with the devout persons, and in the market dayly, with them that met with him.

18 Then

C H A P . X V I I .

18 Then certaine Philosophers of the Epicureans,
and of the Stoickes encoantred him: and some said,
What will this babler say? Other some, He seemeth
to bee a fitter foorth of strange gods: because he
preached vnto them Iesus, and the resurrection.

19 And they tooke him, and brought him vnto
Acropagus, saying, May we know what this new do-
ctrine, whereof thou speakest is?

20 For thou bringest certaine strange things to
our eares: wee would know therefore what these
things meane.

21 (For all the Athenians and strangers which
were there, spent their time in nothing else, but ei-
ther to tell or to heare some new thing.)

22 ¶ Then Paul stood in the mids of Mars hill,
and said, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all
things ye are too superstitious.

23 For as I passed by, and beheld your denuotions,
I found an altar with this inscription, T O T H E
V N K N O W E N G O D. Whom therefore ye
ignorantly worship, him declare I vnto you.

24 God hath made the world, and all things ther-
in, seeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwel-
lith not in Temples made with hands:

25 Neither is worshipped with mens hands, as
though he needed any thing, seeing he gineth to all,
life and breath, and all things;

26 And hath made of one blood all nations of
men, for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and
hath determined the times before appointed, and
the bounds of their habitation:

27 That they shoulde seeke the Lord, if happily
they might seeke after him and find him, though he
be not farre from every one of vs.

28 For in him we live, and moone, and haue our
being, as certaine also of your owne Poets haue sajd,
For we are also his off-spring.

29 Forasmuch then as we are the off-spring of God,
we ought not to thinke ſy the Godhead is like vnto
gold or siluer, or ſtone graven by art, & mans device.

30 And ſy times of this ignorance God winked at,
but now comandeth all men every where to repent:

31 Because he hath appointed a day in the whiche he will
judge the world in righeſtouſnes, by that may whom

THE ACTES.

He hath ordained, whereof he hath given affirmance vnto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead.
33 ¶ And when th. y heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked, and others said, We will heare thee againe of this matter.

33 So Paul departed from among them.

34 Nowbeit certain men claued vnto him, & beloued : among the which was Dionysius y Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, & others with them.

C H A P. XVIII.

2 Paul labouuring with his hands, and preaching at Corinth, 9 is encouraged in a vision

A fter these things, Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth,

2 And found a certayne Iew named Aquila borne in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife Priscilla, (because that Cladius had commanded all Iewes to depart from Rome) and came vnto them.

3 And because he was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought (for by their corruption they were tent-makers.)

4 And he reasoned in the Synagogue every Sabbath, and perswaded the Iewes and the Greeks.

5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was pressed in spirit, and troubled to the Iewes, that Iesus was Christ.

6 And whea they opposed themselues and blasphemed, he shooke his rayment, and said vnto them, Your blood be vpon your owne heads, I am cleane from henceforth I will goe vnto the Gentiles.

7 ¶ And hee departed thence, and entred into a certayne mans house named Iustus one, y worshipped God, whose house ioyned hard to the Synagogue.

8 And Crispus, the chiefe Ruler of the Synagogue, beleueed on the Lord, with all his house ; and many of the Corinthians hearing, beleueed, and were baptized.

9 Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision, Be not afraid, but speake, & hold not thy peace:

10 For I am with thee, & no man shall set on thee, to hurt thee: for I haue much people in this city.

11 And he continued there a yeare and sixe monthes, teaching the word of God among them.

12 ¶ And when Gallio was the deputy of Achaea

CHAP. XVIII.

the Jewes made insurrecion with one accord against Paul, and brought him to the judgement seat,
13 Saying, this fellow persuadeth men to worship God contrary to the law.

14 And when Paul was now about to open his mouth, Gallio said vnto the Jewes, If it were a matter of wrong or wicked lewdnesse, O yee lewes reason would that I shold beare with you.

15 But if it be a question of words, and names, and of your law, looke yee to it: for I will bee no iudge of such matters,

16 And he draue them from the iudgement seat.

17 Then all the Greeks tooke Sosthenes the chiefe iale of the Synagogue, and beat him before y judge went seat: and Gallio cared for none of those things.

18 ¶ And Paul after this tarried there yet a good while, & then tooke his leane of y brethren, & failed thence into Syria, and vbi him Priscilla & Aquila: hauing thorne his head in Cenchrea: for he had a vow.

19 And he came to Ephesus, and left them there: but he himselfe entred into the Synagogue, and reasoned with the lewes;

20 When they desired him to tarry longer time with them, he consented not:

21 But bade them farewell, saying, I must by all meanes keep this feast that commeth at Hierusalem: but I will returne againe vnto you, if God will: and he failed from Ephesus.

22 And when he had landed at Cesarea, & gone up, & saluted the Church, he went downe to Antioch.

23 And after he had spent some time there, he departed, & went ouer all the countrey of Galatia and Phrygia in order, strengthening all the disciples.

24 ¶ And a certayne Iew named Apollos, borne at Alexandria, an eloquent man, and mighty in the scriptures came to Ephesus.

25 This man was instructed in the way of the Lord, and being fervent in the spirit: hee spake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptisme of Iohn.

26 And hee began to speake boldly in the Synagogue: whom when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they tooke him vnto them, and expounded vnto him the way of God more perfectly.

THE ACTES.

27 And when hee was disposed to passe into Achaia, the bretheren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him : who, when he was come, helped them much which had beleueed through grace.

28 For he mightily conuincyd Lewes, & that publikely shewing by y Scriptures, that Iesus was Christ.

C H A P. XIX.

6 The holy Ghost given by Pauls hands.

And it came to passe, that while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts, came to Ephesus, & finding certaine disciples,

2 He said vnto them, Haue yee received the holy Ghost since yee beleene? And they said vnto him, We haue not so much as heard whether there be any holy Ghost.

3 And hee said vnto them, vnto what then were ye baptizyd? And they said vnto Iohns baptisme.

4 Then said Paul, Iohn verely baptizyd with the baptisme of repentance, saying vnto the people, that they should beleene on him which should come after him, that is on Christ Iesus.

5 When they heard this, they were baptizyd in the Name of the Lord Iesus.

6 And when Paul had laid his hands vpon them, the holy Ghost came on them, and they spake with tongues, and prophesied.

7 And all the men were about twelve.

8 And he went into the Synagogue, & spake boldly for the space of three moneths, disputing & perswading the things concerning the kingdome of God.

9 But when diuers were hardened, and beleueed not but spake euil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing dayly in the scoule of one Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the space of two yeres, so that all they which dwelt in Asia, heard the word of the Lord Iesus, both Lewes and Greekes.

11 And God wrought speciall miracles by the hands of Paul :

12 So that from his body were brought vnto the sick, handkerchiefs or aprons, & the diseases departed from them, & the euill spirits went out of them.

13 ¶ Then certayne of the vagabond Lewes, exorcists, tooke vpon them to call ouer them which had euill

C H A P. XIX.

evil spirits, the Name of the Lord Iesus, saying, We adiure you by Iesus whom Paul preacheeth.

14 And there were seuen sons of one Scaua a Jew, and chiefe of the Priests which did so.

15 And the euill spirit answered, and said, Iesus I know, and Paul I know, but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the euill spirit was, leape on them, and ouercame them, and preuailed against them, so that they fled out of that house naked and wounded.

17 And this was knowne to all the Jewes and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus, & feare fel on them all, and the Name of the Lord Iesus was magnified.

18 And many that beleueed came, and confessed, and shewed their deedes.

19 Many also of them which vsed curions artes, brought their bookest together, and burned them before all men: and they counted the price of them, and found it fiftie thousand pieces of siluer.

20 So mightily grew the word of God & preuailed.

21 After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the spirit, when he had passed thorow Macedonia and Achaia to goe to Hierusalem, saying, After I haue beeene there I must also see Rome.

22 So hee sent into Macedonia two of them that ministred vnto him, Timotheus and Erastus, but he himselfe stayed in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small stirre about that way.

24 For a certaine man named Demetrios, a siluer-smith, which made siluer shernes for Diana, brought so small gaine vnto the craftsmen:

25 Whom he called together, with the workemen of like occupation, and said, Sirs, yee know that by this craft we haue our wealth.

26 Moreover, yee see and haare, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath perwaded, & turned away much people, saying, that they be no gods, which are made with hands.

27 So that not onely this our craft is in daunger to be set at nought: but also that the Temple of the great goddesse Diana should be despised, and her magnificeance should be destroyed, whom all Asia and the world worshippeth.

THE ACTES.

38 And when they heard these sayings, they were full of wrath, and cryed out, saying, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

39 And the whole city was filled with confusion, and hauing caught Gains and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Pauls companions in trouaile, they ruffed with one accord into the Theatre.

40 And when Paul would haue entred in vnto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

41 And certaine of the chiefe of Asia, which were his friends, sent vnto him, desiring him that hee would not aduenture himselfe into the Theatre.

42 Some therefore cryed one thing, and some another, for the assembly was confisced, and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

43 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Iewes putting him forward. And Alexander beckened with the hand, and would haue made his defence vnto the people,

44 But when they knew that hee was a Iew, all with one voyce, about the space of two houres cryed out, Great is Diana of the Ephesians.

45 And when the towne-clarke had appeased the people, hee said, Yee men of Ephesians, what man is there that knoweth not how y^e the city of the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddesse Diana, and of the image which fell downe from Iupiter?

46 Seeing then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, & to do nothing rashly.

47 For yee haue brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of Churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddesse.

48 Wherefore if Demetrius and the craftsmen which are with him haue a matter against any man, the law is open, and there are deputies, let them implead one another.

49 But if yee enquire any thing concerning other matters, it shalbe determined in a lawfull assembly.

50 For wee are in danger to be called in question for this dayes vprore, there being no cause whereby we may give an account of this concourse.

51 And when he had thus spoken, he dismissed the assembly. C H A P. X X

7 Paul celebrateth the Lords supper, and preacheth.
And

C H A P. X X.

And after the uproare was ceased, Paul called vnto him the Disciples, and embrased them, and departed for to goe into Macedonia.

2 And when he had gone ouer those parts, & had given them much exhortation, he came into Greece.

3 And there abode three moneths : and when the Iewes laid wait for him, as he was about to saile into Syria, he purposed to returne thorow Macedonia.

4 And these accompanied him into Asia, Sopater of Berea : and of the Thessalonians, Aristarchus, and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe, and Timotheus : and of Asia, Tychius and Trophimus.

5 These going before, taried for vs at Troas :

6 And wee sailed away from Philippi, after the dayes of vnleauened bread, and came vnto them to Troas in tue dayes, where we abode seuen daves.

7 And vpon the first day of the weeke, when the disciples came together to breake bread, Paul prochched vnto them, ready to depart on the morrow, and continued his speech vntill midnight.

8 And there were many lights in the vpper chamber where they were gathered together.

9 And there sate in a window a certayne young man named Eutychus, being fallen into a deepe sleepe : and as Paul was long preaching, hee funke downe with sleepe, and fell downe from the thirde loft, and was taken vp dead.

10 And Paul went downe, and fell on him, and embracing him, said, Trouble not your selues, for his life is in him.

11 When hee therefore was come vp againe, and had broken bread, and eaten, and talked a long while, even vntil breake of the day, so he departed.

12 And they brought the yong man alioe, and were not a little comforted.

13 ¶ And wee went before to ship, and sailed vnto Assos, there intending to take in Paul : for so had he appointed, minding himselfe to goe afont.

14 And when he met with vs at Assos, we tooke him in, and came to Mitylene.

15 And we sailed thence, and came the next day ouer against Chios, and the next day wee arived at Samos, and taried at Trogylillum: and the next day we came to Miletus.

THE ACTES.

16 For Paul had determined to saile by Ephesus, because he would not spend the time in Asia: for he hasted, if it were possible for him, to be at Hierusalem the day of Pentecost.

17 ¶ And from Miletus hee sent to Ephesus, and called the Elders of the Church,

18 And when they were come to him, he said vnto them, Ye know from the first day þ I came into Asia, after what manner I haue bin with you at all seasons,

19 Serving the Lord with all humilitie of minde, and with many teares and temptations, which beset me by the lying in wait of the Iewes:

20 And how I kept backe nothing that was profitable vnto you, but haue shewed you, and haue taught you publikely, and from house to house,

21 Testifying both to the Iewes and also to the Greekes, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Iesus Christ.

22 And now behold, I goe bound in the spirit vnto Hierusalem, not knowing the things that shall befall me there:

23 Sane that the holy Ghost witnesseth in every citie, syng, that bonds and afflictions abide me.

24 But none of theire things moone mee, neither count I my liе deare vnto my selfe, so that I might finishe my course with ioy, and the ministerie which I haue receiuied of the Lord Iesus, to testifie the Gospell of the grace of God.

25 And now behold, I know that yee all, among whom I haue gone preaching the kingdome of God, shall see my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of all men.

27 For I haue not shunned to declare vnto you all the counsell of God.

28 ¶ Take heed therefore vnto your selues, and to all the flocke, ouer the which the holy Ghost hath made you ouerisers, to feed the Church of God, which he hath purchased with his owne blood.

29 For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among yee, not sparing the flocke.

30 Also of your owne selues shall men arise, speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.

31 These

C H A P. X X I.

31 Therefore watch, and remember that by the space of three yeeres, I ceased not to warne every one night and day with teates.

32 And now brethren I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you vp, and to give you an inheritance among all them that are sanctified.

33 I haue coueted no mans siluer, or goid, or apparel.

34 Yea, you yont selues know, that these hands haue ministred to my necessities, and to them that were with me.

35 I haue shewed you all things, how that so la-bouring, yee ought to support the weake, and to remember the words of the Lord Iesus, how hee said, It is more blessed to give then to receive.

36 ¶ And when hee had thus spoken, he kneeled downe, and prayed with them all.

37 And they all wept sore, and fell on Pauls necke and kissed him.

38 Sorrowing most of all for the wordes which he spake, that they shoulde see his face no more. And they accompanied him vnto the ship.

C H A P. X X I.

I Paul will not be diswaded from going to Hierusalem

A Nd it came to passe, that after we were gotten from them, and had lauched, we caue with a straight course vnto Choos, and the day following vnto Rhodes, and from thence vnto Patara.

2 And finding a ship sayling ouer vnto Phenicea, we went aboard and set foorth.

3 Now when we had disconuerted Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed into Syria, & landed at Tyre: for there the ship wasto vnlaide her burden.

4 And finding disciples, we tarried there seven dayes: who said to Paul through the spirit, that he shoulde not goe vp to Hierusalem.

5 And when wee had accomplished those dayes, we departed, and went our way, and they all brought vs on our way, with wines and children, till wee were out of the city: and we kneeled downe on the shore, and prayed.

6 And when we had taken our leave one of another, we tooke ship, and they returned home againe.

THE ACTES.

7 And when wee had finished our course from Tyre, we came to Ptolemais, & saluted the brethren, and abode with them one day.

8 And the next day we that were of Pauls company, departed, and came vnto Cesarea, and we entered into the house of Philip the Euangelist (which was one of the seven) and abode with him.

9 And the same man had soure daughters, virgins, which did prophesie.

10 And as wee tarried there many dayes, there came downe from Iudea a certaine Prophet, named Agabus.

11 And when he was come vnto vs, he tooke Paul girdle, and bound his owne hands and feet, & said, Thus saith the holy Ghost, So shall the Iewes at Hierusalem bind the man that oweth this girdle, and shall deliver him into the hands of the Gentiles.

12 And when we heard these things, both we and they of that place, besought him not to goe vp to Hierusalem.

13 Then Paul answered, What meane ye to weepe and to breake mine heart? for I am ready not to be bound onely, but also to die at Hierusalem for the Name of the Lord Iesus.

14 And when hee would not be perswaded, we geased, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

15 And after those dayes we tooke vp our cartinges, and went to Hierusalem.

16 There went with vs also certaine of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought wth them one Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge.

17 And when wee were come to Hierusalem, the brethren received vs gladly.

18 And the day following Paul went in with vs vnto Iames, and all the Elders were present.

19 And when he had saluted them, hee declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministry.

20 And when they heard it, they glorified the Lord, and said vnto him, Thou seest, brother, how many thousands of Iewes there are which beleue, and they are all zealous of the Law:

21 And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Iewes which are among the Gentiles to forsake

C H A P. XXI.

foriske Moses, saying, that they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to walke after thy custome.

22 What is it therefore? the multitude must needs come together: for they will heare y^e thou art come.

23 Doe therefore this that wee say to thee: Wee haue fourte men whiche haue a voyce on them,

24 Them take and purifiethy selfe with them, and be at charges with them, that they may haue their heads: & all may know y^e those things whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing but that thou thy selfe also walkest orderly, & keepest y^e law.

25 As touching the Gentiles which belewe, wee haue written and concluded, That they obserue no such thing, saue onely that they keepe themselves from things offered to idols, and from bloud, and from strangled, and from fornication.

26 Then Paul tooke the men, and the next day purifying himselfe with them, entred into the Temple to signifie the accomplishment of the dayes of purification, vntill that an offering should be offered for every one of them,

27 And when theseuen dayes were almost ended, the Iewes which were of Asia, when they saw him in the Temple, stirred vp all the people, and laid hands on him,

28 Crying out, Men of Israel, helpe: this is the man that teacheth all men every where againtt the people, and the Law, and this place: and farther brought Greekes also into the Temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 (For they had seene before with him in the citie, Trophimus an Ephesian, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the Temple.)

30 And all the city was moued, and the people ran togethor: and they tooke Paul, and drew him out of the Temple: & shortly the dores were shut.

31 And as they went about to kill him, tidings came vnto the chiefe Captaine of the band, that all Hierusalem was in anoyntre:

32 Who immediatly took scouldiers & Centurions, & ran down vnto them: & when they saw the chiefe Captaine and the scouldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chiefe Captaine came neare, & tooke him, & commanded him to be bound w^t two chaines,

THE ACTES.

and demanded who he was and what he had done.
34 And some cryed one thing, some another among the multitude: and when he could not know the certaintie for the tumult, he commanded him to be carried into the Castle.

35 And when he came vpon the staires, so it was that he was borne of the souldiers, for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after crying, Away with him,

37 And as Paul was to be led into the Castle, he said vnto the chiefe captaine, May I speake vnto thee? who said, Canst thou speake Greeke?

38 Art not thou that Egyptian which before these dayes madest an vprore, & leddest out into the wildernes soure thousand men that were murderers?

39 But Paul said, I am a man which am a lew of Tarsus, a city in Cilicia, a citien of no meane city;

& I beseech thee suffer mee to speake vnto thy people.

40 And when he had gauen him lecence, Paul stood on the staires, and beckened with the hand vnto the people: and when there was made a great silence, he spake vnto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying,

C H A P. X X I I.

1 *Paul declareth how he was converted.*

M EN, brethren, and fathers, heare yee my defense which I make now vnto you.

2 (And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them they kept still more silence, & he saith)

3 I am verily a man which am a lew, borne in Tarsus, a citie in Cilicia, yet brought vp in this citie, at the feet of Gamaliel, and taught according to the perfect maner of the Law of the fathers, and was zealous towards God, as ye all are this day.

4 And I persecuted this way vnto death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women.

5 As also the high Priest doth beare me witness, and all the estate of the Elders: from whom also I received letters vnto the brethren, and went to Damascus to bring them which were there, bound vnto Hierusalem for to be punished.

6 And it came to passe, that as I made my journey, and was come nigh vnto Damascus about noone, suddenly there shone from heauen a great light round about me.

7 And

C H A P. XXII.

7 And I fell vnto the ground, and heard a voyce saying vnto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?

8 And I answered, Who art thou Lord? And he said vnto mee, I am Iesus of Nazareth whom thou persecutest.

9 And they that were with mee saw indeed the light, and were afraid; but they heard not the voyce of him that spake to me.

10 And I said, What shall I doe, Lord? And the Lord said vnto me, Arise, and goe into Damascus, and there it shall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to doe.

11 And when I could not see for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damascus.

12 And one Ananias, a devout man according to the Law, hauing a good report of all the Iewes which dwelt there;

13 Came vnto me, and stood, and said vnto mee, Brother Saul, receive thy sight. And the same houre I looked vp vpon him.

14 And he said, The God of our fathers hath chosen thee, y thou shouldest know his will, and see that Just One, and shouldest heare y voyce of his mouth.

15 For thou shalt be his witness vnto all men, of what thou hast seen and heard.

16 And now why tarriest thou? Arise and be baptizt, and wash away thy sinnes, calling on the Name of the Lord.

17 And it came to passe, that when I was come againe to Hierusalem, even while I prayed in the Temple, I was in a trance,

18 And saw him saying vnto mee, Make hast, and get thee quickly out of Hierusalem: for they will not receive thy testimony concerning me.

19 And I said, Lord they know that I imprisoned & beat in euery Synagogue them y beleueed on thee

20 And when the blood of thy martyr Steven was shed, I also was standing by, and coniecting vnto his death, and kept the rayment of them that slew him.

21 And he said vnto me, Depart: for I will send thee farre hence vnto the Gentiles.

22 And they gaue him audience vnto this word, & then lift vp their voyces, and said, Away with such a fellow

THE ACTES.

Follow frō the earth: for it is not fit y he shold live.

23 And as they cryed out, and cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the ayre.

24 The chiefe Captaine commanded him to bee brought into he Cattle, and bade that he shold be examined by scourging: that he might know wherefore they cryed so against him.

25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said vnto the Centurion y stood by, Is it lawfull for you to scourge a man y is a Romane, and uncondemned?

26 Wher the Centurion heard that, hee went and told the chiefe captaine, saying, Take heed what thou doest, for this man is a Romane.

27 Then the chiefe Captaine came, and said unto him, Tell me, art thou a Romane? He said, Yea.

28 And the chiefe Captaine answered, With a great summe obtained I this freedome. And Paul said, But I was free borne.

29 Then straightway they departed from him which shold haue examined him: and the chiefe Captaine also was afraid after hee knew that he was a Romane, and because he had bound him.

30 On the morrow, because he would haue knowne the certainty whereof hee was accused of the Jewes, he loosed him from his bands, & commanded the chiefe Priests and all their Councill to appare, and brought Paul downe, and set him before them.

C H A P. XXIII.

3 As Paul pleadeth his cause, Ananias commandeth to smite him. 7 Discression among his accusers.

A Nd Paul earnestly beholding the Councill, said, Men and brethren, I haue liued in all good conscience before God vntill this day.

3 And the hie Priest Ananias commanded them that stood by him, to smite him on the mouth.

3 Then saith Paul vnto him, God shall smite thee thou whited wall: for sittest thou to judge me after the Law, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to the Law?

4 And they that stood by, said, Reuilest thou Gods high Priest?

5 Then said Paul, I wist not, brethren, that hee was the high Priest: For it is written, Thou shalt not speake euill of the ruler of thy people.

6 But

C H A P. XXII.

6 But when Paul perceiued that the one part were Saddues, and the other Pharisees, hee cryed out in the Councill, Men and brethren, I am a Pharisee, the sonne of a Pharisee : of the hope and resurrection of the dead, I am called in question.

7 And when hee had so said, there arose a dissencion betweene the Pharisees and the Sadduces : and the multitude was diuided.

8 For the Sadduces say that there is no resurrection, neither Angel nor spirit ; but the Pharisees confess both.

9 And thererose a great cry : and the Scribes that were of the Pharisees part arose, and stroake, saying, We find no euill in this man but if a spirit or an Angel hath spoken to him, let vs not fight against God.

10 And when there arose a great dissencion, the chiefe Captaine fearing lest Paul shoulde haue been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the souldiers to goe downe, and to take him by force from among them, and to bring him into the Castle.

11 And the night following, the Lord sted by him, and said, Be of good cheere, Paul : for as thou haft testified of me in Ierusalem, so must thou beare witnesse also at Rome.

12 And when it was day, certayne of the Lewes banded together, and bound themselves vnder a curse, saying, That they would neither eat nor drinke till they had killed Paul.

13 And they were more then fourty which had made this conspiracy.

14 And they came to the chiefe Priests and Elders, and said, Wee haue bound our selues vnder a great curse, that we will eat nothing till we haue slaine Paul.

15 Now therfore ye with the Councill, signifie to the chiefe Capraine, that he bring him downe vnto you to morrow, as though hee would enquire something more perfectly concerning him : and we, or euer he come vnto us, are ready to kill him.

16 And when Pauls sisters sonne heard of their laying in wayte, he went and entred into the Castle, and told Paul.

17 Then Paul called one of the Centurions vnto him, and said, Bring this young man vnto the chiefe Cap-

THE ACTES.

Captaine : for he hath a certayne thing to tell him.

18 So he tooke him and brought him to the chiefe Captaine, and said, Paul the prisoner called me vnto him, and prayed mee to bring this young man vnto thee, who hath something to lay vnto thee.

19 Then the chiefe Captaine tooke him by the hand, and went with him aside priuately, and asked him, What is that thou hast to tell me ?

20 And he said, The Iewes haue agreed to desire thee, that thou wouldest bring downe Paul to morrow into the Councell, as though they would enquire somewhat of him more perfectly.

21 But doe not thou yeeld vnto them, for there lie in wait for him of them mo then forty men w haue bound themselves with an oath, that the will neither eate nor drinke, till they haue killed him : and now are they ready, looking for a promise from thee.

22 So the chiefe Captaine then let the yong man depart, and charged him, See thou tell no man, that thou hast shewed these things to me.

23 And he called vnto him two Centurions, saying, Make ready two hundred souldiers to goe to Cesarea, and horsmen threescore and ten, and spearmen two hundred, at the third houre of the night:

24 And provide them beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring him safe vnto Felix the governor.

25 And he wrote a letter after this manner :

26 Claudius Lysias vnto the most excellent Governor, Felix sendeth greeting.

27 This man was taken of the Iewes, and shoulde haue beeene killed of them: Then came I with an army, and rescued him, hauing vnderstood that he was a Roman.

28 And when I wold haue knowne the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him sooth into their Councell,

29 Whom I perceiued to be accused of questions of their Law, but to haue nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds.

30 And when it was told me, how that the Iewes laid wait for the man, I sent straightway to thee, and gaue commandement to his accusers also, to say before thee what they had against him. Farewell,

31 Then the souldiers, as it was commanded them, tooke

C H A P. X X I I I .

tooke Paul, and brought him by night to Antipatris.
32 On the morrow, they left the horsemen to goe
with him, and returned to the Castle.

33 W ho when they came to Cesarea, and deliu-
red the Epistle to the Gouvernour, presented Paul al-
so before him.

34 And when the Gouvernour had read *the letter*,
he asked of what prouince hee was. And when hee
understood that he was of Cilicia:

35 I will heare thee, said he, when thine accusers
are also come. And hee commanded him to be kept
in Herods judgement hall.

C H A P. X X I I I I .

1 *Paul accused by Tertullus, answereth for himself.*

A nd after five dayes, Ananias the high Priest
descended with the Elders, and with a certayne
Oratour named Tertullus, who informed the Gouer-
nour against Paul.

2 And when he was called foorth, Tertullus be-
gan to accuse him, saying, Seeling that by thee wee
enjoy great quietnesse, and that very worthy deedes
are done vnto this nation by thy prouidence:

3 We accept it always, and in all places, most
noble Felix, with all thankfulnessse.

4 Notwithstanding, that I be not further tedious
vnto thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldest heare vs,
of thy clemency a few words.

5 For we haue found this man a pestilent fellow,
and a mouer of sedition among all the lewes
throughout the world, and a ringleader of the sect
of the Nazarens:

6 Who also hath gone about to prophan the
Temple: whom wee tooke, and would haue judged
according to our Law.

7 But the chiese captaine Lysias came vpon vs, and
w^t great violence tooke him away out of our handes:

8 Commanding his accusers to come vnto thee, by
examining of whom, thy selfe mayest take know-
ledge of all these things, whereof we accuse him.

9 And the lewes also assented, saying, that these
things were so.

10 Then Paul after that the Gouvernour had bee-
kened vnto him to speake, answered, Forasmuch
as I know that them haue beeene of many yeres a
Judge

THE ACTES.

Judge vnto this nation, I doe the more cheerfully, answe for my selfe :

11 Because that thou mayest vnderstand that there are yet bat twelue dayes, since I went vp to Hierusalem for to worship :

12 And they neither found me in the Temple disputing with any man, neither rasing vp the people, neither in the Synagogues, nor in the citie :

13 Neither can they prooue the thngs whereof they accuse me.

14 But this I confesse vnto thee, that after the way which they call heresie, so worship I the God of my fathers, beleeling all things which are written in the Law and the Prophets.

15 And haue hope towards God, which they themselues also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of iust and vniet.

16 And herein doe I exercise my selfe, to haue alwayes a conscience voyd of offence toward God, and toward men.

17 Now after many yeeres, I came to bring almes to my nation, and offerings ;

18 Wherupon certaine Iewes from Asia found me purified in the Temple, neither with multitude, nor with tumult :

19 Who ought to haue beene heere before thee, and obiect if they had ought against me.

20 Or else let these same here say, if they haue soild any euill doing in me, while I stood before þ Council,

21 Except it be for this one voyce, that I cryed standing among them, Touching the resurrection of the dead I am called in question by you this day.

22 And whē Felix heard these things, hauing more perfect knowledge of that way, he deferred them, and laid, When Lysias the chiefe Captaine shall come downe, I will know the vttermost of your matter.

23 And he comanded a Centurion to keep Paul, & to let him haue liberty, and þ he shold forbide none of his acquaintance to minister, or come vnto him.

24 And after certayne dayer, when Felix came with his wife Drusilla, which was a lew, he sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the faith in Christ.

25 And as he reasoned of righteousness, temperance, and iudgement to come, Felix trembled and answ-

C H A P. XXV.

answering, Goe thy way for this time, when I haue a
conuenient season, I will call for thee.

26 He hoped also that money shold haue beene
givene him of Paul, y he might loose him: wherefore
he sent for him the ostner, and corpormuned with him.

27 But after two yeeres Porcius Festus came into
Felix roome: and Felix willing to shew the lowes a
pleasure, left Paul bound.

C H A P. XXV.

2 Paul accused before Festus. 8 answeresh for his-
selfe.

Now when Festus was come into the promince
after three dayes he ascended from Cesarea to
Hierusalem.

3 Then the high Priest, & the chiefe of the Iewes
enformed him against Paul, and besought him,

4 And desired fauour against him, y he would send
for him to Ierusalem, laying wait in sy way to kil him.

4 But Festus answered, that Paul shold be kept
at Cesarea, and that he himselfe would depart shortly thither.

5 Let them therefore, said he, which among you
are able, goe downe with me, and accuse this man,
if there be any wickednesse in him.

6 And when hee had tarried among them more
then ten dayes, he went downe vnto Cesarea, and the
next day sitting in the iudgement seat, commanded
Paul to be broughte.

7 And when he was come, the Iewes which came
downe from Hierusalem, stood round about, and
laid many and grievous complaints against Paul,
which they could not proue.

8 While he answered for himselfe, Neither against
the law of the Iewes, neither against the Temple, nor
yet against Cesar, haue I offended any thing at all.

9 But Festus willing to doe the Iewes a pleasure
answered Paul, and said, Wilt thou ge vp to Hieru-
salem, & there be iudged of these things before me?

10 Then said Paul, I stand at Cesars iudgement
seat, where I ought to be iudged; to the Iewes haue
I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.

11 For if I bee an offender, or haue committed
any thing worthy of death, I refuse not to die: but if
there be none of these things wherof these accorde me

THE ACTES.

no man may deliuer me vnto them, I appeale vnto Cesar.

12 Then Festus when hee had conferred with the Conuall, answered, Haft thou appealed vnto Cesar? vnto Cesar shalt thou goe.

13 And after certaine dayes, King Agrippa and Bernice, came vnto Cesarea to salute Festus.

14 And when they had beeene there many dayes, Festus declared Pauls cause vnto the King, saying, There is a certaine man left in bonds by Felix:

15 About whom when I was at Hierusalem, the chiefe Priestes and the Elders of the Iewes informed me, desiringe to haue iudgement against him:

16 To whom I answered, It is not the manner of the Romanes to deliuer any man to die, before that bee which is accused, haue the accusers ffece to face, and haue licence to answer for himselfe concerning the crime laid against him.

17 Therefore when they were come hither without any delay, on fyre morrow I sate on the iudgement seat, and commanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Against whom when the accusers stood vp, they brought none accusatiō of such things as I supposed,

19 But had certaine questions against him of their owne superstition, and of one Iesus which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be aline.

20 And because I doubted of such manner of questions, I asked him whether he would goe to Hierusalem: and there be iudged of these matters.

21 But when Paul had appealed to bee referred vnto the hearing of Augustus, I commauded him to be kept, till I might send him to Cesar.

22 Then Agrippa said vnto Festus, I would also heare the man my selfe. To morrow, said hee, thou shalt heare him.

23 And on the morrow when Agrippa was come and Bernice with great pompe, and was entred into the place of hearing, with the chiefe Captaines, and principall men of the citie; at Festus commandement Paul was brought forth.

24 And Festus said, King Agrippa, & all men which are here present with vs, ye see this man about who all the multitude of the Iewes haue dealt with mee, both at Hierusalem, and also here, crying that hee ought not to liue any longer.

25 But

C H A P. XXVI.

25 But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and that he himselfe hath appealed to Augustus, I haue determined to send him.

26 Of whom I haue no certaine thing to write vnto my Lord: Wherfore I haue brought him forth before you, and especially before thee, O king Agrippa, that after examination had, I might haue somewhat to write.

27 For it seemeth vnto me unreasonable to send a prisoner, and not withall to signifie the crimes laid against him.

C H A P. XXVI.

2 Paul before Agrippa declareth his selfe.

T hen Agrippa said vnto Paul, Thou art permitted to speake for thy selfe. Then Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himselfe.

3 I thinke my selfe happy, king Agrippa, because I shall answere for my selfe this day before thee touching all the things, whereof I am accused of the Jewes:

4 Especially because I know thee to be expert in all customes & questions which are among the Jewes wherefore I beseech thee to heare me patiently.

5 My maner of life from my youth, which was at the first among mine owne nation at Hierusalem, knew all the Jewes.

6 And now I stand and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God vnto our fathers:

7 Vnto which promise our twelve tribes instant-
ly serning God day and night, hope to come: For
which hys sake, King Agrippa, I am accused of
the Jewes.

8 Why shoulde it be thought a thing incredible with you, that God shoulde raise the dead?

9 I verily thought with my selfe, that I ought to doe many things contrary to the Name of Jesus of Nazareth:

10 Which thing I also did in Hierusalem, & many of the Saints did I shut vp in prison, hauing received authoritie from the chiefe Priests, and when they were put to death, I gaue my voyce against them.

11 And

THE ACTES.

11 And I punished them oft in every Synagogue, and compelled them to blasphemē, and being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted them even vnto strange cities.

12 Wherupon, as I went to Damascus, with authority and commission from the chiefe Priests;

13 At midday, O king, I saw in the way a light from heauen, aboue the brightnesse of the Sunne, shining round about me, and them which journeyed with me.

14 And when wee were all fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking vnto me, and saying in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me? It is hard for thee to kicke against the pricker.

15 And I said, Who art thou Lord? And he said, I am Iesus, whom thou persecuteſt.

16 But rife and stand vpon thy feet, for I have appeared vnto thee for this purpose, to make thee a minister and witnesſe, both of these things which thou haſt ſene, and of those things in the which will appear vnto thee.

17 Delyning thee from the people, and from the Gentiles, vnto whom now I ſend thee,

18 To open their eyes, and to turne them from Clarkenes to light, and from the power of Satan vnto God, that they may receiue forgiuenesse of finnes, and inheritance among them which are ſanctified by faith that is in me.

19 Wherupon, O king Agrippa, I was not diſobedient vnto the heauenly vision:

20 But ſhewed firſt vnto them of Damascus, and at Hierusalem, and throughout all the coasts of Iudea, and then to the Gentiles, that they ſhould repent & turne to God, and doe workes meet for repenteſce.

21 For their cauſes the Jewes caught mee in the Temple, and went about to kill mee.

22 Having therefore obtained helpe of God, I continue vnto this day, wiſneſſing both to ſmal and great, ſaying none other things then thofe which the Prophets and Moſes did ſay ſhould come.

23 That Chriſt ſhould ſuffer, and that hee ſhould be the firſt that ſhould rife from the dead, & ſhould ſhew light vnto the people, and to the Gentiles.

24 And as hee thus ſpake for himſelue, Festus ſaid with

C H A P. XXVII.

with a loude voyce, Paul, thou art beside thy selfe,
much learning doth make thee mad.

25 But hee laid, I am not mad, most noble Festus,
but speake forth the words of trneth and sobernesse.

26 For the king knoweth of these things, before
whom also I speake treuly: for I am perswaded, that
none of these things are hidden from him, for this
thing was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, beleueuest thou the Prophets? I
know that thou beleueuest.

28 Then Agrippa said vnto Paul, Almost thou
perswadest me to be a Christian.

29 And Paul said, I would to God y not only thou,
but also all that heare me this day, were both almost
and altogether such as I am, except these bonds.

30 And when hee had thus spoken, the king rose
vp, and the gouernour and Bernice, and they that
sat with them,

31 And when they were gone aside, they talked be-
tweene themselves, saying, This man doth nothing
worthy of death, or of bonds.

32 Then said Agrippa vnto Festus, This man
might haue beene set at libertie, if hee had not ap-
pealed vnto Cesar.

C H A P. XXVIII.

1 Paul shipping towards Rome, 10 foretellesh the
danger of the voyage.

A Nd when it was determined, that wee shold
saile into Italy, they deliuered Paul, and cer-
taine other prisoners, vnto one named Julius a Ce-
ntrion of Augustus band.

2 And entring into a ship of Adramyttium, wee
lanched, meaning to saile by the coasts of Asia, one
Aristarchus a Macedonian of Thessalonica being
with vs.

3 And the next day wee touched at Sidon: And
Julius courteously intreated Paul, and gaue him li-
bertie to goe to his friends to refresh himselfe.

4 And when we had lanched from thence, we saile-
d vnder Cyprus, because the winds were contrary.

5 And when we had sailed ouer the sea of Cicilia,
and Pamphylia, we came to Myra, a city of Lysia.

6 And there the Centurion found a ship of Alex-
andria fayling into Italy, and he put vs therto.

7 And

THE ACTES.

7 And when wee had sailed slowly many dayes, and scarce were come ouer against Gnidus, the wind not sufficing vs, we sailed vnder Creete, ouer against Salmonae:

8 And hardly passing it, came vnto a place which is called, The faire heauens, nigh whereunto was the citie of Lasez.

9 Now when much time was spent, and when sailing was now dangerous, because the Fast was now already past, Paul admonished them,

10 And said vnto them, Sirs, I perceiue that this voyage will be with hurt and much damage, not onely of the lading and shippe, but also of our liues.

11 Neuerthelesse, the Centurion beleaued the maister and the owner of the shipp, more then these things which were spoken by Paul.

12 And because the hauen was not commodious to winter in, the more part aduised to depart thence also, if by any meanes they might attaine to Phenice, and there to win' er, which is an hauen of Creet, and lyeth toward the Southwest, and Northwest.

13 And when the South wind blew softly, supposing that they had obtained their purpose, loosing thence, they sailed close by Creet.

14 But not long after, there arose against it a tempestuous wind, called Enroclylon.

15 And when the shipp was caught, and could not beare vp into the wind, we let her drive.

16 And running vnder a certayne Iland, wh^e is called Chiuda, we had much worke to come by the boat:

17 Which whē they had taken vp, they vsed helps, vndergirding the shipp, & fearing lest they shoulde fall into the quicklinds, strake saile, and so were driven,

18 And being exceedingly tossed with a tempest the next day, they lightened the shipp.

19 And the third day wee cast out with our owne hands the tackling of the shipp.

20 And when neither Sunne nor stares in many dayes appeared, and no small tempest lay on vs, all hope that we should be saued was then taken away.

21 But after long abstinence, Paul stood boord in the mids of them, and said, Sirs, ye shoulde haue hearkened vnto me, and not haue loosed from Creet, and so haue gained this haring and losse,

22 And

C H A P. X X V I I.

22 And now I exhort you to be of good cheere, for there shall bee no losse of any mans life among you, but of the ship.

23 For there stood by me this night the Angel of God, whose I am, and whom I serue,

24 Saying, Feare not Paul, thou must be broughte before Cesar, and loe, God hath giuen thee all them that saile with thee.

25 Wherefore sir, be of good cheere : for I belieue God, that it shalbe even as it was told me,

26 Howbeit we must be cast vpon a certain lland.

27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as we were driven vp and downe in Adria about mid-night, the shipmen deemed that they drew neare to some countrey :

28 And sounded, and found it twenty fathoms : and when they had gone a little further, they sounded againe, and found it fiftene fathomes.

29 Then fearing lest we should hane fallen vpon rocks, they cast foure anchors out of the stern, and wylched for the day.

30 And as the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, when they had let downe the boat into the sea, vnder colour as though they would haue cast anchors out of the fore-skip,

31 Paul said to the Centurioun, and to the souldiers, Except these abide in the ship, ye cannot be saved.

32 Then the souldiers cut off the topes of the boat, and let her fall off.

33 And while the day was comming on, Paul bofought them all to take meat, saying, This day is the fourteenth day that yee haue tarried, and continued fastinge, hauing taken nothing.

34 Wherefore, I pray you to take some meat, for this is for your health : for there shall not an haire fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when he had thus spoken, he tooke bread, and gaue thankes to God in presence of them all, and when he had broken it he began to eat.

36 Then were they all of good cheere, and they also tooke some meat.

37 And we were in all in the ship, two hundred threescore and fiftene sonles.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened

THE ACTES.

tened the ship, and cast out the wheat into the sea,

39 And when it was day, they knew not the land
but they discouered a certaine creeke, with a shore,
into the which they were minded if it were possible
to thrust in the ship.

40 And when they had taken vp the anchors, they
committed *themselves* vnto the Sea, and loosed the
rudder bands, and hoised vp the maine saile to the
wind, and made toward thore.

41 And falling into a place where two seas met,
they ran the ship a ground, and the forepart stooke
fast, and remained vnmoueable, but the hindre part
was broken with the violence of the waves.

42 And the souldiers counsell was to kill the pri-
soners, lest any of them shoulde swim out, and escape.

43 But the Centurion, willing to save Paul, kept
them from their purpose, and commanded that they
which could swim, shoulde cast themselves first into
the sea, and get to land :

44 And the rest, some on boords, and some on
broken pieces of the ship : and so it came to passe
that they escaped all safe to land.

C H A P. XXVIII.

1 The Barbarians kindnesse to Paul.

A Nd when they were escaped, then they knew
that the lland was called Melita.

2 And the Barbarous people shewed vs no little
kindnesse : for they kindled a fire, and received vs
every one because of the present raine, and because
of the cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks,
and laid them on the fire, there came a viper out
of the heat, and stued on his hand.

4 And when the Barbarians saw the venomous
beast hang on his hand, they said among themselves,
No doubt this man is a murderer, whom though he
hath escaped y sea, yet vengeance suffereth not to live.

5 And hee shooke off the beast into the fire, and
felt no harme.

6 Howbeit, they looked when hee shoulde haue
swolne, or fallen downe dead suddenly : but after
they had looked a great while, and saw no harme
come to him, they changed their mindes, and said,
That he was a God.

C H A P. X X V I I I .

7 In the same quarters were possessions of þ chiefe man of the lland whose name was Publius, who received vs, and lodged vs three dayes courteously.

8 And it came to passe that the father Publius lay sicke of a feuer, and of a biondy fluxe, to whom Paul entred in, and prayed, and laid his hands on him, and healed him.

9 So when this was done, others also which had diseases in the lland, came and were healed:

10 Who also honoured vs with many honours, and when wee departed, they laded vs with such things as were necessary.

11 And after three moneths we departed in a ship of Alexandria which had wintered in the Isle, whose signe was Castor and Pollux.

12 And landing at Syracuse, we taried there threedayes.

13 And from thence we set a compasse, and came to Rheygium, and after one day the South wind blew, and we came the next day to Puteoli:

14 Whete we found brethren & were desired to aby wþ the seuen dayes, & so we went toward Rome.

15 And from thence when the brethren heard of vs, they came to meet vs a farre, as Appij Forum, and the three Tanernes: whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and tooke courage.

16 And when we came to Rome, the Centurion delivered the Prisoners to the captaine of the guard: but Paul was sufferred to dwell by himselfe, with a soldier that kept him.

17 And it came to passe, that after three dayes Paul called þ chiefe of the lewes together. And when they were come together, he said vnto them, men and brethren, though I haue committed nothing against the people or customes of our fathers, yet was I deliuered prisoner from Hierusalē into þ hinds of the Romans.

18 Who when they had examined me, would haue let me go, because there was no cause of death in me.

19 But when the ewes spake agaist it, I was constrained to appeale vnto Caesar, not that I ought to accuse my nation of.

20 For this cause therefore haue I called for you, to see you, and to speake with you: because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chaine.

TO THE ROMANES.

21 And they said vnto him, We neither received letters out of Iudea concerning thee, neather any of the brethren ſcame, shewed or ſpake any harme of thee;

22 But we desire to heare of thee what thou thinkeſt. for as conēcerning this ſect, we know that euery where it is ſpoken againſt.

23 And when they had appointed him a day, there came many vnto him into his lodging, to whom he expounded and teſtified the kingdome of God, perſwading them conēcerning Iefus both out of ſ law of Moses, & out of ſ Prophets, frō morning till evening,

24 And ſome beleueed the things which were ſpoken, and ſome beleueed not.

25 And when they agreed not among themſelues, they departed, after that Paul had ſpoken one word, Well ſpake the holy Ghost by Elias the Prophet vnto our fathers,

26 Saying, Goe vnto this people, and ſay, Hearing ye thal heare, and ſhall not understand, and ſeeing ye ſhall ſee, and not perceive.

27 For the heart of this people is waxed groſſe, and their eares are dull of hearing, and their eyes haue they closed, leſt they ſhould ſee with their eyes, and heare with their eares, & vnderſtand with their heart, & ſhould be conuerted, & I ſhould heale them.

28 Be it knowne therefore vnto you, that the ſalvation of God is ſent vnto the Gentiles, and that they will heare it.

29 And when he had ſaid theſe words the Jewes departed, & had great reaſoning among themſelues.

30 And Paul dwelt two whole yeeres in his owne hired house, and received all that came in vnto him,

31 Preaching the kingdome of God, and teaching thole things which conerne the Lord Iefus Christ, with all confidence, no man fo bidding him.

The Epifle of Paul the Apostle to the Romanes.

C H A P. I.

1 Pauls calling. 18 Gods anger againſt all ſinnes.

Paul a ſervant of Iefus Christ, called to be an Apostle ſeparated vnto the Gospel of God.

2 (Which he had promiſed afore by his

C H A P. I.

(his Prophets in the holy Scriptures.)

3 Concerning his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord, & was made of the seed of Dauid according to the flesh.

4 And declared to be the Sonne of God, with power, according to the Spirit of holynesse, by the resurrection from the dead.

5 By whom we have received grace and Apostleship, for obedience to the faith among all nations for his Name,

6 Among whō are ye also ſealed of Iesus Christ.

7 To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be Saints: Grace to you, and peace from God our Father and the Lord Iesus Christ.

8 First, I thanke my God through Iesus Christ for you all, that your faith is ſpoken of throughout the whole world.

9 For God is my witnesſe, whoen I ſerve with my ſpirit in the Gofpel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you alwayes in my prayers.

10 Making request, (if by any meaneſ now at length, I might haue a prosperous journey by the wil of God) to come vnto you.

11 For I long to ſee you, ſy I may impart vnto you ſome ſpirituall gift, to ſend you may be eftablifhed.

12 That is, that I may be comforted together with you, by the mutnall fafh both of you and me.

13 Now I would not haue you ignorant, breſthen, that ofteentimes I purpoſed to come vnto you, (but was let hitherto) that I might haue ſome fruit among you alſo, even as among other Gentiles.

14 I am debter both to the Greekes, and to the Barbarians, both to the wiſe, and to the vnwiſe.

15 So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the Gofpel to you that are at Rome alſo.

16 For I am not alhamed of the Gofpel of Christ, & for it is the power of God vnto ſaluation, to enery one that beleueueth, to the lew fift, & alſo to ſy Greek.

17 For therein is the righteouſneſſe of God reuealed from faith to faith, as it is written, The iuftiſt shall liue by faith.

18 For the wrath of God is reuealed from heauen against all vngodlyneſſe, and vairighteouſnes of men, who ho'd the truthe in vrighteouſneſſe.

19 Beconſe that which may be knowne of God, is manifest

TO THE ROMANS.

manifest in them, for God hath shewed it unto them,

20 For the inuisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearely seene, being vnderstood by the things that are made, *even* his eternall power & God, so that they are without excuse:

21 Because that when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankefull, but became vaine in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened:

22 Professing themselues to be wise, they becamefooles,

23 And changed the glory of the vncorruptible God, into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and soure footed beasts, and creeping things;

24 Wherelore God also gave them vp to vncleannessesse, through the lusts of their owne hearts, to dishonour their owne bodies betweene themselues:

25 Who changed the trueth of God into a lie, and worshipped and serued the creature more then the Creatour, who is blessed for euer, Amen.

26 For this cause, God gave them vp vnto vile affections: for even their women did change the naturall vse into that which is against nature:

27 And likewise also the men, leaving the naturall vse of the woman, burned in their lust one towards another, then with men working that which is vnseemely, and receiving in themselues that recompence of their error which was meere.

28 And even as they did not like to retaine God in their knowledge, God gave them ouer to a reprobate mind, to doe those things which are not conuenient:

29 Being filled with all vnrigheteousnesse, fornication, wickednesse, couetousnesse, maliciousnesse, full of enuie, murther, debate, deceit, malignity, whisperers,

30 Backbiters, haters of God, despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of euil things, disobedient to parents,

31 Without vnderstanding, covenant breakers, without naturall affection, implacable, vnmercifull:

32 Who knowing the judgement of God, (that they commit such things, are worthy of death) not onely do the same, but haue pleasure in them that do them.

CHAP. II.

3 They that condemne sin in others, and yet sinne, are inexcusable, *9* whether they be Jewes or Gentiles.

These.

C H A P. II.

T Herefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoeuer thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thy selfe, for thou that judgest, doest the same things.

2 But we are sure, the judgement of God is according to trueth, against them which comit such things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O man that judgest them which doe such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgement of God?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness, and forbearance, and long suffering, not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But after thy hardnes, and impenitent heart, treasurest vnto thy selfe wrath, against the day of wrath, and revelation of the righteous judgement of God:

6 Who will render to every man according to his deeds:

7 To them, who by patient continuance in well doing, seeke for glory, and honour, and immortality, eternall life:

8 But vnto them that are contentious, and doe not obey the trueth, but obey vnrighousnes, indigation, and wrath,

9 Tribulation, & anguish vpon every soule of man that doth euill, of the lew first, & also of the Gentile.

10 But glory, honour and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the lew first, & also to the Gentile.

11 For there is no respect of persons with God:

12 For as many as haue sinned without Law, shall also perish without Law: and as many as haue sinned in the Law, shall be iudged by the Law,

13 For not the hearers of the Law are iust before God, but the doers of the Law shall be iustified:

14 For when the Gentiles which haue not the law, doe by nature the things contained in the law: these having not the Law, are a law vnto themselves.

15 Which shew the worke of the Law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witnesse, and their thoughts the meane while accusing or else excusing one another:

16 In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Iesus Christ, according to my Gosel.

17 Behold, thou art called a lew, and restest in the Law, and makest thy boast of God:

TO THE ROMANES.

18 And knowest his will, and approvest the things
that are more excellent, being intrusted out of his law,

19 And art confident that thou thy selfe art a guide
of the blind, a light of them which are in darkness;

20 An instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes;
which hast the forme of knowledge, and of the truth
in the law:

21 Thou therefore which teachest another, te-
achest thou not thy selfe? thou that preachest a man
should not steale, doest thou steale?

22 Thou that sayest a man should not commit ad-
ultery, doest thou commit adultery? thou that ab-
horrest idoles, doest thou commit sacrilege?

23 Thou that makest thy boast of the Law, through
breaking the Law, dishonourist thou God?

24 For the Name of God is blasphemed among
the Gentiles, through you, as it is written:

25 For circumcision verely profiteth, if thou keepe
the Law; but if thou be a breaker of the Law, thy cir-
cumcision is made vncircumcision.

26 Therefore if the vncircumcision keepe the
righteousnesse of the Law, shall not his vncircum-
cision be counted for circumcision?

27 And shall not vncircumcision which is by na-
ture, if it fulfill the Law, judge thee, who by the let-
ter and circumcision, doest transgresse the Law?

28 For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly,
neither is that circumcision which is outward in the flesh:

29 But he is a Jew which is one inwardly, and cir-
cumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in
the letter, whose praise is not of men, but of God.

C H A P. III.

IThe Ieromes prerogative. 9 Yet the Law convinceth
them of sinnes. 29 Ent all are iustified by faith.

WHat aduantage then hath the Jew? or what
profit is there of circumcision?

2 Much every way: chiefly, because that vnto
them were committed the Oracles of God.

3 For what if some did not believe? shall their
unbelief make the faith of God without effect?

4 God forbid: yea, let God be true, but every
man a liar, as it is written, That thou mightest be in-
stified in thy sayings, and mightest ouercome when
thou art judged.

CHAP. III.

5 But if our vngentlemanlynes command the righteouſnes of God, what shall we ſay? Is God vngentlemanly who taketh vengeance? (I ſpeake as a man.)

6 God forbids: for the how that God iudges the world?

7 For if the trueth of God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glory, why yet am I alio in-ged as a fanner?

8 And not rather as we be flanderously reported, and as ſome affirme that we ſay, let vs doe euill, that good may come: whose damnation is iuit.

9 What then? are we better then they? No, in no wiſe: for we haue before prooved both Jewes and Gentiles, that they are all vnder ſinne?

10 As it is written, There is none righteous, no not one:

11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that ſeeketh after God.

12 They are all gone out of the way. they are together become vnprouitable, there is none that doeth good no not one.

13 Their throat is an open ſepulchre, with their tongues they haue vſed deceit, the poion of aspes is vnder their lips:

14 Whole mouth is full of cursing and bitterness.

15 Their feet are ſwift to ſhed blood.

16 Destruction and misery are their wayes.

17 And the way of peace haue they not knownen.

18 There is no ſcete of God before their eyes.

19 Now we know that what things ſoener the Law ſaith, it ſaith to them who are vnder the Law; that every man may be ſtopped, and all the world may become guilty before God.

20 Therefore by the deeds of the Law, there ſhall no flesh be iuftified in his fight, for by the Law is the knowledge of ſinne.

21 But now the righteousness of God without the Law is manifested, being witnalled by the Law and the Prophets.

22 Euen the righteousness of God, which is by faith of Iefas Christ vnto all, and vpon all them that beleeue for there is no difference:

23 For all haue ſinned, and come short of the glory of God.

24 Being iuftified freely by his grace, through

TO THE ROMANES.

the redemption that is in Jesus Christ :

25 Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation, through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness, for the remission of sinnes that are past, through the forbearance of God.

26 To declare, I say, at this time his righteousness; that he might be iust, and the iustifier of him which belieueth in Jesus.

27 Where is boasting then? it is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.

28 Therefore we conclude, that a man is iustified by faith, without the deeds of the Law.

29 Is he the God of the Jewes onely? Is he not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also:

30 Seeing it is one God which shall iustifie the circumcision by faith, & vncircumcision through faith.

31 Doe we then make void the law through faith? God forbid:yea, we establish the Law.

C H A P. IIII.

1 *Abrahams faith imputed for righteousness, is before he was circumcised.*

W^Hat shall we say then, that Abraham our Father, as perteining to the flesh, hath found?

2 For if Abraham were iustified by workes, he bath whereof to glory, but not before God.

3 For what saith the Scripture? Abraham belieueth God, & it was counted to him for righteousness.

4 No v to him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.

5 But to him that worketh not, but belieueth on him that iustifieth the vngodly: his faith is counted for righteousness.

6 Even as David also describeth the blessednesse of the man, vnto whom God imputeth righteousness without workes:

7 Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiuen, and whose sins are coneted.

8 Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sinne.

9 Comewesh this blessednes then vpon the circumcision only, or vpon the vncircumcision also? for we say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness.

10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision or in vncircumcision? not in circumcision, but in vncircumcision.

11 And

C H A P. III I.

11 And he received the signe of circumcision, a seale
of vrighteousnes of the faith, which *he had yes* being
vncircumcised: that he might be the father of all the
that belieue, though they be not circumcised; that
tighteousnes might be imputed vnto them also.

12 And the father of Circumcision to them who
are not of the Circumcision onely, but also walke in
the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which
he had being yet vncircumcised.

13 For the promise that he shold be the heire of
the world, *was not to* Abraham, or to his seed through
the Law, but through the raighteousesse of faith.

14 For *if* they which are of the Law be heires, faith
is made void, and the promise made of none effect.

15 Because the Law worketh wrath: for where no
Law is, there is no transgression.

16 Therfore *is* of faith, *for* it might be by grace, to
the end the promise might be sure to all the seed, not
to *you* only which is of the Law, but to that also which
is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of vs all.

17 (As it is written, I have made thee a father of
many nations) before him whom he belieueth, *even* God
who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those
things which be not, as though they were.

18 Who against hope belieued in hope, that hee
might become the father of many nations: according
to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be.

19 And being not weake in faith, he considered
not his owne body now dead, when he was about
an hundred yeeres old, neither yet the deadnesse of
Saraes wombe.

20 He staggered not at *the* promise of God through
vnbeliske, but was strong in faith, giving glory to God.

21 And being fully perswaded, that what he had
promised, he was able also to performe.

22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righ-
teousnesse.

23 Now it was not written for his sake alone, that
it was imputed to him:

24 But for vs also to whom it shall be imputed
if we belieue on him that raised vp Iesus our Lord
from the dead.

25 Who was delivered for our offences, and was
taken againe for our iustification.

TO THE ROMANES.

CHAP. V.

3 Being iustified by faith, we haue peace with God,
4 Sin came by Adam, and iustitewnes by Christ.

Therefore being iustified by faith, we haue peace with God through our Lord Iesus Christ.

2 By whom also wee haue acceso by faith, into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoyce in hope of the glori of God.

3 And not onely so, but we glory in tribulatioun also, knowing that tribulatioun worketh patience:

4 And patience, experiance: and experiance hope:

5 And hope maketh not ashamed, because the loue of God is lied abroad in our hearts, by the holy Ghost which is gauen vnto vs.

6 For when we were yet without strength, in due tyme, Christ died for the vngodly.

7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peraduenture for a good man some would enen dare to die.

8 But God commendeth his loue towards vs, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for vs.

9 Much more then, being now iustified by his blood, we shall be sauied from wrath through him.

10 For if when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God, by the death of his Sonne: much more being reconciled, we shall be sauied by his life,

11 And not onely so, but wee also ioy in God, through our Lord Iesus Christ, by whom wee haue now receiuied the atonement.

12 Wherfore as by one man sinne entred into the world, and death by sinne: and so death passed vpon all men, for that all haue sinned.

13 For vntill the Law, sinne was in the world: but sinne is not imputed when there is no law.

14 Neuerthelesse, death reigned from Adam to Moses, enen ouer them that had not sinned, after the similitude of Adams transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come.

15 But not as the offence, so also is the free gift: for if through the offence of one, many be dead: much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man Iesus Christ, hath abounded vnto many.

16 And not as is was by one that sinned, so is the gift; for the judgement was by one to condemnation;

but

C H A P. VI.

but the free gift is of many offences vnto iustification.

17 For if by one mans offence , death reigned by one , much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteou nesse , shall reigne in life by one, Iesus Christ.

18 Therefore as by the offence of one , *indgement* came vpon all men to condemnation, even so by the righteousness of one, the free gift came vpon all men vnto iustification of life.

19 For as by one mans disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one, shall many be made righteous.

20 Moreover , the Law entred , that the offence might abound; but where sinne abounded, grace did much more abound.

21 That as sinne hath reigned vnto death, even so might grace raigne through righteousness vnto eternall life, by Iesus Christ our Lord.

C H A P. VI.

1 We may not liue in sinne, 12 now let sinne reigne in vs. 23 Death is the wages of sinne.

W hat shall we say then? that we continue in sin that grace may abound?

2 God forbid: how shall we that are dead to sin, liue any longer therein?

3 Know ye not that so many of vs as were baptizēd, into Iesus Christ, were baptizēd into his death?

4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death, that like as Christ was raised vp from the dead by the glory of the Father : even so we also shoulde walke in newnesse of life.

5 For if we haue beeene planted together in the likenesse of his death: we shalbe also in the likenesse of his resurrection:

6 Knowing this that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sinne might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serue sinne.

7 For he that is dead is freed from sinne.

8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we beleue that we shalbe also liue with him,

9 Knowing y Christ being raised from the dead, dieth no more, death hath no more dominion over him

10 For in that he died, he died vnto sin once: but in that he liueth, he liueth vnto God.

11 Like-

TO THE ROMANE S.

11 Likewise reckon ye also your selues to be dead indeed vnto sinne : but alive vnto God, through Iesu Christ our Lord.

12 Let not sinne reigne therefore in your mortall body, that ye shoulde obey it in the lusts thereof.

13 Neither yeeld ye , oure members as instruments of unrighteousnes vnto him but yeeld your selues vnto God, as those that are alius from the dead, & your members as instruments of righteousness vnto God.

14 For sinne shall not haue dominion ouer you, for ye are not vnder the Law, but vnder grace.

15 What then? shall we sinne, because we are not vnder the Law, but vnder grace? God forbid.

16 Know ye not, that to whom ye yeeld your selues seruants to obey, his seruants ye are to whom ye obey: whether of sinne vnto death, or of obedience vnto righteousness?

17 But God be thanked, that ye were the seruants of sinne: but ye haue obeyed from the heart this forme of doctrine, which was deliuerned you.

18 Being then made free from sin, ye became the seruants of righteousness.

19 I speake after the maner of men, because of the infiinititie of your flesh: for as ye haue yeelded your members seruants to vnaueitie, and to iniquitie, vnto iniquitie: even so now yeeld your members seruants to righteousness vnto holinesse.

20 For when ye were the seruants of sin, ye were free from righteousness.

21 What fruit had ye then in those things whereof ye are now alhamned? for the end of those things is death.

22 But now being made free from sinne, and become seruants to God, ye haue your fruit vnto holiness, and the end everlasting life.

23 For the wages of sinne is death: but the gift of God is eternall life, through Iesu Christ our Lord.

C H A P. V I I.

1 *No law hath power over a man longer then he liueth*
Know ye noe brethren (for I speake to them that know the Law) how that the Law hath dominion ouer a man as long as he liueth?

2 For the woman which hath an husband, is bound by the Law to her husband so long as he liueth,
but

C H A P. VII.

but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of the husband.

3 So then if while her husband lieth, shee bee married to another man, she shall be called an adulteresse: but if her husband be dead, shee is free from that law, so that she is no adulteresse, though she be married to another man.

4 Wherso my brethren, ye also are become dead to the Law by the body of Christ, that ye shoulde be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we shoulde bring forth fruit vnto God:

5 For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sinnes, which were by the Law, did worke in our members to bring foorth fruit vnto death.

6 But now we are deliniered from the Law, y^e being dead where in we were held, that we shoulde serue in newnes of the spirit, & not in the oldnes of the letter.

7 What shall we say then? Is the Law sinne? God forbid. Nay, I had not knownen sinne but by the Law: for I had not knownen lust, except the Law had said, Thou shal not couet.

8 But sinne taking occasion by the commandement, wrought in me al manner of concupisence. For without the Law sinne was dead.

9 For I was alive without the Law once, but when the commandement came, sinne reuised, and I died.

10 And the commandement which was ordained to life, I found to be vnto death.

11 For sinne taking occasion by the commandement, deceived me, and by it slew me.

12 Wherefore the Law is holy, and the Commandement holy, and iust, and good.

13 Was that then w^t is good made death vnto me? God forbid. But sinne, that it might appeare sinne, working death in me by that which is good: y^e sin by the Commandement might become exceeding soneful.

14 For we know that the Law is spirituall: but I am carnall, sold vnder sinne.

15 For that which I doe, I allow not: for what I would, that doe I not, but what I hate, that doe I.

16 If then I doe that which I would not, I consent vnto the Law, that it is good.

17 Now then, it is no more I that doe it: but sinne that dwelleth in me.

18 For

TO THE ROMANES.

18 For I knew , that in mee (that is in my flesh) dwelleth no good thing. For to wil is preſet with me; but how to performe that which is good, I find not,

19 For the good that I would, I doe not : but the enill which I would not, that i doe

20 Now if I doe that I would not, it is no more I that doe it, but sin that dwelleth ju me.

21 I find then a Law, that when I would do good, enill is present with me.

22 For I delight in the Law of God , after the inward man.

23 But I see another Law in my members, warring against the Law of my mind, & bringing me into captiuity to the Law of sin which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am, who thall deliver me from the body of this death ?

25 I thanke God through Iesus Christ our Lord. So then , with the mind I my felfe ſetue the Law of God:but with the flesh, the Law of finne.

C H A P . V I I I .

1 Who are free from condemnation. 5. 13. What harme commeth of the flesh.

T Here is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Iesus, who walke not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.

2 For the Law of the Spirit of life in Christ Iesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death.

3 For what the law could not doe, in that it was weake through the flesh, God ſending his owne Son in the likenesse of ſinfull flesh, and for ſin, condemned ſin in the flesh :

4 That the rightconſcience of the Law might be ſatisfied in vs, who walke not after the flesh, but after the ſpirit.

5 For they that are after the flesh, doe mind the things of the flesh: but they that are after the ſpirit, the things of the ſpirit.

6 For to be carnally minded , is death. but to be ſpiritually minded, is life and peace :

7 Because the carnall minde is enmyty against God:for it is not ſubiect to the law of God, neither indeed can be.

8 So then they ſare in the flesh,cannot please God

9 But ye are not in the flesh, but in the ſpirit, if ſo be

C H A P. VIII.

be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his.

10 And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin : but the Spirit is life, because of righteousness.

11 But if the Spirit of him that raited vp Iesvs from the dead dwell in you: he that raised vp Christ from the dead, shall also quicken your mortall bodies by his Spirit that dwelleth in you.

12 Therefore brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh.

13 For if ye live after the flesh, ye shall die : but if ye through the Spirit doe mortifie the deeds of the body, ye shall live.

14 For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sonnes of God.

15 For ye haue not receiued the spirit of bondage againe to feare, but yee haue receiued the spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father.

16 The Spirit it selfe beareth witnesse with our spirit, that we are the children of God.

17 And if children, then heires, heires of God, and ioyn特 heires with Christ : if so be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified together.

18 For I reckon, that the sufferings of this present time, are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed in vs.

19 For the earnest expectation of the creature, waiteth for the manifestation of the sonnes of God.

20 For the creature was made subiect to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who hath subiect the same in hope :

21 Because the creature it selfe also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption, into the glorious liberty of the children of God.

22 For we know that the whole creation groaneth and traualleth in paine together vntill now.

23 And not onely they, but our selues also which haue the first fruits of the Spirit, euen we our selues groane within our selves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body.

24 For we are sauved by hope : but hope that is seene, is not hope : for what a man feeth, why doeth he yet hope for ?

25 But if we hope for that we see not, then doe we with patience wait for it.

26 Like-

TO THE ROMANS.

26 Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities : for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit it selfe maketh intercession for vs with groanings that cannot be vttered.

27 And he that searcheth the hearts, knoweth what is the mind of the spirit, because he maketh intercession for the Saints, according to *the will of God*.

28 And we know that all things worke together for good to them that loue God , to them who are the called according to his purpose.

29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first borne amongt many brethren.

30 Moreover, whom he did predestinate, them he also called : and whom he called, them he also justified : and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall we say then to these things? If God be for vs, who can be against vs ?

32 He that spared not his owne Sonne , but delivered him vp for vs all : how shall he not with him also freely giue vs all things?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of Gods elect ? It is God that justifieth :

34 Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ y died, yea rather that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for vs.

35 Who shall separate vs from the loue of Christ? shall tribulation, or distresse, or persecution, or famine, or nakednesse, or perill, or sword ?

36 (As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all day long, we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter)

37 Nay in all these things we are more then conquerours through him that loued vs.

38 For I am perswaded, that neither death nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature shall bee able to separate vs from the loue of God, which is in Christ Iesus our Lord.

C H A P. IX.

Pauls sorrow for the Jewes. 7 All Abrahams seed were not the children of the promise.

I Say the trueth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the holy Ghost,

3 That

CHAP. IX.

2 That I haue great heauiness, and continual sorrow in my heart.

3 For I could wish that my selfe were accursed from Christ, for my brethren my kinsemen according to the flesh:

4 Who are Israelites: to whom pertaineth the adoption, and the glory, & the covenants, & the giving of the Law, and the seruice of God, and the promises:

5 Whose are the Fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ came, who is ouer all, God blessed for euer, Amen.

6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they are not all Israel which are of Israel:

7 Neither because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all children: but in Isaac shal thy seed be called.

8 That is, they which are the children of the flesh, these are not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.

9 For this is the word of promise, At this time will I come, and Sara shall haue a sonne.

10 And not onely this, but when Rebecea also had conceiued by one, even by our father Isaac,

11 (For the children being not yet borne, neither hauing done any good or euill, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth.)

12 It was said vnto her, The elder shall serue the younger.

13 As it is written, Jacob haue I loved, but Esau haue I hated.

14 What shall we say then? Is there unrighteousnesse with God? God forbid.

15 For he saith to Moses, I will haue mercy on whom I will haue mercy, and I will haue compassion on whom I will haue compassion.

16 So then it is not of him that willetteth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy.

17 For the Scripture saith vnto Pharaoh, Euen for this same purpose haue I raised thee vp, that I might shew my power in thee, and that my Name might be declared throughout all the earth.

18 Therefore hath he mercy on whom he will haue mercy, and whom he will, he hardeneth.

19 Thou wilt say then vnto me; Why doeth he

TO THE ROMANES.

yet find fault? For who hath refisted his will?

20 Nay, but O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it Why hast thou formed me thus?

21 Hath not the potter power ouer the clay, of the same lumpe, to make one vessel vnto honour, and another to dishonour?

22 What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power knowne, endured with much long suffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction:

23 And that he might make knowne the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared vnto glory?

24 Even vs whom he hath called, not of the Jewes onely, but also of the Gentiles.

25 As he saith also in Osee, I will call them my people, which were not my people: and her beloved, which was not beloved.

26 And it shall come to passe ¶ in the place where it was said vnto them, Ye are not my people, there shall they be called the children of the living God,

27 Esaias also cryeth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved,

28 For he will finishe the worke, and cut it short in righteousness: because a short worke will the Lord make vpon earth.

29 And as Esaias said before, Except the Lord of Sabbath had left vs a seed, we had beeene as Sodoma, and beeene made like vnto Gomorrah.

30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles ¶ followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith:

31 But Israel ¶ followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness.

32 Wherefore? because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the Law: for they stumbled at that stumbling stone.

33 As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumbling stone, and rocke of offence, and whosoever beleeueth on him, shall not be ashamed.

C H A P. X.

¶ The difference of the righteousness of the Law, and of faith.

C H A P. X.

B Rethen, my hearts desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved.

2 For I bear them record, that they have a zeale of God, but not according to knowledge.

3 For they being ignorant of Gods righteouſneſſe, and going about to establish their owne righ-
teouſneſſe, haue not ſubmited themſelues vnto the
righteouſneſſe of God.

4 For Christ is the end of the Law for righteouſneſſe, to every one that beleeveth.

5 For Moses describeth the righteouſneſſe which
is of the Law, that thoſe man which doth thofe things,
ſhall live by them.

6 But the righteouſnes ſe is of faith ſpeaketh in
this wiſe; Say not in thine heart, Who that ascend in-
to heauen? That it is to bring Christ lowne fro aboue.

7 Or who shall descend into the deepe? That is
to bring vp Christ againe from the deede.

8 But what ſaith it? The word is nigh thee, euen
in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that is the word of
faith which we preach,

9 That if thou thale confesse with thy mouth the
Lord Iefus, and ſhalt beleevē in thine heart that God
hath raifed him from the dead, thou thale be ſaved.

10 For the heart maſt beleevēth vnto righteouſnes, and with the mouth confeſſion is made vnto ſaluation,

11 For the Scripture ſaith, Whosoever beleevēth
on him, ſhall not be aſhamed.

12 For there is no diſference betweene the Jew and
the Grecke: for the ſame Lord ouer all, is rich vnto
all that call vpon him.

13 For whosoever ſhall call vpon the Name of the
Lord, ſhall be ſaved.

14 How then ſhall they call on him in whom they
haue not beleevēd? and how ſhall they beleevē in
him, of whom they haue not heard? and how ſhall
they heare without a Preacher?

15 And how ſhall they preach, except they be ſent? as it is written: How beautifull are the feet of them
that preach the Gopel of peace, and bring glad tid-
dings of good things?

16 But they haue not all obeyed the Gopel. For
Elias ſaith, Lord, who hath beleevēd our report?

17 So then faith commeth by hearing, and hearing
by the word of God.

18 But

T O T H E R O M A N E S.

18 But I say, Haue they not heard? yes verely, their sound went into all the earth, and their words vnto the ends of the world.

19 But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moyses saith, I will pronounce you to ielousie by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you.

20 But Elias is very bold, and saith, I was found of them that sought me not: I was made manifest vnto them that asked not after me.

21 But to Israel hee saith: All day long haue I stretched foorth my hands vnto a disobedient and gainesaying people.

C H A P. XI.

1 God hath not cast off all Israel. 7 Some were elect, though the rest were hardened.

I Say then, Hath God cast away his people? God forbid. For I also am an Israelite of the seed of Abraham, of the tribe of Benjamin.

2 God hath not cast away his people w^t he foreknew. Wote ye not what the Scripture saith of Elias; how he maketh intercession to God against Israel, saying,

3 Lord, they haue killed thy Prophets, and digged downe thine Altars, and I am left alone, and they seeke my life.

4 But what saith the answere of God vnto him? I haue reserved to my selfe seuen thousand men, who haue not bowed the knee to the image of Baal.

5 Even so then at this present time also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.

6 And if by grace, then it is no more of workes: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it bee of workes, then it is no more grace, otherwise worke is no more worke.

7 What then? Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for: but the election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded,

8 According as it is written, God hath giuen them the spirit of slumber: eyes that they shoulde not see, and ears that they shoulde not heare, vnto this day.

9 And Dauid saith, Let their table bee made a snare, and a trap, and a stumbling blocke, and a recompence vnto them.

10 Let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see, and bow downe their backe alway.

11 I say

C H A P. XI.

11 I say then, Haue they stumbled, that they should fall? God forbid. But rather through their fall, saluation is come vnto the Gentiles, for to prooue them to ielouie.

12 Now if the fall of them bee the riches of the world, and the diminishing of them the riches of the Gentiles: how much more their fulnesse?

13 For I speake to you Gentiles, in as much as I am the Apostle of the Gentiles, I magnifie mine office:

14 If by any meanes I may prooue to emulation them which are my flesh, & might saue some of them.

15 For if the casting away of them be the seconding of the world: what shall the reuealing of them be, but life from the dead?

16 For if the first fruit be holy, the lumpe is also holy: and if the root be holy, so are the branches.

17 And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou being a wilde Olieue tree, wert grafted in amongst them, and with them partakeit of the root and fatnesse of the Olieue tree:

18 Boast not against the branches: but if thou boast? thou beareit not the root, but the root thee,

19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be grafted in.

20 Wel, because of vnbeliefe they were broken off, and I standest by faith. Be not high minded, but feare.

21 For if God spared not the naturall branches, take heed, lest he also spare not thee.

22 Behold therefore the goodnesse and fenerie of God: on them which fell, feneries; but towards thee, goodnesse, if thou continue in his goodnesse: otherwise thou shalt also be cut off.

23 And they also, if they bide not still in vnbeliefe, shall bee grafted in: for God is able to graffe them in againe.

24 For if thou wert cut out of the Olieue tree, which is wilde by nature, and wert grafted contrary to nature into a good Olieue tree: how much more shall these which be the naturall branches, be graffed into their owne Olieue tree?

25 For I would not brethen, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery (lest ye shoulde be wise in your own conceits) that blindnesse in part is happened to Israel, vntill the fulnesse of the Gentiles become in.

26 And

TO THE ROMANES.

26 And so all Israel shall be fained, as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Delineter, and shall turne away vngodlike from Iacob.

27 For this is my covenant vnto them, when I shall take away their sinnes.

28 As concerning the Gospel, they are enemies for your sake: but as touching the election, they are beloved for the Fathers sakes.

29 For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

30 For as yee in times past haue not beleued God, yet haue now obtained mercy through their vnbelieve.

31 Even so haue these also now not beleued, that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy.

32 For God hath concluded them all in vnbelieve, that he might haue mercy vpon all.

33 O the depth of the riches both of the wise dome and knowledge of God! how unsearchable are his iudgements, and his wayes past finding out!

34 For who hath knownen the mind of the Lord, or who hath been his counseller?

35 Or who hath first giuen to him, and it shall be recompensed vnto him againe?

36 For of him, and through him, and to him are all things: to whom be glory for euer. Amen.

C H A P. XII.

1 God mercies must mo we vs to please God.
I Beseech you therefore brethren, by the mercies of God, that yee present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable vnto God, which is your reasonable seruice.

2 And be not conformed to this world: but bee ye transformed by the renewing of your minde, that ye may prove what is that good, that acceptable, and perfect will of God.

3 For I say, through the grace given vnto me, to every man that is among you, not to thinke of himselfe more highly then he ought to thinke, but to thinke soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the measure of faith.

4 For as wee haue many members in one body, and all members haue not the same office;

5 So we being many, are one body in Christ, and every

C H A P. XIII.

every one, members one of another.

6 Having then gifts, differing according to the grace that is given to vs, whether propheticie, let vs propheticie according to the proportion of faith:

7 Or ministry, let vs wait on our ministering: or he that teacheth, on teaching:

8 Or he that exhorteth, on exhortation: he that giveth, let him doe it with simplicity, he that ruleth with diligence, he ysl.eweth mercy, with cheeresfullnesse.

9 Let loue be without dissimulation: abhorre that which is euill, cleue to that which is good.

10 Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly loue, in honour preferring one another.

11 Not slouthfull in busynesse: seruent in spirit, serving the Lord.

12 Rejoycing in hope, patient in tribulation, continuing instant in prayer.

13 Distributing to the necessity of Saints, giuen to hospitality.

14 Bless them which persecute you, blesse and curse not.

15 Rejoyce with them that doe rejoyce, and weepe with them that weepe.

16 Be of the same mind one towards another. Mind not high things, but condescend to men of low estate, Be not wise in your owne conceits.

17 Recompense to no man euill for euill. Provide things honest in the sight of all men.

18 If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men.

19 Dearely beloued, avenge not your selves, but rather giue place vnto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine, I will repay, saith the Lord.

20 Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him: if he thirst, give him drinke: for in so doing thou shalt heape coales of fire on his head.

21 Be not ouercome of euill, but ouercome euill with good.

C H A P. XIII.

I Our duties to Magistrates. 8 Loue is the fulfilling of the Law.

Let euery soule be subject vnto the higher powers: For there is no power but of God. The power is that be, are ordained of God.

2 Who

TO THE ROMANES.

2 Whosoever therefore resisteth the power resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.

3 For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evill. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that is good, & thou shalt have praise of the same.

4 For he is the minister of God to thee for good: but if thou doe that is evill, be afraid: for he beareth not the sword in vaine: for he is the minister of God, a reuenger to execute wrath vpon him whiche doeth evill.

5 Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake:

6 For, for this cause pay you tribute also: for they are Gods ministers, attending continually vpon this very thing.

7 Render therefore to all their dues, tribute to whom tribute is due, custome to whom custome, seare to whom seare, honour to whom honour.

8 Owe no man any thing but to loue one another: for he that loueth another hath fulfilled the Law.

9 For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, thou shalt not steale, Thou shalt not beare false witnesse, Thou shalt not couet: and if there be any other Commandement, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.

10 Loue worketh no ill to his neighbour, therefore loue is the fulfilling of the Law.

11 And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleepe: for now is our saluation neerer then when we beleueed,

12 The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let vs therefore cast off the workes of darkenesse, and let vs put on the armouer of light.

13 Let vs walke honestly as in the day, not in rioting and drunkenesse, nor in chambering and wantonnesse, not in strife and envying:

14 But put ye on the Lord Iesus Christ and make not provision for the flesh to fulfill the lusts thereof.

C H A P. X I I I I.

3 Men may not condemne nor condonne one another for things indifferent.

H Im that is weake in the faith, receiue you, but not to doutefull disputations,

C H A P. XIII.

- 2 For one believeth that he may eat all things; another who is weake, eateth herbes.
- 3 Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not: and let not him which eateth not, judge him that eateth: for God hath receiued him.
- 4 Who art thou ſy iudgēt another mans ſervant? to his owa master he standeth or falleth: yea, he ſhall be holden vp: for God is able to make him ſtand.
- 5 One man eſteemeth one day aboue another: another eſteemeth every day alike. Let euery man be fully perſwaded in his owne minde.
- 6 He that regardeth a day, regardeth it vnto the Lord: and he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord he doeth not regard it. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giueth God thanks: and he ſy eateth not, to the Lord he eateth not, and giueth God thanks.
- 7 For none of vs liueth to himſelfe, and no man dieth to himſelfe.
- 8 For whether we liue, wee liue vnto the Lord: and whether we die, we die vnto the Lord: whether we liue therefore or die, we are the Lords.
- 9 For to this end Christ both died, and roſe, and reuived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and liuing.
- 10 But why doest thou iudge thy brother? or why doest thou ſet at naught thy brother? we ſhall all ſtand before the judgement ſeat of Christ.
- 11 For it is written, As I liue, ſaith the Lord, euery knee ſhall bow to me, and euery tongue ſhall confeſſe to God.
- 12 So then euery one of vs ſhall giue account of himſelfe to God.
- 13 Let vs not therefore iudge one another any more, but iudge this rather ſy no man put a ſtumbling blocke, or an occation to fall in his brothers way.
- 14 I know, and am perſwaded by the Lord Iefus, that there is nothing vncleane of it ſelſe: but to him that eſteemeth any thing to bee vncleane, to him it is vncleane.
- 15 But if thy brother be grieved with thy meat: now walkeſt thou not charitably: Destroy not him with thy meat for whom Christ died.
- 16 Let not then your good be euill spoken of.
- 17 For the kingdome of God is not meat and drinke

TO THE ROMANES.

drinke ; but righteousness, and peace, and ioy in the holy Ghost.

18 For hee that in these things serueth Christ, is acceptable to God, and approued of men.

19 Let vs therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things wherewith one may edifie another.

20 For meat destroy not the worke of God : all things indeed are pure ; but it is euill for that man who eateth with offence.

21 It is good neither to eate flesh , nor to drinke wine, nor *any thing* wherby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weake.

22 Hast thou faith ? haue it to thy selfe , before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himselfe in that *thing wherby* he alloweth.

23 And he that doubteth, is damned if hee eate, because he eateth not of faith : For whatsoeuer is not of faith, is sinne.

C H A P. X V.

1 *The strong must beare with the weake.*

WE then that are strong, ought to beare the infirmities of the weake, and not to please our selfes.

2 Let every one of vs please his neighbour for his good to edification.

3 For eu'en Christ pleased not himselfe, but as it is written , The reproches of them that reproched thee, fell on me.

4 For whatsoeuer things were written * aforetime, were written for our learning, that we through patience & comfort of ſ Scriptures might haue hope.

5 Now the God of patience and consolation grant you to bee like minded one towards another, according to Christ Iesus :

6 That ye may with one mind and one mouth glorie God, eu'en the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ.

7 Wherefore receiuē yee one another, as Christ alſo received vs, to the glory of God.

8 Now I ſay, that Iesus Christ was a Minister of the circumcision for the truth of God , to confirme the promises made vnto the fathers:

9 And that the Gentiles might glorifie God for his mercy, as it is written, For this cause I will conſelle

C H A P. X V.

so thee among the Gentiles, and sing vnto thy Name
10 And againe hee saith, Rejoyce ye Gentiles with
his people.

11 And againe, Praise the Lord all ye Gentiles, and
laud him all ye people.

12 And against Esaias saith, There shall bee a root
of Iesie, and hee that shall rise to reigne ouer the
Gentiles, in him shall the Gentiles trutte.

13 Now the God of hepe, fill you with all ioy
and peace in believning that ye may abound in hope
through the power of the holy Ghost.

14 And I my selfe also am perswaded of you, my
brethren, that ye also are full of goodnesse filled with
all knowledge, able also to admonish one another.

15 Neverthelesse, brethren, I haue written the
more boldly vnto you, in some sort, as putting you
in mind, because of the grace y^e is gisen to me of God.

16 That I should bee the minister of Iesus Christ
to the Gentiles, ministring the Gospel of God, that
the offering vp of the Gentiles might be acceptable,
being sanctified by the holy Ghost.

17 I haue therefore whereof I may glory through
Iesus Christ, in those things which pertaine to God.

18 For I will not dare to speake of any of those
things which Christ hath not wrought by mee, to
make the Gentiles obedient by word and deed,

19 Through mightie signes and wonders, by the
power of the spirit of God, so that from Hierusalem,
and round about vnto Illyricum, I haue fully prea-
ched the Gospel of Christ.

20 Yet, so haue I striven to preach the Gospel, not
where Christ was named, lest I should builde vpon
another mans foundation :

21 But as it is witten, To whom hee was not
spoken of, they shall see : and they that haue not
heard, shall understand.

22 For which cause also I haue beene much hin-
dered from comming to you.

23 But now hauing no more place in these parts,
and hauing a great desire these many yeeres to come
vnto you.

24 Whensoeuer I take my journey into Spaine, I
will come to you : for I trust to see you in my jour-
ney, and to bee brought ou my way thitherward by

TO THE ROMANES.

you, if first I be somewhat silled with your company.

25 But now I goe vnto Hierusalem, to minister vnto the Saints.

26 For it hath pleased them of Macedonia, and Achaia, to make a certaine contribution for the poore Saints which are at Hierusalem.

27 It hath pleased them *wel*, and their debtors they are. For if the Gentiles have beeene made partakers of their spirituall things, their duety is also to minister to them in carnall things.

28 When therefore I haue performed this, and haue sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spaine.

29 And I am sure that when I come to you, I shall enue in the fulnesse of the blessing of the Gospel of Christ.

30 Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord Iesu Christ's sake, and for the loue of the Spirit, that ye striue together with mee in your prayers to God for me.

31 That I may bee delinered from them that doe not beleue in Iudea, and that my seruice which I haue for Hierusalem, may be accepted of the Saints:

32 That I may come vnto you with ioy by the will of God, and may with you be refreshed.

33 Now the God of peace be with you all, Amen.

C H A P. XVI.

3 Paul sendeth greeting: 21 his thankes to God, Commande vnto you Phebe our sister, which is a servant of the Church which is at Cenchrea:

2 That yee receiuie her in the Lord as becommeth Saints, and that ye assaile her in whatsoever bulingesse she hath need of you: for she hath beeene a succouer of many, and of my selfe also.

3 Greete Priscilla and Aquila, my helpers in Christ Iesus:

4 (Who haue for my life laid downe their owne neckes: vnto whom not onely I giue thankes, but also all the Churches of the Gentiles.)

5 Likewise greete the Church that is in their house. Salute my welbeloued Epinetus, who is the first fruite of Achaia vnto Christ.

6 Greete Maty, who bestowed much labour on vs.

7 Salute Andronicus, and Iunia my kinsmen, and alij

C H A P. XVI.

my fellow prisoners, who are of note among the A. postles, who also were in Christ before me.

8 Greete Amplias my beloued in the Lord.

9 Salute Vibane our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved.

10 Salute Apelles approued in Christ, Salute them which are of Aristobulus household.

11 Salute Herodian my kinsman Greete them that be of the houehold of Narcissus, which are in y^e Lord.

12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord, Salute the beloued Persis which laboured much in the Lord.

13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and nine.

14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrebas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.

15 Salute Philologus and Julia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympias, and all the saints which are with them.

16 Salute one another with an holy kisse. The Churches of Christ salute you.

17 Now I beseech you, brethren, marke them which cause diuisions and ostences, contrary to the doctrine which ye haue learned, and auoid them.

18 For they that are such, serue not our Lord Iesus Christ, but their owne belly, and by good words and faire speeches deceiue the hearts of the simple.

19 For your obedience is come abroad vnto all men. I am glad therefore on your behalfe: but yet I would haue you wise vnto that which is good, and simple concerning euill.

20 And the God of peace shall bruise Satan vnder your fecte shortly. The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you. Amen.

21 Timotheus my worke fellow, and Lucius, and Iason, and Sosipater my kinsmen salute yon.

22 I Terthus who wrote this Epistle, salute you in the Lord.

23 Gaius mine hoste, and of the whole Church saluteth you. Erafus the Chamberlaine of the citie saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Iesns Christ bee with you all. Amen.

25 Now to him that is of power to stablish you

I. CORINTHIANS.

according to my Gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mysterie, which was kept secret since the world began :

16 But now is made manifest, and by the Scriptures of the Prophets according to the commandement of the everlasting God, made knowne to all nations for the obedience of faith :

17 To God onely wise, bee glory through Jesus Christ for ever.

¶ Written to the Romanes from Corinthus, and sent by Phebe servant of the Church at Cenchrea,

¶ The first Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Corintheians.

C H A P. I.

1 After salutation & thanksgiving, to be exhortation so vnitie, 18 God destroyeth the misions of the wize
of this world. Paul called to bee an Apostle of Jesus Christ, through the will of God and
Sosthenes our brother,

2 Vnto the Church of God which
is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ Jesus, called to bee Saints, with all
that in every place call vpon the Name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and ours.

3 Grace bee vnto you, and peace from Cod our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God always on your behalfe for
the grace of God which is given you by Jesus Christ

5 That in every thing yee are enriched by him, in
all utterance, and in all knowledge:

6 Even as the testimonie of Christ was confirmed
in you.

7 So that yee come behinde in no gift, waiting
for the comming of our Lord Jesus Christ,

8 Who shall also confirme you vnto the end, y^e ye
may be blamelesse in y^e day of our Lord Jesus Christ.

9 God is faithfull by whom yee were called vnto
the fellowship of his Sonne Jesus Christ our Lord.

10 Now I beseech you brethren, by the Name of
our Lord Jesus Christ, that yee all speake the same
thing, and that there bee no divisions among you :
but that y^e be perfectly ioyned together in the same
minde and in the same judgement.

11 For

C H A P. I.

11 For it hath beene declared to mee of you, my
brethren, by them which are of the house of Clees,
that there are contentions among you.

12 Now this I say, that every one of you saith, I
am of Paul, and I of Apollo, and I of Cephas, and I
of Christ.

13 Is Christ divided? was Paul crucified for you? or
were ye baptized in the Name of Paul?

14 I thanke God that I baptizeth none of you, but
Crispus and Gaius:

15 Lest any should say, that I had baptized in mine
owne name.

16 And I baptizeth also the household of Stephanas;
besides, I know not whether I baptizeth any other.

17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach
the Gospel: not with wisedome of words lest the
Cross of Christ should be made of none effect.

18 For the preaching of the Cross is to them
that perish, foolishnesse: but vnto vs which are saved,
it is the power of God.

19 For it is written, I will destroy the wisedome
of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understand-
ing of the prudent.

20 Where is the wise? where is the Scribe?
where is the disputer of this world? Hath not God
made foolish the wisedome of this world?

21 For after that in the wisedome of God, the
world by wisedome knew not God, it pleased God by
the foolishnes of preaching, to save them that belieue

22 For the Iewes require a signe, and the Greekes
seeke after wisedome.

23 But we preach Christ crucified, vnto the Iewes
a stumbling blocke, & vnto the Greeks foolishnesse:

24 But vnto them which are called, both Iewes
and Greekes, Christ the power of God, and the wise-
dome of God.

25 Because the foolishnesse of God is wiser then
men: and the weaknes of God is stronger then men.

26 For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not
many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not
many noble are called.

27 But God hath chosen the foolish things of the
world to confound the wise: and God hath chosen
the weake things of the world, to confound the
things which are mighty.

I. CORINTHIANS.

28 And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen; yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are.

29 That no flesh should glory in his presence.

30 But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made vnto vs: wisdome, and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption:

31 That according as it is written, Hee that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

C H A P. II.

Pauls preaching & excellencie the wisedome of the world.

And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of speech, or of wisedome, declaring vnto you the testimony of God:

2 For I determined not to know any thing among you, saue Jesus Christ, and him crucified.

3 And I was with you in weakenesse, and in feare, and in much trembling.

4 And my speech, and my preaching was not with enticing words of mans wisedome, but in demonstration of the Spirit, and of power:

5 That your faith should not stand in the wisedome of men, but in the power of God.

6 Howbeit, wee speake wisedome among them that are perfect: yet not the wisedome of this world, nor of the Princes of this world, y come to nought.

7 But we speake the wisedome of God in a mystery, even the hidden wisedome which God ordained before the world, vnto our glory.

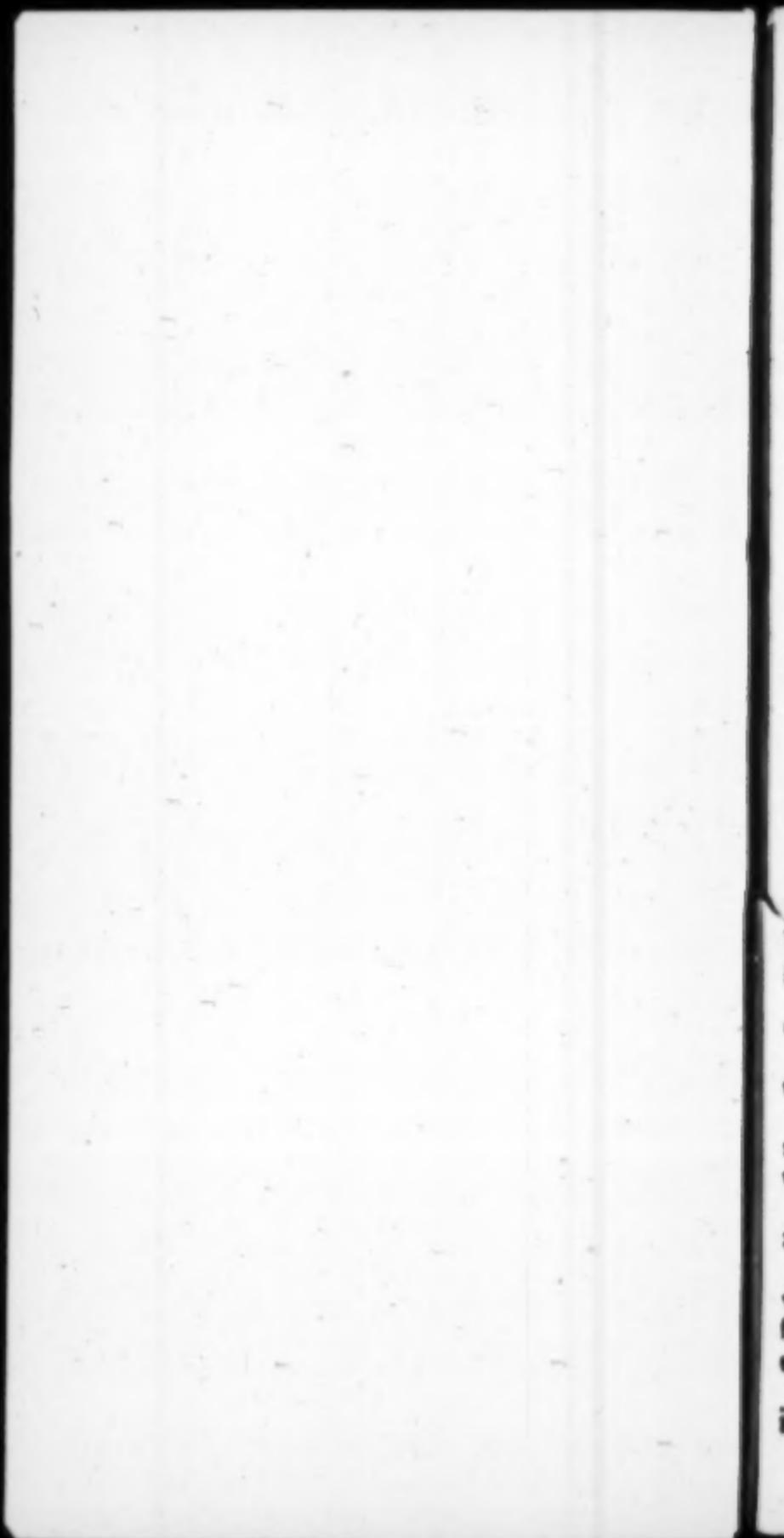
8 Which none of the Princes of this world knew: for had they knowne it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory.

9 But as it is written, Eye hath not seene, nor eare heard, neither haue entred into the heart of man, the things wherewith God hath prepared for them that loue him.

10 But God hath revealed them vnto vs by his Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea, the deepe things of God.

11 For what man knoweth the things of a man, saue the spirit of man which is in him? Even so the things of God knoweth no man but the Spirit of God,

12 Now wee haue received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God, that we might know



C H A P. III.

know the things that are freely giuen to vs of God.

13 Which things also we speake, not in the words which mans wiſdome teacheth, but w^t the holy Gheſt teacheth, comparing ſpirituall things with ſpirituall.

14 But the natu^rall man receiueſt not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are ſooliſhneſſe vnto him: neither can he know them, because they are ſpiritually diſcerned.

15 But hee that is ſpirituall, iuſtgeth all things, yet he hiſelfe is iudged of no man.

16 For who hath knowne the minde of the Lord that hee may iuſtruct him? But wee haue the mind of Christ.

C H A P. III.

3 Of ſtrife and diuision. 7 God giueth the increaſe.

And I, brethen, could not ſpeake vnto you as vnto ſpirituall, but as vnto carnall, men as vnto babes in Chrift.

4 I haue fed you with milke, and not with meat: for hitherto ye were not able to beare it, neither yet now are ye able.

5 For yee are yet carnall: for whereas there is among you enuyng and ſtrife, and diuisions, are yee not carnall, and walke as men?

6 For while one ſaith, I am of Paul, and another, I am of Apollo, are ye not carnall?

7 Who then is Paul? and who is Apollo? but minifters by whom yee beleueſt, even as the Lord gaue to euery man.

8 I haue planted, Apollo watered, but God gaue the increaſe.

9 So then, neither is he ſt planteth, any thing, neither he that watereth but God ſt giueth the increaſe.

10 Now hee that planteth, and hee that watereth, are one: and every man ſhall receive his owne reward according to his owne labour.

11 For wee are labourers together with God, yee are Gods husbandrie, ye are Gods building.

12 According to the grace of God which is giuen vnto mee, as a wiſe master-builder I haue laid the foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heede how he buildeth thereupon.

13 For other foundation can no man lay, then that is laid, which is Iesuſ Chrift.

I. CORINTHIANS.

12 Now if any man build vpon this foundation, gold, siluer, precious stones, wood, hay stubble:

13 Every mans worke, shall bee made manifest, for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire, and the fire shall try every mans worke of what sort it is.

14 If any mans worke abide which he hath built therenpon he shall receive a reward.

15 If any mans worke shalbe burnt, he shall suffer losse: but he himselfe shalbe fained yet losse by fire.

16 Know ye not that yee are the Temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

17 If any man defile the Temple of God, him shall God destroy: for the Temple of God is holy, which *Temple* ye are.

18 Let no man deceive himselfe: If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a foole, that he maybe wise.

19 For the wisedome of this world is foolishnesse with God: for it is written, Hee taketh the wise in their owne craftinesse.

20 And againe, The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vaine.

21 Therefore let no man glory in men, for all things are yours.

22 Whether Paul or Apollo, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come all are yours.

23 And ye are Christs, and Christ is Gods.

C H A P. I I I I .

1 How to account of Ministers. 7 We have nothing but we haue received it.

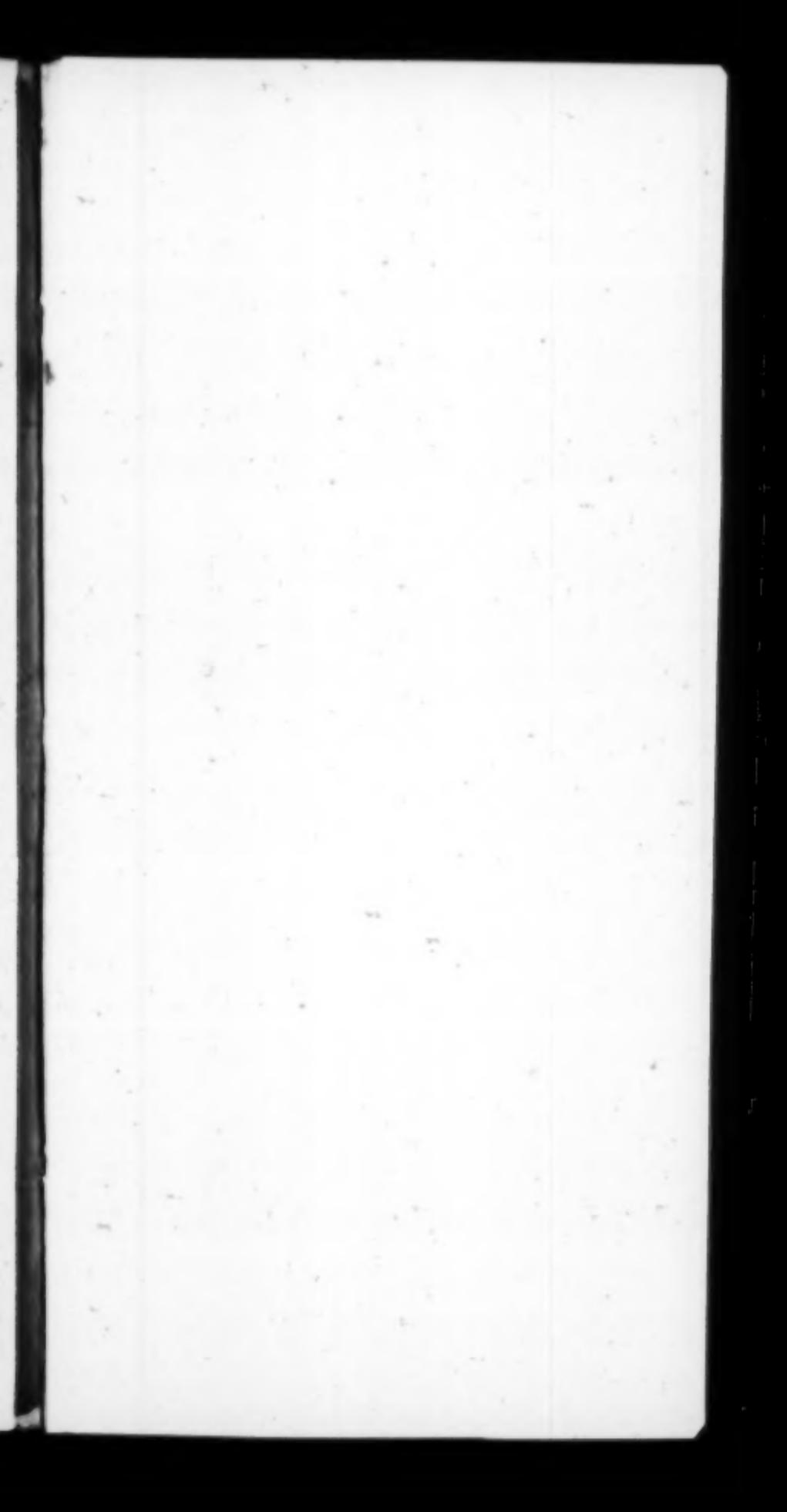
L Et a mans account of vs, as of the Ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.

2 Moreover it is required in stewards, that a man be found faithfull.

3 But with mee it is a very small thing that I should bee iudged of you, or of mans judgement: yea, I judge not mine owne selfe,

4 For I know nothing by my selfe, yet am I not hereby iustified; but he that iudgeth me, is the Lord.

5 Therefore judge nothing before the time, vntill the Lord come, who both will bring to light, the hidden things of darkenesse, and will make manifest





C H A P. I I I I .

niest the counsels of the hearts : and then shall eu-
ery man haue praise of God.

6 And these things brethren , I haue in a figure
transferred to my self, and to Appollo, for your sakes:
that ye might learne in vs not to thinke of men, a-
bove that which is written , that no one of you bee
puffed vp for one against another.

7 For who maketh thee to differ from another ?
And what hast thou that thou diddest not receive ?
Now if thou diddest receive it , why doest thou glory
as if thou haddest not received it ?

8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye haue reigned
as Kings without vs, and I would to God ye did
reigne: that we also mightreigne with you.

9 For I thinke that God hath set foorth vs the
Apostles last, as it were appointed to death. For we
are made a spectacle vnto the world, and to Angels,
and to men.

10 We are fooles for Christs sake, but ye are wise
in Christ. We are weake, but ye are strong : ye are
honourable, but we are despised.

11 Euen vnto this present houre we both hunger
and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and haue
no certaine dwelling place,

12 And labour, working with our owne hands : be-
ing reviled, we blesse; being persecuted we suffer it :

13 Being defamed, we entreat ; we are made as the
filth of the world, and are the off-scouring of all
things vnto this day.

14 I write not these things to shame you , but as
my beloued sonnes I warne you.

15 For though ye haue ten thousand instruktors
in Christ, yet haue ye not many fathers: for in Christ
Jesus I haue begotten you through the Gospel.

16 Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of me.

17 For this cause haue I sent vnto you Timotheus,
who is my beloued soh & faithfull in the Lord, who
shal bring you into remembrance of my waies which
be in Christ, as I teach euerie where in euerie Church.

18 Now some are puffed vp, as though I would not
come to you.

19 But I will come to you shortly, if the Lord will,
and will know, not the speech of them which are
puffed vp, but the power.

I. CORINTHIANS.

20 For the kingdome of God is not in word, but
in power.

21 What will ye? Shall I come vnto you with a
rod, or in loue, and in the spirit of meeknesse?

CHAP. V.

1 *The incestuous person, & The old leauen must bee
purged out, to Hemonis offenders are to be avoided.*

IT is reported comonly, that there is fornication
among you, and such fornication, as is not so
much as named among the Gentiles, that one shold
haue his fathers wife.

2 And yee are puffed vp, and haue not rather
mourned, that he that hath done this deed, might be
taken away from among you.

3 For I verely as absent in body, bnt present
in spirit, haue iudged already, as though I were
present, concerning him that hath so done this deed,

4 In the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ, when
yee are gathered together, and my spirit, with the
power of our Lord Iesus Christ,

5 To deliuer such *an one* vnto Satan for the de-
struction of the flesh, that the spirit may be sauued in
the day of the Lord Iesus.

6 Your glorying is not good: know ye not that a
little leauen leauenth the whole lump?

7 Purge out therefore the old leauen, that ye may
be a new lump: as yee are vnleauened. For *our*
Christ our Passouer is sacrificed for vs.

8 Therelore let vs keepe *þ* Feast, not with old lea-
uen, neither *þ* the leauen of malice, and wickednesse:
but with the vnleauened bread of sincerity & truth.

9 I wrote vnto you in an Epistle, not to company
with fornicators.

10 Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this
world, or with the couetous, or extortioneers, or with
idolaters: for then must ye needs go out of *þ* world.

11 But now I haue written vnto you, not to keepe
company. If any man *þ* is called a brother be a fornicator,
or couetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drun-
kard, or an extortioneer: *þ* such a one, no, not to eate.

12 For what haue I to doe to iudge them also that
are without? do not ye iudge them that are within?

13 But them that are without, God iudgeth.
Therefore put away from among your selues that
wicked person,

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

1 Give not to law with the brethren : & especially
vnder infidels.

2 Are any of you, having a matter agaist a brother, goe to Law before the vniust, and not before the Saints ?

3 Doe ye not know that the Saints shall iudge the world ? And if the world thalbe judged by you, are ye unworthy to iudge the souleſt matters ?

4 Know ye not that we shall iudge Angels ? How much more things that pertaine to this life ?

5 If then ye haue iudgements of things pertaining to this life, set them to iudge who are least esteemed in the Church.

6 I speake to your shame. Is it so, that there is not a wise man among you ? no, not one that thall be ab'e to iudge betweene his brethren ?

7 But brother goeth to law with brother, & that before the vndeletuers ?

8 Now therefore there is viterly a fault among you, because yee goe to law one with another : why doe ye not rather take wrong ? why doe ye not rather suffer your selues to be defrauded ?

9 Nay, you doe wrong, and defraude, and that your bretheren.

10 Know ye not that the vnrigheteous shall not inherite the kingdome of God ? Be not deceived : neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of them selues with mankindne,

11 Nor theeuers, nor couetous, nor drunkards, nor reuilers, nor extortioneſ, shall inherite the kingdome of God.

12 All things are lawfull vnto me, but all things are not expedient : all things are lawfull for me, but I will not be brought vnder the power of any.

13 Meates for the belly, and the belly for meates : but God thall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord: and the Lord for the body.

14 And God hath both raised vp the Lord, and will also raise vp vs by his owne power.

15 Know ye not that your bodies are the members

I. CORINTHIANS.

of Christ? shall I then take the members of Christ, & make them the members of an harlot? God forbid.

16 What, know ye not y^e he which is ioyned to an harlot is one body? for two(iath he)shalbe one flesh.

17 But he y^e is ioyned vnto the Lord, is one Spirit.

18 Flee fornication: euery sinne that a man doth, is without the body: but he that committeth fornication, sinneth against his owne body,

19 What know yee not that your body is the Temple of the holy Ghost which is in you, which yee haue of God, and ye are not your owne?

20 For ye are bought w^ta price: therefore glorie God in your body, & in your spirit, which are Gods.

C H A P. VII.

1 Marriage, 4 A remedy against fornication, 13 not lightly to be dissolved.

Now concerning y^e things whereof ye wrote vnto me; It is good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 Neuerthelesse, to avoide fornication, let euery man haue his owne wife, and let every woman haue her owne husband.

3 Let the husband render vnto the wife due benevolence: & likewise also the wife vnto the husband.

4 The wife hath not power of her owne body, but the husband, and likewise also the husband hath not power of his owne body, but the wife.

5 Defraud ye not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may giue your selues to fasting and prayer, and come together againe, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency.

6 But I speake this by permission, and not of commandement.

7 For I would that all men were euuen as I my selfe: but euery man hath his proper gift of God, one after this manner, another after that.

8 I say therefore to the vnmaried and widowes, It is good for them if they abide euuen as I.

9 But if they cannot containe, let them marry: for it is better to mary, then to burne.

10 And vnto the married I comand, yet not I, but y^e Lord, Let not y^e wife depart from her husband:

11 But and if she depart, let her remaine vnmarried, or bee reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife.

12 But

C H A P. VII.

12 But to the rest speake I, not the Lord, If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and thee be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the woman which hath an husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her let her not leave him.

14 For the vnbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the vnbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband; else were your children vnaclcane, but now are they holy.

15 But if the vnbelieving depart, let him depart, A brother or a sister is not vnder bondage in such easer: but God hath called vs to peace.

16 For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt leave thy husband? or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt forsake thy wife?

17 But as God hath distributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every one, so let him walke, and so ordaine I in all Churches.

18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not become vncircumcised. Is any called in vncircumcision? let him not be circumcised.

19 Circumcision is nothing, and vncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God.

20 Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called *being* a servant? care not for it: but if thou mayest be made free, use it rather.

22 For hee that is called in the Lord, *being* a servant, is the Lords freeman: likewise also hee that is called *being* free, is Christes servant.

23 Yee are bought with a price, be not ye the servants of men.

24 Brethren, let every man wherein hee is called, therin abide with God.

25 Now concerning virgines, I have no commandement of the Lord, yet I give my judgement as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithfull.

26 I suppose therefore that this is good for present distresse, I say, that it is good for a man so to be.

27 Art thou bound vnto a wife? seeke not to bee loosed. Art thou loosed from a wife? seeke not a wife

28 But & if thou marry, thou hast not sinned, and if

I. CORINTHIANS.

if a virgine marry, she hath sinned: nevertheless, such shall have trouble in the flesh, but I spare you.

29 But this I say, brethren, the time is short, it remaineth, that both they that have wiues, bee as though they had none:

30 And they that weepe, as though they wept not: and they that reioyce, as though they reioyced not: and they that buy, as though they possessed not:

31 And they that vse this world, as not abusing it: for the fashon of this world passeth away.

32 But I would have you without carefulnesse. He that is unmarried, careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord:

33 But hee that is married, careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife.

34 There is difference also betweene a wise and a virgin; the unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be holy both in body and in spirit: but hee that is married, careth for the things of the world, how she may please her husband.

35 And this I speake for your owne profit, not that I may cast a snare vpon you, but for that which is comely, and that you may attend vpon the Lord without distraction.

36 But if any man thinke that hee behaueth him selfe vuncomely towards his virgine, if the passe the floure of her age, and need so require, let him doe what he will, he sinnerth not, let them marry.

37 Neuerthelesse, hee that standeth stedfast in his heart, hauing no necessarie, but hath power ouer his owne will, and hath so decreed in his heart that hee will keepe his virgine, doeth well.

38 So then he that giueth her in marriage, doth wel but he that giueth her not in marriage, doth better.

39 The wife is bound by the Law as long as her husband liueth: but if her husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whō she will, onely in the Lord.

40 But she is happier if she so abide, after my iudgement: and I think also that I haue the Spirit of God

C H A P. VIII.

1 We must abstaine from meates offered to idoles.

N OW as touching things offered vnto idoles, we know that we all haue knowledge. Knowledge puffeth vp, but charity edifieth.

2 And

C H A P. IX.

2 And if any man thinke that hee knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man loue God, the same is knownen of him.

4 As concerning therefore the eating of those things that are offered in sacrifice vnto idols, wee know that an idle is nothing in the world, and that there is none other God but one.

5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many.)

6 But vnto vs there i. but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and wee in him, and one Lord Iesus Christ, by whom are all things, & we by him.

7 Howbeit, there is not in every man that knowledge for some with conscience of the idle vnto this houre, eat it as a thing offered vnto an idle, & their conscience being weake, is defiled.

8 But meat commendeth vs not to God: for neither if we eate, are we the better, neither if we eate not, are we the warse.

9 But take heed, lest by any meanes this liberty of yours become a stumbling blocke to them y are weake.

10 For if any man see thee which hast knowledge, sit at meat iu the idoles temple: shall not the conscience of him which is weake, be emboldned to eate those things which are offered to idols?

11 And through thy knowledge shall the weake brother perith, for whom Christ died?

12 But when ye sinne so against the brethren, and wound their weake conscience, ye sin agaist Christ.

13 Wherefore if meat make my brother to offend, I will eate no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my brother to offend.

C H A P. IX.

1 Pauls liberty. 7 The Minister must live by the Gospel.

A MI not an Apostle? am I not free? haue I not seene Jesus Christ our Lord? Are not you my worke in the Lord?

2 If I be not an Apostle vnto others, yet doubtlesse I am to you: for the seale of mine Apostleship are ye in the Lord.

3 Mine answere to them that doe examine me, is,

4 Haue

I. CORINTHIANS.

4 Haue we not power to eate and to drinke?

5 Haue wee not power to leade about a fister a wife as well as other Apostles, and as the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?

6 Or I onely & Barnabas, haue not we power to forbeare working?

7 Who goeth a warrefare any time at his owne charges? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof: or who feedeth a flocke, and eateth not of the milke of the flocke?

8 Say I these things as a man? or saith not the Law the same also?

9 For it is written in the Law of Moses, Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the oxe that treadeth out the corne: doth God take care for oxen?

10 Or saith he it altogether for our sakes? for our sakes no doubt this is written: that he that ploweth, should plow in hope: and that hee that thresheth in hope, should be partaker of his hope.

11 If we haue souen vnto you spirituall things, is it a great thing if we shall reape your carnall things?

12 If others be partakers of this power ouer you, are not we rather? Neuerthelesse, we haue not vsed this power: but suffer all things, lest we should binder the Gospel of Christ.

13 Doe yee not know, that they which minister about holy things, liue of the things of the Temple? and they which wait at the Altar, are partakers with the Altar?

14 Euē so hath the Lord ordained, that they which preach the Gospel, should liue of the Gospel.

15 But I haue vsed none of these things. Neither haue I written these things that it shoulde be so done vnto me: for it were better for me to die, then that any man shoulde make my glorying void.

16 For though I preach the Gospel, I haue nothing to glory of: for necessity is layd vpon me, yea, woe is vnto me, if I preach not the Gospel.

17 For if I doe this thing willingly, I haue a reward: but if against my will, a dispensation of the Gospel is committed vnto me.

18 What is my reward then? Verely, that when I preach the Gospel, I may make the Gospel of Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the Gospel.

19 For

C H A P. X.

19 For though I bee free from all men, yet have I made my selfe servant vnto all, that I might gaine the more.

20 And vnto the Iewes I became as a Iew, that I might gaine the Iewes : to them that are vnder the Law, as vnder the Law, that I might gaine them that are vnder the Law.

21 To them that are without Law, as without Law (being not without Law to God, but vnder the Law to Christ) that I might gaine them that are without Law.

22 To the weake became I as weake, that I might gaine the weake : I am made all things to all men, that I might by all meanes save some.

23 And this I do for the Gospels sake, that I might be partaker thereof with you.

24 Know yee not that they which runne in a race, runne all, but one receiuesth the prize ? so run that ye may obtaine.

25 And euery man that strineth for the masterie, is temperate in all things : Now they *are* to obtaine a corruptible crowne, but we an incorruptible.

26 I therefore so run, not as vnsertainely : so fight I, not as one that beateth the ayre :

27 But I keepe vnder my body, and bring it into subiection : lest that by any meanes when I haue preached to others, I my selfe should be a cast-away.

C H A P. X.

1 The Jewes Sacraments, 6 are types of ours.

M
y brethren, I would not that ye shoulde bee ignorant, how that all our fathers were vnder the cloud, and all passed through the Sea :

2 And were all baptizid vnth Moys in the cloud and in the Sea.

3 And did all eathe same spirituall meate :

4 And did all drinke the same spirituall drinke (for they dranke of that spirituall Rocke that followed them : and that Rocke was Christ.)

5 But with many of them God was not well pleased : for they were ouerthrowne in the wildernesse.

6 Now these things were our examples to the intent we shoulde not lust after euill things, as they also did.

7 Neither be yee idolaters, as were some of them,

I. CORINTHIANS.

as it is written; The people sate downe to eate and drinke, and rose vp to play.

8 Neither let vs commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand.

9 Neither let vs tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents.

10 Neither murmur yee, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer.

11 Now all these things happened vnto them for ensamples; and they are written for our admonition, vpon whom the ends of the world are come.

12 Wherefore, let him that thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall.

13 There hath no temptation taken you, but such as is common to man: But God is faithfull, who wil not suffer you to bee tempted above that you are able: but will with the temptation, also make away to escape, that ye may be able to heare it.

14 Wherefore my dearely beloued, flee from idolatry.

15 I speake as to wise men: judge you what I say.

16 The cup of blessing which wee blesse, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we brake, is it not the communion of the body of Christ?

17 For wee being many, are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

18 Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices, partakers of the Altar?

19 What say I then? that the idole is any thing? or that which is offred in sacrifice to idoles is any thing?

20 But I say, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God: and I would not that yee shoulde haue fellowship with devils.

21 Ye cannot drinke the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: yet cannot be partakers of the Lords Table, and of the table of devils.

22 Doe we prouoke the Lord to iealousie? are wee stronger then he?

23 All things are lawfull for mee, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawfull for me, but all things edifie not,

C H A P. XI.

24 Let no man seeke his owne, bnt every man another wealth.

25 Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eate, asking no question for conscience sake.

26 For the earth is the Lords, & the fulnes therof.

27 If any of them that beleene not, bid you to a fast, & ye be disposed to goe, Whatsoever is set before you, eate, asking no question for conscience sake.

28 But if any man say vnto you, This is offered in sacrifice vnto idoles, eat not for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake. The earth is the Lords, and the fulnes thereof.

29 Conscience, I say, not thine owne, but of the others : for why is my libertie judged of another mans conscience ?

30 For if I by grace bee a partaker, why am I euill spoken of, for that for which I give thankes ?

31 Whether therefore ye eate or drinke, or whatsoeuer ye doe, doe all to the glory of God.

32 Giue none offence, neither to the Jewes nor to the Gentiles, nor to the Church of God :

33 Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine owne profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saved.

C H A P. XI.

1 *He reprooneth the profaninge the Lords Supper.*

B E ye followers of me, even as I also am of Christ
2 Now I praise you, bretheren, that you remember mee in all things, and keepe the ordinances as I deliuered them to you.

3 But I would haue you know, that the head of every man is Christ : and the head of the woman is the man : and the head of Christ is God.

4 Every man praying, or prophecying, hauing his head couered, dishonoureth his head,

5 But every woman that prayeth, or prophecieth with her head vncouered, dishonoureth her head : for that is even all one as if i e were shauen.

6 For if the woman be not couered, let her also be shorne: but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorne or shauen, let her be couered.

7 For a man in deed ought not to couer his head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

8 For

I. CORINTHIANS.

8 For the man is not of the woman ; but the woman is of the man

9 Neither was the man created for the woman : but the woman for the man.

10 For this cause ought the women to have power on her head, because of the Angels.

11 Nevertheles, neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man in the Lord.

12 For as the woman is of the man : even so is the man also by the woman, but all things of God.

13 Judge in your selues; Is it comely that a woman pray vnto God vnsaucered ?

14 Doeth not euен nature it selfe teach you, that if a man haue long haire, It is a shame vnto him ?

15 But if a woman haue long haire, it is a glory to her : for her haire is given her for a coueting.

16 But if any man seeme to bee contentious, wee have no such custome, neither the Churches of God.

17 Now in this that I declare vnto you, I praise you not that you come together, not for the better, but for the worse.

18 For first of all when yee come together in the Church, I heare that there bee diuisions among you, and I partly beleue it.

19 For there must bee also heresies among you, that they which are approoued, may be made manifest among you.

20 When yee come together therefore into one place, shew it not to eate the Lords Supper.

21 For in eating, euery one taketh before other his owne supper, & one is hungry, & another is drunken

22 What haue ye not houses to eat and to drinke in ? or despise ye the Church of God, and shame them that haue not ? what shall I say to you ? shall I praise you in this ? I praise you not.

23 For I haue received of the Lord that which also I deliniered vnto you, that the Lord Iesus, the same night in which he was betrayed, tooke bread :

24 And when hee had givien thankes, he brake it, and said, Take,eate, this is my body which is broken for you : this doe in remembrance of me.

25 After the same manner also hee tooke the cup when hee had supped, saying, This cup is the New Testament in my blood : this doe yee as oft as yee drinke

C H A P. XII.

drinke it, in remembrance of me.

26 For as often as ye eat this bread, & drinke this cup, ye doe shew the Lordes death till he come.

27 Wherefore, whosoever shall eat this bread, and drinke this cup of the Lord unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord.

28 But let a man examine himselfe, and so let him eat of that bread, and drinke of that cup.

29 For hee that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himselfe, not discerning the Lords body.

30 For this cause many are weake and sickly among you, and many sleepe.

31 For if we would judge our selues, wee should not be indged.

32 But when we are indged, we are chastened of the Lord, y^e we should not be condemned w^t the world.

33 Wherefore, my brethren, when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another.

34 And if any man hunger, let him eat at home, that yee come not together vnto condemnation. And the rest will I set in order when I come.

C H A P. XII.

1 *Spiritnall gifis, 4 are diuers, 7 yet all to profit.*

Now concerning spiritnall gifis, brethren, I would not have you ignorant,

2 Yee know that yee were Gentiles, carried away vnto these dumbe idols, euen as ye were led.

3 Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God, calleth Iesus accursed: and that no man can say, that Iesus is the Lord bnt by the holy Ghost.

4 Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit.

5 And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord.

6 And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all.

7 But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withall.

8 For to one is given by the Spirit, the word of wisdom, to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit:

9 To another faith by the same Spirit, to another

I. CORINTHIANS.

ther the gifts of healing by the same Spirit :

10 To another the working of miracles, to another prophecie, to another discerning of spirits, to another *answers* kinds of tongues, to another the interpretation of tongues.

11 But all these worketh that one and the selfe same spirit, dividing to every man severally, as he wil,

12 For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the meinbers of that one body being many, are one body, so also is Christ.

13 For by one spirit are we all baptizied into one body, whether we be Iewes or Gentiles, whether we bee bond or free : and haue beene all made to drinke into one spirit.

14 For the body is not one member, but many.

15 If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body : is it therefore not of the body ?

16 And if I care shal say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body : is it therefore not of the body ?

17 If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing ? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling ?

18 But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him.

19 And if they were all one member, where were the body ?

20 But now are they many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye cannot say vnto the hand, I haue no need of thee : nor againe the head to the feet, I haue no need of you.

22 Nay, much more those members of the body, which seeme to be more feeble, are necessary.

23 And those *members* of the body which wee thinke to be lesse honourable, vpon these wee beflow more abundant honour, and our vncomely parts haue more abundant comeliness.

24 For our comely *parts* haue no need : but God hath tempered the body together, haing giuen more abundant honour to that part which lacked :

25 That there shoulde be no schisme in the body, but that the members shoulde haue the same care one for another.

26 And

C H A P. XIII.

26 And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it, or one member be honoured, all the members rejoyce with it.

27 Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular.

28 And God hath set some in the Church, first Apostles, secondarily Prophets, thirdly Teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps in governments, diversities of tongues.

29 Are all Apostles? are all Prophets? are all Teachers? are all workers of miracles?

30 Haue all the gifts of healing? doe all speake with tongues? doe all interpret?

31 But couer earnestly the best gifts: And yet shew I unto you a more excellent way.

C H A P. XIII.

1 Thy most excellent gifts are nothing without charity.

13 It is preferred before hope and faith.

T Hough I speake with the tonges of men and of Angels, and haue not charitie, I am become as sounding brasie, or a tinkling cymball.

2 And though I haue the gifte of prophesie, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge, and though I haue all faith, so that I could remoone mountaines, and haue no charity, I am nothing.

3 And though I bestow all my goodsto feed the poore, and though I give my body to be burned, and haue not charitie, it profiteth me nothing.

4 Charity suffreth long, & is kind, charitie emul-
eth not: charity vantageth not it selfe, is not passed wry.

5 Doth not behaue it selfe vnseemly, seeketh not her owne, is not easilie provoked, thinketh no euill,

6 Reioyceth not in iugement, but reioyceth in the truth:

7 Beareth all things, beleueneth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

8 Charitie never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall faile, whether there be tongues, they shall cease, whether there be knowledge it shall vanish away.

9 For we know in part, and we prophesie in part.

10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

11 When I was a childe, I spake as a childe, I un-
derstood

I. CORINTHIANS.

As I roade as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childiish things.

12 For nowe we see through a glasse, darkely; but then face to face: now I know in part, but then shall I know eu'en as also I am knownen.

13 And now abideth faith, hope, charitie, these three: but the greatest of these is charitie.

C H A P. X I I I I .

1 The commendation of Prophecy. 34 Women may not speake in the Church.

Follo-w after charitie, and desire spirituall gifts, but rather that ye may prophesie

2 For hee that speaketh in an unknowne tongue, speaketh not vnto men, but vnto God, for no man understandeth him: howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries.

3 But he that prophesieth, speaketh vnto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort.

4 He that speaketh in an unknowne tongue, edifieth himselfe; but he y prophesieth, edifieth the Church.

5 I woulde that ye all spake with tongues, but rather that yee prophesied: for greater is he that prophesieth, then he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the Church may receive edifying.

6 Now brethren, if I come vnto you speaking with tonguiss, what shall I profit you, except I shall speake to you, either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophecying, or by doctrine?

7 And even things without life, giving sound, whether pipe or harpe, except they give a distinction in the sounds, how shall it bee knownen what is piped or harped?

8 For if the trumpet give an uncertaine sound, who shall prepare himselfe to the battell?

9 So likewile yee, except ye vtter by the tongue wordes easie to be understood, how shall it be knownen what is spoken: for ye shall speake into the ayre.

10 There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the world, & none of them are without signification.

11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voyce, I shall be vnto him that speaketh a Barbarian, and he that speaketh shall be a Barbarian vnto me.

12 Even so yee, forasmuch as yee are zealous of spirituall gifts, seeke that ye may excell to the edifying of the Church.

13 Where

C H A P. X I I I I .

13 Wherefore let him that speaketh in an *unknowen* tongue, pray that he may interpret.

14 For if I pray in an *unknowen* tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my vnderstanding is vnfruitfull.

15 What is it then ? I will pray with the spirit, & will pray w^t the vnderstanding also : I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the vnderstanding also.

16 Else whenthou shalt blesse with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the roome of the vnlerned, say Amen, at thy giuing of thankes, seeing he vnderstandeth not what thou sayest ?

17 For thou verily giuest thankes well ; but the other is not edified.

18 I thanke my God I speake with tongues more then you all.

19 Yet in the Church I had rather speake fwe words with my vnderstanding, that *by my voice* I might teach others also , then ten thousand words in an *unknowne* tongue.

20 Brethren, bee not children in vnderstanding, howbeit in malice be yee children, but in vnderstanding be men.

21 In the Law it is written, With ~~men~~ of other tongues, & other lips will I speake unto this people : & yet for all that wil they not heare me, saith y^r Lord.

22 Wherefore tongues are for a signe, not to them that beleue, but to them that beleue not : but prophesying serveth not for them that beleue not, but for them which beleue.

23 If therefore the whole Church be come together into some place, and all speake with tongues, and there come in those that are vnlerned or vnbelineuers, will they not say that ye are mad ?

24 But if all prophesie, and there come in one that beleueth not, or one vnlerned : he is conuincid of all, he is iudged of all.

25 And thus are the seerets of his heart made manifest, and so falling downe on his face, hee will worship God, and report that God is in you of a truelth.

26 How is it then, brethren ? when yee come together, every one of you hath a Psalme, hath a doctrine, hath a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation : Let all things be done unto edifying.

27 If any man speake in an *unknowen* tongue,

I. CORINTHIANS.

let it be by two, or at the most by three, and that by course, and let one interprete.

28 But if there be no interpreter, let him keepe silence in the Church, and let him speake to himselfe and to God.

29 Let the Prophets speake two or three, and let the other iudge.

30 If any thing be revealed to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace.

31 For ye may all prophecy one by one, that all may learne, and all may be comforted.

32 And the spirit of the Prophets are subiect to the Prophets.

33 For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all Churches of the Saints.

34 Let your women keepe silence in the Churches, for it is not permitted vnto them to speake: but they are commandeda to be vnder obedience: as also saith the Law.

35 And if they will learne any thing, let them aske their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women to speake in the Church.

36 What? came the word of God out from you? or came it vnto you onely?

37 If any man thinke himselfe to be a Prophet, or spirituall, let him acknowledgē that the things that I write vnto you, are the commandements of the Lord.

38 But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.

39 Wherefore brethren, couet to prophesie, and forbid not to speake with tongues.

40 Let all things be done decently and in order.

C H A P. X V.

3 By Christ's resurrection we proved the meassey of ours.

Moreouer brethren, I declare vnto you the Gospel which I preached vnto you, which also you haue receiued, and wherein ye stand.

2 By which also ye are saved if ye keepe in memory what I preached vnto you, vnsleſſe yee haue beleived in vain.

3 For I deliuered vnto you first of all that which I alſo receiued, how that Christ died for our ſins according to the Scriptures:

4 And that he was buried, and that he roſe againe the thrid day according to the Scriptures.

5 And by he was ſcene of Ceyhas, then of the twelve.

6 After

C H A P. XV.

6 After that, he was seene of aboue five hundred brethren at once: of whom the greater part remaine unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.

7 After that he was seene of Iames, then of all the Apostles.

8 And last of all, he was seene of me also, as of one borne out of due time.

9 For I am the least of the Apostles, that am not meet to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the Church of God.

10 But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was bestowed vpon me, was not in vaine: But I laboured more abundantly then they all, yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me:

11 Therefore whether it were I or they, so wee preach, and so ye beleue.

12 Now if Christ be preached, that he rose from the dead, how say some among you, that there is no resurrection of the dead?

13 But if there be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen.

14 And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vaine, and your faith is also vaine:

15 Yea, and we are found false witnessies of God, because we haue testified of God, y^e he raised vp Christ, whom he raised not vp, if so be that the dead rise not:

16 For if y^e dead rise not, then is not Christ raised.

17 And if Christ be not raised, your faith is vaine, yee are yet in your sinnes.

18 Then they alio which are fallen asleep in Christ, are perished.

19 If in this life onely we haue hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable.

20 But now is Christ risen from the dead, and become the first fruits of them that slept.

21 For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.

22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alio.

23 But every man in his own order. Christ the first fruits, afterward they that are Christs, at his coming.

24 Then comew^th the end, when he shall haue delivered vp the kingdom to God euен the Father, when he shal haue put downe all rule, and all authority and power.

I. CORINTHIANS.

25 For he must reigne, till he hath put all enemies vnder his feet.

26 The last enemy that shalbe destroyed, is death.

27 For he hath put all things vnder his feet; but when he saith all things are put vnder him, it is manifest, y^e he is excepted w^t did put all things vnder him.

28 And when all things shalbe subdued vnto him, then shal y^e Son also himselfe be subiect vnto him that put all things vnder him, that God may be all in all.

29 Else what shall they doe which are baptizied for the dead, if the dead rise not at all, why are they then baptizied for the dead?

30 And why stand we in iecopardy euery houre?

31 I protest by your reioycing, which I haue in Christ Iesus our Lord, I die daily.

32 If after the maner of men I haue fought w^t beasts at Ephesus, what advantageth it me, if the dead rise not? Let vs eate and drinke, for to morrow we die.

33 Bee not deceived: euill communications corrupt good manners.

34 Awake to righteousness, and sinne not: for some haue not the knowledge of God, I speake this to your shame.

35 But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body doe they come?

36 Thou foole, that which thou sowest, is not quickned, except it die.

37 And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare graine, it may chance of wheat, or of some other graine.

38 But God glueth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed hisowne body.

39 All flesh is not the same flesh, but there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds.

40 There are also celestiall bodies, and bodies terrestriall: but the glory of the celestiall is one, and the glory of the terrestriall is another.

41 There is one glory of the Sunne, another glory of the Moone, and another glory of the Starres: for one Starre differeth from another starre in glory.

42 So also is the resurrection of the dead, it is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption.

43 It is sown in dishonour, it is raised in glory: it

C H A P. XV.

it is sown in weakness, it is raised in power:

44 It is sown a naturall body, it is raised a spirituall body. There is a naturall body, and there is a spirituall body.

45 And so it is written: The first man Adam was made a living soule, the last Adam was made a quickening spirit.

46 Howbeit, that was not first which is spirituall: but that which is naturall, and afterward that which is spirituall.

47 The first man is of the earth earthly: the second man is the Lord from heaven.

48 As is the earthly, such are they that are earthly, and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly.

49 And as we have borne the image of the earthly, we shall also beare the image of the heavenly.

50 Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and bloud cannot inherite the kingdome of God: neither doth corruption inherite incorruption.

51 Behold, I shew you a mystery: we shall not all sleepe, but we shall all be changed.

52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye; at the last trumpe (for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed.)

53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortall must put on immortality.

54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortall shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to passe the saying that is written, Death is swallowed vp in victory.

55 O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?

56 The sting of death is sinne, and the strength of sinne is the Law.

57 But thankes be to God, which giueth vs the victory, through our Lord Iesus Christ.

58 Therefore my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the worke of the Lord, forasmuch as you know that your labour is not in vaine in the Lord.

C H A P. XVI.

I The brethrens wants must bee relieved. 10 Tim.
thy commended. 13 Friendly admonitions. 16 Sa-
lutations.

I. CORINTHIANS.

Now concerning the collection for the Saints, as I haue giuen order to the Churches of Galatia, euens so doe yee.

2 Vpon the first day of the weeke, let every one of you lay by him in store, as God hath prospered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whomsoeuer you shall appone by your letters, them will I send to bring your liberality vnto Hierusalem.

4 And if it bee meet that I goe also, they shall goe with me.

5 Now I will come vnto you, when I shall passe through Macedonia: for I doe passe through Macedonia.

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that yee may bring me on my iourney whithersoever I goe.

7 For I will not see you now by the way, but I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I will tarry at Ephesus vntill Pentecost.

9 For a great doore and earetnall is opened vnto me, and there are many aduersaries.

10 Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with you without feare: for he worketh the worke of the Lord, as I also doe.

11 Let no man therefore despise him: but conduct him forth in peace, that hee may come vnto me: for I looke for him with the brethren.

12 As touching our brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come vnto you with the brethren, but his will was not at all to come at this time: but he will come when he shall haue convenient time.

13 Watch yee, stand fast in the faith, quite your like men: be strong.

14 Let all your things be done with charity.

15 I beseech you brethren: (ye know the house of Stephanas, yit is the first fruits of Achaia, and yithy haue addicteid themselves to y ministry of y Saints)

16 That ye submit your selues vntosuch, and to every one that helpeth with vs and laboureth.

17 I am glad of the comming of Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus: for that which was lacking on your part, they haue supplied.

18 For they haue refreshed my spirit and yours: therefore

C H A P. I.

therefore acknowledge ye them that ar: such.

19 The Churches of Asis salute you. Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the Church that is in their house.

20 All the brethren greet you: greet yee one another with an holy kisse.

21 The salutation of me Paul w mine owne hand.

22 If any man loue not the Lord Iesus Christ, let him be Anathema Maranatha.

23 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you

24 My loue be with you all in Christ Iesus, Amen.

The first Epistle to the Corinthians was written from Philippi by Stephanas and Fortunatus, and Achæicus, and Timotheus.

¶ The second Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Corinthians.

C H A P. I.

3 The Apostle encourageth them against trouble,
12 and sheweth the sincerity of his preaching.

Paul an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the will of God, and Timothy our brother vnto the Church of God, which is at Corinth, with all the Saints which are in all Achaia.

2 Grace be to you and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 Blessed be God, even ſ Father of our Lord Iesus Christ ſ Father of mercies, & the God of all comfort,

4 Who comforteth vs in all our tribulation, that we may be able to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort, wherewith we our ſelves are comforted of God.

5 For as the sufferings of Christ abound in vs, ſo our consolation also abounding by Christ.

6 And whether we be afflited, it is for your conſolation and ſaluation, which is effectuall in the induing of the ſame ſufferings, which we also ſuffer: or whether we be comforted, it is for your conſolation and ſaluation.

7 And our hope of you is ſtedfaſt, knowing that as yee are partakers of the ſufferings ſo ſhall ye be alſo of the conſolation.

8 For we would not brethren, haue you ignorant

II. CORINTHIANS.

of our trouble which came to vs in Asia, that wee were pressed out of measure, aboue strength, insomuch that we despaired enen of life.

9 But we had the sentence of death in our selues, that wee shold not trust in our selues, but in God, which raiseth the dead;

10 Who deliuereſ vs from ſo great a death, and doth deliuereſ in whō we truſt ſy he will yet deliuereſ vs.

11 You alſo helping together by prayer for vs, that for the gift, beſtowed vpon vs by the meaneſ of many perſonſ, thanks may be giuen by many on our behalfe

12 For our reioycing iſ this, the teſtimony of our conſcience, that in ſimplicity and godly ſinceritie, not with fleſhly wiſedome, but by the grace of God, we haue had our conuerſation in the world, and more abundantly to you wards.

13 For we write none other things vnto you, then what you reade or acknowledge, and I truſt you ſhall accorde aledge even to the end.

14 As alſo you haue acknowledgdeſ vs in part, that we are your reioycing, euenaſ ye alſo are ours, in the day of the Lord Ieſus.

15 And in this conuience I was minded to come vnto you before, ſy you might haue a ſecond benefit:

16 And to paſſe by you into Macedonia, and to come againe out of Macedonia vnto you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Iudea.

17 When I therefore was thus minded, did I vſe lightneſſe ſy or the things that I purpose, doe I purpose according to the fl.ſh, that with me there ſhould be yea, yea, and nay, nay?

18 But as God is true, our word toward you, was not yea and nay.

19 For the Sonne of God Ieſus Christ, who was preached among you by vs, even by me, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, was not Yea, and Nay, but in him was Yes.

20 For all the promises of God in him are Yes, and in him Amen, vnto the gloriy of God by vs.

21 Now he which eſtabliſheth vs with you in Christ, and hath anointed vs is God.

22 Who hath alſo ſealed vs, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Moreover, I call God for a record vpon my ſoule, that

C H A P. II.

that to spare you I came not as yet vnto Corinth.

24 Not for y^e we haue dominion ouer your faith, but are helpers of your ioy: for by faith yee stand.

C H A P. II.

1 The reason of Pauls not comming. & Of the excommunicate person. 14 The successe of his preaching.

B Vt I determined this with my selfe, that I would not come againe to you in heauenlyesse.

2 For if I make you sorry, who is he then y^e maketh me glad, but the same which is made sorry by me?

3 And I wrote this same vnto you , leſt when I came, I ſhould haue ſorrow from them of whom I ought to reioyce , hauing confidence in you all, that my ioy is the ioy of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and anguill of heart, I wrote vnto you with many teares, neſt that you ſhould be grieved, but that yee might know the loue which I haue more abundantly vnto you.

5 But if any haue cauſed griefe, he hath not grieved me but in part: that I may not ouercharge you al.

6 Sufficient to ſuch a man is this punishment, which was iuſtled of many.

7 So that contrariwise, yee ought rather to forgive him, and comfort him , leſt perhaps ſuch a one ſhould be twalowed vp with ouermuch ſorrow.

8 Wherefore I beseech you, that you would conſirme your loue towards him.

9 Far to this end also did I write, that I might know the prooue of you, whether yee be obedient in all things.

10 To whom ye forgive any thing, I forgive alſo: for if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave it, for your ſakes forgave I it, in the person of Christ,

11 Leſt Satan ſhould get an advantage of vs: for we are not ignorant of his deuices.

12 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to preach Christs Gospel, and a doore was opened vnto me of the Lord,

13 I had no rest in my ſpirit, because I found not Titus my brother , but taking my leaue of them, I went from thence into Macedonia.

14 Now thankes bee vnto God , which alwayes cauileth vs to triumph in Christ, and maketh maniſtent the fauour of his knowledge by vs in euery place.

25 For

II.CORINTHIANS.

15 For we are unto God a sweet sauour of Christ in them that are sauued, and in them that perish.

16 To the one we are the sauour of death unto death; and to the other, the sauour of life unto life: and who is sufficient for these things?

17 For we are no. as many, which corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speake we in Christ.

C H A P. III.

1 The commendation of Pauls ministry. & A comparsion betweene the ministers of the Law and the Gospel.

Doe we begin aga[n]ts to commend our selues? or doe neede we as some others Epistles of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you? 2 Ye are our Epistle written in our hearts, knowne and read of all men.

3 Forasmuch as yee are manifestly declared to bee the Epistle of Christ ministred by vs, written not with inke, but with the spirit of the living God, not in tables of stone, but in fleshly tables of the heart.

4 And such trust haue wee thorow Christ to Godward:

5 Not that wee are sufficient of our selues to thinke anything as of our selues: but our sufficiency is of God:

6 Who also hath made vs able ministers of the new Testament, not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter killeth, but the spirit giueth life.

7 But if the ministration of death written, and ingrauen in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly beholde the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance, which glory was to be done away:

8 How shall not the ministration of the spirit be rather glorious?

9 For if the ministration of condemnation bee glory, much more doeth the ministration of rightnesse exceed in glory.

10 For euē that w[e] was made glorious, had no glory in this respect by reason of the glory y[ours] excelleth.

11 For if that which is done away, was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious.

12 Seeing then that we haue such hope, wee vse great plainnesse of speech.

C H A P. IIII.

13 And not as Moses, which put a vaille ouer his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly looke to the end of that which is abolished;

14 But their mindes were blinded: for vntill this day remaineth the same vaille vtaken way, in the reading of the old Testament: which vaille is done away in Christ.

15 But euen vnto this day, when Moses is read, the vaille is vpon their heart.

16 Neuerthelesse, when it shall turne to the Lord, the vaille shall be taken away.

17 Now the Lord is that spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

18 But we all, with open face beholding as in a glasse the glory of the Lord, are changed into the same image from glory to glory, even as by the Spirit of the Lord.

C H A P. IIIII.

I Paul's sincerity and diligence in preaching, & and of his troubls for the same.

T Herefore seeing we haue this ministry, as we haue received mercy, we faint not:

2 But haue renounced the hidden things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling the word of God deceiptfully, but by manifestation of the truthe, commanding our selues to euery mans conscience in the sight of God.

3 But if our Gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost:

4 In whom the God of this world hath blinded the minds of them that beleue not, left the light of the glorious Gospel of Christ, who is the image of God should shone vnto them.

5 For we preach not our selues, but Christ Iesus the Lord, and our selues your seruants for Iesus sake.

6 For God who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, so givē the light of the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Iesus Christ.

7 But we haue this treasure in earthen vessels, y^e the excellency of the power may be of God, & not of vs.

8 We are troubled on every side, yet not distresed, we are perplexed, but not in despaire:

9 Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast downe, but not destroyed.

10 Alwaies

II. CORINTHIANS.

10 Always bearing about in the body, the dying of the Lord Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our body.

11 For we which live, are alway delivered unto death for Jesus sake, that the life also of Jesus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh.

12 So then death worketh in vs, but life, in you.

13 We having the same spirit of faith according as it is written, I belieue, and therefore have I spoken: we also belieue, and therefore speake.

14 Knowing that hee which raised vp the Lord Jesus, shall raise vp vs also by Jesus, and shall present vs with you.

15 For all things are for your sakes, that the abundant grace might, through the thanksgiving of many, redound to the glory of God.

16 For which cause we faint not, but though our outward man perish, yet the inward man is renewed day by day.

17 For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, worketh for vs a far more exceeding and eternall weight of glory,

18 While we looke not at the things which are seene, but at the things which are not seene; for the things which are seene, are temporall, but the things which are not seene, are eternall.

C H A P. V.

1 That in hope of immortall glory, g be idonewis to keepe a good conscience.

For we know, that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we haue a building of God, an house not made wth hand eternall in heauen.

2 For in this we groane earnestly, desiring to be clothed vpon with our house, which is from heauen.

3 If so be that being clothed wee shall not bee confounded.

4 For wee that are in this tabernacle, doe groane being burdened, not for that we would be vnclothed, but clothed vpon, that mortality might be swallowed vp of life.

5 Now hee that hath wrought vs for the selfe-same thing of God, who also hath ginen vnto vs the earnest of the Spirit.

6 Therefore we are alwaies confident, knowing that

C H A P. V.

that whileſt we are at home in the body, we are abſent from the Lord.

7 (For we walke by faith, not by ſight.)

8 We are confident, I ſay, and willing rather to be abſent from the body, & to be present with þ Lord.

9 Wherefore wee labour, that whether preſent or abſent we may be accepted of him.

10 For we muſt all appear before the iudgement ſeat of Christ, that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that hee hath done; whether it be good or bad.

11 Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we perſuade men, but we are made maniſt vnto God, & I truſt alſo, are made maniſt in your conſciences.

12 For wee commend not our ſelues againe vnto you, but giue you occaſion to glory on our behalfe, that you may haue ſomewhaſt to anſwerethem, which glory in appearance and not in heart.

13 For whether we be beſides our ſelues, it iſt to God: or whether we be sober, iſt iſt for your cauſe.

14 For the loue of Christ constraineth vs, because wee thus judge: that if one died for all, then were all dead:

15 And that he dyed for all, that they which liue, ſhould not henceforth liue vnto themſelues, but vnto him which died for them, and roſe againe.

16 Wherfore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we haue knowne Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more.

17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are paſt away, behold, all things are become new.

18 And all things are of God, who hath reconciled vs to himſelfe by Iesuſ Christ, and hath giuen to vs the miniftry of reconciliation.

19 To wit, that God was in Christ, reconciling the worlde vnto himſelfe, not imputing their treaſpaſſes vnto them, and hath committed vnto vs the word of reconciliation.

20 Now then wee are Ambaſſadours for Christ, as though God did beſeech you by vs: we pray you in Christs stead, be reconciled to God.

21 For he hath made him to be ſinne for vs, who knew no ſinne, that we might bee made the righteouſneſſe of God in him.

CHAP.

II. CORINTHIANS:

CHAP. VI.

1 Of Pauls faithfulness in his ministry. 14 Exhortation to avoid adultery.

WE then, as workers together with him, beseech you also, that yee receive not the grace of God in vain.

2 (For he saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation haue I succoured thee: behold, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.

3 Giuing no offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed.

4 But in all things approuing our selves, as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,

5 In stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings.

6 By purenesse, by knowledge, by long suffering, by kindnessse, by the holy Ghost, by loue vnfained,

7 By the word of trueth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousness, on the right hand, and on the left:

8 By honour and dishonour, by euill report, and good report, as deceivers, and yet true:

9 As vknowne, and yet well knowne: as dying, and behold, we live: as chastened, and not killed:

10 As sorrowfull, yet alway reioycing: as poore, yet making many rich: as hauing nothing, and yet possessing all things.

11 O yee Corinthians, our mouth is open vnto you, our heart is enlarged.

12 Ye are not straitned in vs, but yee are straitned in your owne bowels.

13 Now for a recompence in the same, (I speake as vnto my children) be ye also enlarged.

14 Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelieuers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousnesse? and what communion hath light with darkness?

15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth, with an infidel?

16 And what agreement hath the Temple of God with idols? for yee are the Temple of the living God, as God hath said, I will dwell in them, & walke in them and

C H A P. VII.

and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

17 Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing, and I will receive you,

18 And will be a Father unto you and ye shall be my sonnes and daughters saith the Lord Almighty.

C H A P. VII.

1 He exhorteth to purity, 5 add claretb what comfort he tooke in his affliction

H Aving therefore these promises (dearly beloved) let vs cleanse our selues from all filthynesse of the flesh & spirit, perfecting holynesse in the feare of God.

2 Receive vs, we haue wronged no man, we haue corrupted no man, we haue defrauded no man.

3 I speake not this to condemne you: for I haue said before, that you are in our hearts, to die and liue with you.

4 Great is my boldnesse of speech toward you, great is my gloryng of you, I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding ioyfull in all our tribulation.

5 For when we were come into Macedonia, our flesh had no rest, but wee were troubled on every side: without were fightings, within were feares.

6 Neuertheles, God that comforteth those that are cast downe, comforted vs by the comming of Titus.

7 And not by his comming onely, but by the consolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told vs your earnest desire, your mourning, your furent minde toward mee, so that I rejoiced the more.

8 For though I made you sorry with a letter, I doe not repent, though I did repent: for I perceiue that the same Epistle hath made you sorry, though it were but for a season.

9 Now I rejoice, not that y e were made sorry, but that yee sorrowed to repentance: for yee were made sorry after a godly manner, that yee might receive damage by vs in nothing.

10 For godly sorrow worketh repentance to salvation not to be repented of, but the sorrow of the world worketh death.

11 For behold, this selfe same thing that yee sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you, yea, what clearing of your selues, yea, what indignation, yea, what feare, yea, what vehement desire,

II. CORINTHIANS.

fire, yea, what zeale, yea, what rengenge; In all things yee haue approued your selues to be cleare in this matter.

12 Wherefore though I wrote vnto you, I did it not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong, but that our care for you in the sight of God might appeare vnto you.

13 Therefore we were comforted in your comfort, yea, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the ioy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all.

14 For if I haue boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed, but as we speake all things to you in truth, even so our boasting which I made before Titus, is found a truth.

15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilst he remembreth the obedience of you all, howe & feare and trembling you received him.

16 I reioyce therefore that I haue confidence in you in all things.

C H A P. VIII.

1 He stirreth them vp to contrilace to the Saints.

M OREover brethren, we do you to wit of y grace of God bestowed on y Churches of Macedonia,

2 How that in a great triall of affliction, the abundance of their ioy, and their deepe pouerty abounded vnto the riches of their liberality.

3 For to their power (I beare record) yea, and beyond their power they were willing of themselves:

4 Praying vs with much entreaty, that we would receiue the gift, and take vpon vs the fellowship of the ministring to the Saints.

5 And this sby did, not as wee hoped, but first gave their owne selues to the Lord, and vnto vs, by the will of God.

6 In somuch y we desired Titus, that as he had begun, so he would also finish in you the same grace also.

7 Therefore (as yee abound in every thing, in faith and utterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your loue to vs) see that ye abound in this grace also.

8 I speake not by commandement, but by occasion of the forwardnesse of others, and to proue the sinceritie of your loue.

9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Iesus Christ, that

C H A P. VIII.

that though hee was rich, yet for your sakes hee
came poore, y^e through his power might be rich.

10 And herein I give my aduice, for this is expedient
for you, who haue begun before, not onely to
doe, but also to be forward a yeere agoe.

11 Now therefore performe the doing of it, that
as there was a readinesse to will, so there may bee a
performance also of that which you haue.

12 For if there be first a willing minde, it is ac-
cepted according to that a man hath, and not accor-
ding to that he hath not.

13 For I meane not that other men be eased, and
you burdened:

14 But by an equality: that now at this time your
abundance may be a supply for their want, that their
abundance also may be a supply for your want, that
there may be equality:

15 As it is written, Hee that had gathered much,
had nothing oner, and he that had gathered little, had
no lacke.

16 But thankes bee to God, which put the same
earnest care into the heart of Titus for you.

17 For indeed he accepted y^e exhortation, but being
more forward of his owne accord, he went vnto you.

18 And we haue sent with him the brother, whose
praise is in the Gospel, throughout all the Churches.

19 And not that onely, but who was also chosen
of the Churches, to trauell with vs with this grace
which is administered by vs to the glory of the same
Lord, and declaration of your ready minde:

20 Avoiding this, that no man should blame vs
in this abundance which is administered by vs.

21 Prouiding for honest things, not onely in the
sight of the Lord, but in the sight of men.

22 And wee haue sent with them our brother
whom we haue oftentimes proued diligent in many
things, but now much more diligent, vpon the great
confidence which I have in you.

23 Whether any doe enquire of Titus, he is my
partner and fellow helper concerning you: or our
brethren be enquired of, they are the messengers of the
Churches, and the glory of Christ.

24 Wherefore shew ye to them, and before the
Churches, the proue of your loue, and of our bo-
asting on your behalfe.

CHAP.

II. CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. IX.

1. He sowereth why he leauet Titus, & and siffereth them
up to a bountiful aboues.

2. For as touching the ministring to the Saints, it is
superfluous for me to write vnto you.

3. For I knowe the forwardnesse of your mind, for
which I boast of you to them of Macedonia, that
Achaia was ready a yeare agoe, and your zeale hath
prouoked very many.

4. Yet have I sent the brethren, lest our boasting
of you should be in vaine in this behalfe, that as I
said, ye may be ready:

5. Lest happily if they of Macedonia come with me,
and finde you unprepared, we (that we say not you)
should be ashamed in this same confident boasting.

6. Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the
brethren, that they would goe before vnto you, and
make vp b forehand your bountys, whereof ye had
notice before, that the same might be ready as a mat-
ter of bounty, not of coneteousnesse.

7. But this I say, He which soweth sparingly, shall
reape sparingly; and he which soweth bountifully,
shall reape bountifully.

8. Every man according as he purposeth in his
heart, *lets him give*, not grudgingly, or of necessi-
tie: for God ioeth a cheerfull giver.

9. (As it is written : Hec hath dispersed abroad,
he hath given to the poore, his righteounesse remai-
neth for ever.

10. Now he that ministreth seed to the sower, doth
minister bread for your food, and multiply your seed
sown, and increase the fruits of your righteounesse)

11. Being enriched in every thing to all bountiful-
nes, which causeth through vs thanksgivings vnto God.

12. For the administration of this service, not one-
ly supplyeth the want of the Saints, but is abundant
also by many thanksgivings vnto God.

13. Whiles by the experiment of this ministrati-
on, they glorie God for your professed subiection
vnto the Gospel of Christ, and for your liberall di-
stribution vnto them, and vnto all men;

14. And

C H A P. X.

14 And by their prayer for you, which long after
you for the exceeding grace of God in you.

15 Thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift.

C H A P. X

1 *Paul's spirit full might: and authority against all ad-*
versaries, & as well when he is present as absent.

Now I Paul my selfe beseech you by my meeknes
and gentenes of Christ, who in presence am base
among you, but being absent am bold toward you:

3 But I beseech you that I may not be bold when
I am present, with that confidence wherewith I
think to be bold against some, which thinke of vs
as if we walked according to the flesh.

3 For though we walke in the flesh, we doe not
warre after the flesh:

4 (For the weapons of our warfare are not car-
nall, but mighty through God to the pulling downe
of strong holds.)

5 Casting downe imaginations, and every high
thing that exalteth it selfe against the knowledge of
God, and bringing into captivity every thought to
the obedience of Christ:

6 And having in a readinesse to renenge all dis-
obedience, when your obedience is fulfilled.

7 Doe ye looke on things after the outward ap-
pearance? If any man trust to himselfe that hee is
Christs, let him of himselfe thinke this againe, that
as he is Christs, even so are we Christs.

8 For though I should boast somewhat more of our
authority (wth the Lord hath giuen vs for edification,
& not for your destruction) I should not be ashamed:

9 That I may not seeme as if I would terrifie
you by letters.

10 For his letters (say they) are weighty and
powerrfull, but his bodily presence is weake, and his
speech contemptible.

11 Let such an one thinkethis, that such as we are
in word by letters, when we are absent, such will we
be also in deed when we are present.

12 For we dare not make our selves of y^e number,
or compare our selues wth some y^e commend themselves;
but they measuring themselues by themselues, and
comparing themselves amongst themselves, are not wise.

13 But we will not boast of things without our
measure

II. CORINTHIANS.

measure, but according to the measure of the rule, which God hath distributed to vs, a measure to reach even unto you.

14 For wee stretch not our selues beyond our measure, as though we reached not unto you, for wee are come as farre as to you also, in preaching the Gospel of Christ.

15 Not boasting of things without our measure, that is, of other mens labours, but hauing hope, when your faith is increased, that wee shall be enlarged by you, according to our rule abundantly.

16 To preach the Goipel in the regions beyond you, and not to boast, in another mans line of things made ready to our hand.

17 But he that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

18 For, not he that commendeth himselfe is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

C H A P. XI.

1 *Pauls enforced commendation of himselfe, & and a comparison with the other Apostles.*

Would to God you could beare with me a little in my folly, and indeed beare with me.

2 For I am icalons ouer you with godly ieiouisie ; for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

3 But I feare lest by any meanes, as the serpene beguiled Eve through his subteltie, so your mindes should be corrupted from the simplicitie which is in Christ.

4 For if he that commeth preacheth another Jesus whom we haue not preached, or if ye receive another spirit whiche haue not received, or another Gospell whiche haue not accepted, ye might well beare with him :

5 For I suppose, I was not a whit behind the very chiefest Apostles.

6 But though I be rude in speech, yet not in knowledge ; but we haue beeene throughly made manifest among you in all things.

7 Haue I committed an offence in abasing my selfe, that you might bee exalted, because I haue presched to you the Gospel of God freely ?

8 I robbed other Churches, taking wages of them to doe you service.

9 And when I was present with you, and wanted, I was chargeable to no man : For that which was lacking

C H A P. XL.

king to mee , the brethren w^e came from Macedonia supplied, and in all things I haue kept my selfe from being burdensome to you . & so will I keepe my selfe .

10 As the truth of Christ is in mee , no man shall stop me of this boasting in the Regions of Achaia .

11 Wherfore ? because I loue you not ? God kno^{ws} eth .

12 But what I doe , that I will doe , that I may cut off occasion from them which desire occasion , that wherein they glory they may be found enemis as we .

13 For such are false Apostles , deceitfull workers , transforming themselues into the Apostles of Christ .

14 And no maruell : for Satan himselfe is transformed into an Angel of light .

15 Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also bee transformed as the ministers of righteousness , whose end shall be according to their works .

16 I say againe , Let no man thinkes mee a foole ; if otherwise , yet as a foole receive mee , that I may boast my selfe a little .

17 That which I speake , I speake it not after my Lord , but as it were foolishly in this confidence of boasting .

18 Seeing that many glory after the flesh , I will glory also .

19 For yee suffer fooles gladly , seeing yee your selues are wise .

20 For ye suffer if a man bring you into bondage , if a man denoure you , if a man take of you , if a man exalt himselfe , if a man smite you on the face .

21 I speake as concerning repreach , as though wee had beeene weake : howbeit , wherein soever any is bold , I speake foolishly , I am bold also .

22 Are they Hebrewes ? so am I : are they Israelites ? so am I : are they the seed of Abraham ? so am I :

23 Are they ministers of Christ ? I speak as a foole , I am more : in labours more abundant : in stripes above measure : in prisons more frequent : in deaths oft .

24 Of the Iewes five times received I fourtie stripes saue one .

25 Thrice was I beaten with rods , once was I stoned : thrice I suffered shipwrack : a night and a day I haue beeene in the deepe :

26 In iourneyng often , in perils of waters , in perils of robbers , in perils by mine owne countrey-

II. CORINTHIANS.

men, in perils by the heathen, in perils in the citie, in perils in the wildernes, in perils in the sea, in perils among false brethren :

27 In wearinesse and painfulnesse, in watchings often, in hunger and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakednesse :

28 Beside those things that are without, that which commeth vpon me daily, the care of all the Churches.

29 Who is weake, and I am not weake ? who is offended, and I burne not ?

30 If I must needs glory, I will glory of the things which conserue mine infirmities.

31 The God and Father of our Lord Iesu Christ, which is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 In Damaske the governour vnder Aretas the kin, kept the citie with a garison, desirous to apprehend me.

33 And through a window in a basket was I lit downe by the wall, and escayed his hands.

C H A P. XII.

3 *Hee commendeth his Apostleship not by revelation, but by his infirmities.*

I tis not expedient for me doubtlesse, to glory, I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord.

2 I knew a man in Christ, aboue fourteene yeeres agoe, whether in the body, I cannot tell, or whether out of the body, I cannot tell, God knoweth : such a one caught vp to the third heaven.

3 And I knew such a man (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell, Go I knoweth)

4 How that he was caught vp into Paradise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawfull for a man to utter.

5 Of such an one will I glory, yet of my selfe I will not glory, but in mine infirmities.

6 For though I would desire to glory, I shall not be a foole : for I will say the truth : But now I forbear, lest any man shoulde thinke of me above that which he seeth me to be : or that he heareth of me.

7 And lest I should be exalted above measure, through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorne in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure.

8 For

C H A P. XII.

3 For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.

4 And he said vnto me, My grace is sufficient for thee : for my strength is made perfect in weake[n]esse. Most gladly thererote will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ, may rest vpon me.

5 Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake: for when I am weake, then am I strong.

6 I am become a foole in glorying, ye haue com-pelled me. For I ought to haue bee[n]e commended of you: for in nothing am I behind the very chiefe[n] Apostles, though I be nothing.

7 Truly the signes of an Apostle were wrought among you in all patience, in signes and wonders, and mighty deeds.

8 For what is it wherein yee were inferiour to other Churches, except is be that I my selfe was not burthenesome to you ? forgive me this wrong.

9 Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you, and I will not be burthenesome vnto you, for I seeke not yours, but you: for the children ought no to lay vp for the parents, but the parents for the children.

10 And I will very gladly spend and be spent for you, though the more abundantly I loue you, the less I be loued.

11 But be it so : I did not burthen you: neverthe-less, being crafty, I caught you with guile.

12 Did I make a gaine of you by any of them whom I sent vnto you ?

13 I desired Titus, and with him I sent a brother: Did Titus make a gaine of you ? Walked wee not in the same spirit ? walked we not in the same steps ?

14 Againe, think yee that wee excuse our selues vnto you ? we speake before God in Christ : but we doe all things, dearely beloued, for your edifying.

15 For I feare least when I come, I shall not finde you such as I would, and that I shall be found vnto you such as ye would not : lest there be debates, en-syngs, wraths, stifes, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults,

16 And least when I come againe, my God will humble me among you, and that I shall bewaile man-

II. CORINTHIANS.

by which haue sinned already, and haue not repented of the vncleanness, and fornication, and lasciuiousnesse, which they haue committed.

C H A P. XIII.

1. *He threatneth obſtinate ſinners, 5 He aduifith them to a triall of their faith.*

THIS is the third time I am comming to you : in the mouth of two or three witnesſes ſhal euery word be eſtabliſhed.

2. *I told you before, and foretell you as if I were present the ſecond time, and being abſent, now I write to them which heretofore haue ſinned, and to all other, that if I come againe, I will not ſpare,*

3. *Since ye ſeeke a prooef of Christ, ſpeaking in me, my to you ward is not weake, but is mighty in you.*

4. *For though he was crucified through weaknes, yet he liueth by the power of God : for we alſo are weake in him, but wee ſhall liue with him by the power of God toward you.*

5. *Examine your ſelues, whether yee bee in the faith : prouoe your owne ſelues. Know ye not your owne ſelues, how that Ieſus Christ is in you, except ye be reprobates ?*

6. *But I truſt that ye ſhall know that wee are not reprobates.*

7. *Now I pray to God that ye do no euill, not that we ſhould appeare approued, but that ye ſhould doe that which is honest, though we be as reprobates :*

8. *For we can doe nothing againſt the truth, but for the truth.*

9. *For we are glad when we are weake; and ye are ſtrong : and this alſo we wiſh, even your perfection.*

10. *Therefore I write these things being abſent, leſt being preſent I ſhould uſe ſharpenesse, according to the power which the Lord hath giuen me to edification, and not to deſtruacion.*

11. *Finally, brethren, farewell : bee perfect, be of good conforſt, be of one minde, liue in peace, and the God of loue and peace ſhall be with you.*

12. *Greete one another with an holy kisſe.*

13. *All the Saints ſalute you.*

14. *The grace of the Lord Ieſus Christ, and the loue of God, and the communion of the holy Ghost be with you all, Amen.*

The

C H A P. I.

The second Epistle to the Corinthisians was written
from Philippus a citie of Macedonia, by Titus
and Lucas.

¶ The Epistle of Paul to the Galatians.

C H A P. I.

6 He wondresthat they haue so soone left him, and
the Gospell, it which he learned not of men, but
of God.

Paul an Apostle, not of men, neither by
man, but by Iesus Christ, and God the
Father who raised him from the dead,
2 And all the brethren which are with
me, vnto the Churches of Galatia :

3 Grace be vnto you and peace, from God the Fa-
ther, and from our Lord Iesus Christ.

4 Who gaue himselfe for our saines, that hee
might deliuere vs from this present euill world, ac-
cording to the will of God and our Father,

5 To whom be glory for euer and euer, Amen.

6 I maruile, that you are so soone remoued
from him, that called you into the grace of Christ
vnto another Gospell;

7 Which is not another, but there be some that
trouble you, and would peruerter the Gospell of Christ.

8 But though wee, or an Angel from heauen
preach any other Gospell vnto you, then that which
we haue preached vnto you, let him be accursed.

9 As we said before, so say I now againe, If any
man preach any other Gospell vnto you, then that
ye haue received, let him be accursed.

10 For doe I now perswade men or God ? or doe
I seeke to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I
should not be the servant of Christ.

11 But I certifie yon, brethren, that the Gospell
which was preached of me, is not after man:

12 For I neither received it of man, neither was I
taught it, but by the revelation of Iesus Christ.

13 For yee haue heard of my conuersation in time
past, in the Iewes religion how that beyond measure
I persecuted the Church of God, and wasted it:

14 And profited in the Iewes religion, aboue many
my equals in mine owne nation, being more excep-
dingly zealous of the traditions of my fathers.

TO THE GALATIANS.

14 But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mothers wombe, and called me by his grace,

15 To reueale his Son in me, that I might preach him among the heathen, immediatly I conferred not with flesh and blood:

16 Neither went I vp to Hierusalem to them which were Apostles before me, but I went into Arabia, and returned againe vnto Damascus.

17 Then after three yeeres, I went vp to Hierusalem to see Peter, and abode with him fifteene dayes,

18 But other of the Apostles saw I none, sanc Iames the Lords brother.

19 Now the thinges which I write vnto you, behold, before God I lie not.

20 Afterwards, I came into the regions of Syria, and Cicilia,

21 And was unknowne by face vnto the Churches of Iudea which were in Christ.

22 But they had heard onely, that he which persecuted vs in times past, now preacheth the faith, which once he destroyed.

23 And they glorified God in me.

C H A P. II.

14 Of iustification by faith and not by workes.

Then fourteene yeeres after, I went vp againe to Hierusalem with Barnabas, and tooke Titus with me also.

2 And I went vp by revelation, and communica-
ted vnto them that Gospel, which I preach among
the Gentiles, but priuately to them which were of
reputation, lest by any meanes I should runne, or
had runne in vaine.

3 But neither Titus, who was with mee, being a
Greeke, was compelled to be circumcised:

4 And that because of false brethren vnawares,
brought in, who came in priuily to spic out our li-
berty, which wee haue in Christ Iesus, that they
might bring vs into bondage.

5 To whom we gane place by subiection, no not
for an houre, that the truthe of the Gospel might
continue with you.

6 But of these, who seemed to bee somewhat,
(whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me,
God accepteth no mans person) for they who seemed
to

C H A P. I L.

to be somewhat, in conference added nothing to me,

7 But contrariwise, when they saw that the Gospel of the vncircumcision was committed vnto me, as the Gospel of the circumcision was vnto Peter:

8 (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the Circumcision, the same was mighty in me towards the Gentiles.

9 And when James, Cephas and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was giuen vnto mee, they gaue vnto me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship, that wee shold goe vnto the heathen, and they vnto the circumcision.

10 Onely they shold that wee should remember the poore, the same which I also was forward to doe.

11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.

12 For before that certayne came from James, hee did eat with the Gentiles; but when they were come, he withdrew, and separated himselfe; seating them which were of the circumcision.

13 And the other Iewes dissembled likewise with him, insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation.

14 But when I saw that they walked not vprightly according to the trueth of the Gospel, I said vnto Peter before them all, If thou, being a Iew, linest after the maner of Gentiles, and not as do the Iewes, why compellest thou the Gentiles to line as doe the Iewes?

15 We who are Iewes by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles.

16 Knowing that a man is not iustified by the workes of the Law, but by the faith of Iesus Christ, even wee haue beleued in Iesus Christ, that wee might be iustified by the faith of Christ, and not by the workes of the Law: for by the workes of the Law shall no flesh be iustified.

17 But if while we seeke to be iustified by Christ, wee our selues also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sinne? God for bid.

18 For if I build againe the things which I destroyed, I make my selfe a transgressor.

19 For I through the Law am dead to the Law, that I might liue vnto God.'

TO THE GALATIANS.

20 I am crucified with Christ. Neuerthelesse, I live, yet not I, but Christ liveth in me, and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himselfe for me.

21 I doe not frustrate the grace of God : for if righteousness come by the Law, then Christ is dead in vaine.

C H A P. III.

1 They that beleene are iustified with Abraham.

O Foolish Galatians , who hath bewitched you that yee shouldest not obey the truthe, before whose eyes Iesus Christ hath beeene euidently set forth, crucified among you ?

2 This onely would I learne of you, Received yee the spirit by the workes of the Law , or by the hearing of faith ?

3 Are yee so foolish ? having began in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh ?

4 Hane yee suffered so many things in vaine ? If it be yet in vaine,

5 Hee therefore that ministreth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the workes of the Law, or by the hearing of faith.

6 Even as Abraham beleueed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness.

7 Know ye therefore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham.

8 And the Scripture foreseeing that God would iustifie the heathen through faith, preached before the Gospel unto Abraham, saying , In thee shall all nations be blessed.

9 So then they which be of faith , are blessed with faithfull Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the workes of the Law, are vnder the curse, for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the booke of the Law to doe them.

11 But y no man is iustified by y Law in the sight, of God, it is evident; for, The just shall live by faith.

12 And the Law is not of faith : but the man that doeth them, shall live in them.

13 Christ hath redeemed vs from the curse of the Law , being made a curse for vs: for it is written Cursed is every one that hangeth on trees

14 That

C H A P. III.

14 That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles, through Iesus Christ: that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.

15 Brethren, I speake after the manner of men: though it be but a mans covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth or addeth thereto.

16 Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He faith not, And to seeds, as of many, but as of one, and to thy seed, which is Christ.

17 And this I say, that the Covenant that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the Law which was sone hundred and thirty yeeres after, cannot disannull, that it should make the promise of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance be of Law, it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise.

19 Wherfore then *ferueth* the Law? it was added because of transgressions, till the seed shoulde come, to whom the promise was made, *and is* was ordained by Angels in the hand of a Mediator.

20 Now a Mediator is not a Mediator of one, but God is one.

21 Is the Law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had beene a Law ginen which could haue giuen life, verely rightewisnesse shoulde haue beene by the Law.

22 But the Scripture hath concluded all vnder sinne, that the promise by faith of Iesus Christ might be giuen to them that belieue.

23 But before faith came, we were kept vnder the Law, flat vp vnto the faith, which shoulde afterward be reuealed.

24 Wherfore the Law was our Schoolemaster to bring vs vnto Christ: we might be iustified by faith.

25 But after that faith is come, we are no longer vnder a Schoolemaster.

26 For yee are al the children of God by faith in Christ Iesus.

27 For as many of you as haue beene baptizied into Christ, haue put on Christ.

28 There is neither Jew nor Greeke, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all one in Christ Iesus.

29 And if yee be Christs, then are ye Abrahams seed, and heires according to the promise.

TO THE GALATIANS.

CHAP. IIII.

1 We were under the Law till Christ came.

N Now I say, that the heire as long as hee is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be Lord of all;

2 But is vnder tutors and gouernours, vntill the time appointed of the Father.

3 Even so wee, when we were children, were in bondage vnder the elements of the world:

4 But when the fulnesse of the time was come, God sent foorth his Sonne made of a woman, made vnder the Law.

5 To redeeme them that were vnder the Law, that we might receive the adoption of sonnes.

6 And because ye are sons, God hath sent foorth the Spirit of his Sonne into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father.

7 Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a sonne, and if a sonne, then an heire of God through Christ.

8 Howbeit, then when ye knew not God, ye did service vnto them, which by nature are no gods.

9 But now after that yee hane knowne God, or rather are knowne of God, how turne ye againe to the weake and beggarly elements wherunto yee desire againe to be in bondage?

10 Ye obserue dayes, & moneths, & times, & yeeres,

11 I am afraid of you, lest I haue bestowed vpon you labour invaine.

12 Brethren, I beseech you, be as I am: for I am as ye are, ye haue not iniured me at all.

13 Ye know how through infirmitie of the flesh, I preached the Gospel vnto you at the first.

14 And my temptation which was in the flesh, yee despised not, nor reiected, but received mee as an Angel of God, even as Christ Iesus.

15 Where is then the blessednesse you speake of? for I boore you record, that if it had beene possible, yee would haue plucked out your owne eyes, and haue giuen them to me.

16 Am I therefore become your enemy because I tell you the truth?

17 They zealously affect you, but not well: yea, they would exclude you, that you might affect them.

18 But

C H A P. V.

18 But it is good to be zealously affected alwayes
in a good thing, and not onely when I am present
with you.

19 My little children, of whom I travail in birth
asigne vntill Christ be formed in you:

20 I desire to be present with you now, and to
change my voyce, for I stand in doubt of you.

21 Tell me, yee that desire to be vnder the Law,
doe ye not heare the Law?

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two sons,
the one by a bond-maid, the other by a free-woman.

23 But he who was of the bond-woman, was borne
after the flesh: but hee of the free-woman was by
promise.

24 Which things are an Allegorie, for these are
the two Covenants, the one from the mount Sinai,
which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar.

25 For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and an-
swertoeth to Hierusalem which now is, and is in bon-
dage with her children.

26 But Hierusalem which is abone, is free, which
is the mother of vs all.

27 For it is written, Reloyce thou barren that be-
test not, breake foorth and cry thou that trauallest
not, for the desolate hath many more children then
she that hath an husband.

28 Now we, brethren, as Isaac was, are the chil-
dren of promise.

29 But as then, hee that was borne after the flesh,
persecuted him that was borne after the Spirit, even
so it is now.

30 Neverthelesse, what saith the Scripture, Cast
out the bond-woman and her sonne: for the sonne
of the bond-woman, shall not be heire with the son
of the free-woman.

• 31 So then, brethren, wee are not children of the
bond-woman, but of the free.

C H A P. V.

1 He moouesh them to stand in their libertie, 3 and
not to obserue circumcision: 13 but rather loose.

S Tand fast therefore in the libertie wherewith
Christ hath made vs free, and be not intangled
againe with the yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul say vnto you, that if yee bee
circum-

TO THE GALATIANS.

circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.

3 For I testifie againe to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to doe the whole Law.

4 Christ is become of none effect vnto you, whosoever of you are iustified by the Law : ye are fallen from grace.

5 For wee through the spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by faith.

6 For in Iesus Christ, neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but faith which worketh by loue.

7 Ye did ranne well, who did hinder you, that ye should not obey the truthe ?

8 This perfwasion commeth not of him that calleth you.

9 A little leuen leaneneth the whole lumph.

10 I haue confidence in you through the Lord, that you will be none otherwise minded, but hee y trou-bleth you, shall beare his judgment, whosoever he be.

11 And I, brethren, as I yet preach circumcision, why doe I yet suffer persecutions? then is the offence of the crosse ceased.

12 I would they were even cut off w trouble you.

13 For brethren, yee haue bin called vnto libertie, only vsse not libertie for an occasion to the flesh, but by loue serue one another.

14 For all the Law is fulfilled in one word, *Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe.*

15 But if ye bite and deuoure one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another.

16 This I say then, Walke in the Spirit, and yee shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh.

17 For the flesh lusteth against the spirit, & the spirit against the flesh: & these are contrary y one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.

18 But if ye be led of the Spirit, yee are not vnder the Law.

19 Now the workes of the flesh are manifest, which are these, adulterie, fornication, vncleanness, lasciuiousnesse,

20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies,

21 Envynings, murthers, drunkennesse, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have

C H A P. VI.

hane also told you in time past, that they which doe such things, shall not inherit the kingdome of God.

22 But the fruit of the Spirit is loue, joy, peace, long suffering, gentlenesse, goodnesse, faith,

23 Meekenesse, temperance: against such there is no law.

24 And they that are Christes, haue crucified the flesh with the affections and lusts.

25 If we liue in the Spirit, let vs also walke in the Spirit.

26 Let vs not be desirous of vaine glory, pronouking ouer another, envying one another.

C H A P. VI.

1 *Hee manoueth them to deale mildly with a brother that flippesh, & so be liberall to their teachers.*

Bethen, if a man be overtaken in a fault, yee which are spirituall, restore such a one in the spirit of meekenesse, confidering thy selfe, lest thou also be tempted.

2 Beare yee one anothers burdens, and so fulfill the Law of Christ.

3 For if a man thinke himselfe to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himselfe.

4 But let every man prooue his owne worke, and then shall he haue reioycing in himselfe alone, and not in another.

5 For every man shall beare his owne burthen.

6 Let him that is taught in the word communicate vnto him that teacheth, in all good things.

7 Be not deceived, God is not mocked: for whatsoeuer a man soweth, that shall he also reap.

8 For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption: but he that soweth to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting.

9 And let vs not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.

10 As wee haue therefore opportunity, let vs doe good vnto all men, especially vnto them who are of the household of faith.

11 Ye see how large a letter I haue written vnto you with mine owne hand.

12 As many as desire to make a faire shew in the flesh, they constraine you to be circumcised: only let them should suffer persecution for the crosse of Christ

TO THE EPHESIANS.

13 For neither they themselves who are circumcised, keepe the Law, but desire to haue you circumcised, that they may glory in your flesh.

14 But God forbid that I shoulde glory, saue in the Cross of our Lord Iesvs Christ, by whom the word is crucified vnto me, and I vnto the world.

15 For in Christ Iesvs neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor vncircumcision, but a new creature.

16 And as many as walke according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and vpon the Israel of God.

17 From henceforth let no man trouble me, for I beare in my body the markes of the Lord Iesus.

18 Brethren, the grace of our Lord Iesvs Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Vnto the Galatians, written from Rome.

¶ The Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Ephesians.

C H A P. I.

4 Of our Election, & and adoption, in which is the
fountaine of salvation.

Paul an Apostle of Iesvs Christ, by the will of God, to the Saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithfull in Christ Iesus,

2 Grace be to you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesvs Christ,

3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Iesvs Christ, who hath blessed vs with all spirituall blessings in heavenly places in Christ:

4 According as hee hath chosen vs in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holly and without blame before him in loue:

5 Having predestinated vs vnto the adoption of children by Iesvs Christ to himselfe, according to the good pleasure of his will:

6 To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made vs accepted in the beloved.

7 In whom wee haue redēption through his blood, the forgiuenesse of sinnes, according to the riches of his grace,

8 Wherein hee hath abounded toward vs in all wisedome and prudence:

9 Having

C H A P. I.

9 Having made knowne vnto vs the mysterie of his will, according to his good pleasure, which hee had purposed in himselfe.

10 That in the dispensation of the fulnesse of times, he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heauen, and which are on earth, cuen in him :

11 In whom also we have obtained an iheritance, being predestinatied according to the purpose of him who worketh all things after the counsell of his owne will:

12 That wee should be to the praise of his glorie, who first trusted in Christ:

13 In whom wee also trusstid after that yee heard the word of trueth, the Gospel of yont saluation : in whom also afret that yee beleeved, yee were sealed with that holy spirit of promise:

14 Which is the earnest of our inheritance, vntill the redemption of the purchased possesyon, vnto the praise of his glory.

15 Wherefore I also after I heard of your faith in the Lord Iesus, and loue vnto all the Saints,

16 Cease not to give thankes for you, making mention of you in my prayers,

17 That the God of our Lord Iesus Christ the Father of glory, may give vnto you the Spirite of wisedome and revelation in the knowledge of him :

18 The eyes of your vnderstanding being inflignted : that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the Saints :

19 And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to vs-ward who beleue, according to the working of his mightie power:

20 Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead : and set him at his owne right hand in the heavenly places,

21 Farre aboue all principallity & power & might, and dominion, and every name y is named, not onely in this world, but also in that which is to come. .

22 And hath put all things vnder his seete : and gave him to be y head ouer all thingsto y Charch,

23 Which is his body, the fulnesse of him that filleth all in all.

C H A P.

TO THE EPHESIANS.

CHAP. II.

1 What we were 3 by nature, and what we are 5 by grace. 10 We are created vnto good works.

1 And you hast he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sinnes,

2 Wherin in times past yee walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the ayre, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience,

3 Among whom also we all had our conuersation in times past, in the lusts of our flesh fulfilling the desires of the flesh, and of the minde, and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

4 But God who is rich in mercy, for his great loue wherewith he loued vs,

5 Even when we were dead in sinnes, hath quickened vs together with Christ, (by grace yee are sauad.)

6 And hath raised vs vp together, and made vs sit together in heavenly places in Christ Iesus:

7 That in the ages to come, hee might shew the exceeding richness of his grace, in his kindnesse towards vs, through Christ Iesus.

8 For by grace are yee sauad through faith: and that not of your selues: is the gift of God:

9 Not of works, lest any man should boast.

10 For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Iesus vnto good works, which God hath before ordained, that we should walke in them.

11 Wherefore remember, that yee being in time passed Gentiles in the flesh, who are called vncircumcision by that which is called the circumcision in the flesh made by hands,

12 That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the Common-wealthe of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, hauing no hope, and without God in the world.

13 But now in Christ Iesus, ye who sometimes were farr off, are made nigh by the blood of Christ.

14 For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken downe the middle wall of partition betweene vs:

15 Hauing abolished in his flesh the enmity euen the law of commandements consaines in ordinances, for

C H A P. III.

for to make in himselfe of twaine, one new man, so
making peace.

16 And þ þ ye might reconcile both vnto God in one
body by the croſſe, haſing ſlaine the enmity thereby,

17 And came and preached peace to you which
were aſſare off, and to them that were nigh.

18 For through him we both haue an acceſſe, by
one Spirit vnto the Father.

19 Now therefore ye are no more ſtrangers and
forreiners, but fellow citizens with the Saints, and of
the hou'hold of God:

20 And are built vpon the foundation of the Apo-
ſtles and Prophets, Iefus Christ himſelfe being the
chiefe corner ſtone,

21 In whom all the building ſitly framed together,
groweth vnto an holy Temple in the Lords:

22 In whom you also are buildest together for
an habitation of God through the Spirit.

C H A P. III.

5 The hidden mysterie, & ſhat the Gentiles ſhould
be ſenad: 8 This was Paul to preache.

F Or this cauſe I Paul the prisoner of Iefus Christ
for you Gentiles,

6 If yee haue heard of the diſpenſation of the
grace of God, which is giuen me to youward:

7 How that by reueltion he made knownen vnto
me the mysterie, (as I wrote afore in few words,

8 Wherby when wee read, yee may underſtand
my knowledge in thy mysterie of Christ.)

5 Which in other ages was not made knownes
vnto the ſons of men, as it is now reuealed vnto his
holy Apoſtles and Prophets by the Spirit,

6 That the Gentiles ſhould be fellow heires, and
of the ſame body, and partakers of his promife in
Christ by the Gofpel:

7 Whereof I was made a minister according to
the gift of the grace of God giuen vnto mee, by the
effectuall working of his power.

8 Vnto me who am leſſe then þ least of all Saints,
is this grace giuen, that I ſhould preach among the
Gentiles the unſearched riches of Christ,

9 And to make all men ſee what is the fellow-
ſhip of the mysterie, which from the beginning of
the world hath beene hid in God, who created all
things by Iefus Christ:

10 To

TO THE EPHESIANS.

10 To the intent that now vnto the principalities and powers in heauenly places, might be knownen by the Church, the manifold wisedome of God,

11 According to the eternall purpose which hee purposed in Christ Iesvs our Lord:

12 I whom we haue boldnesse and accesse, with confidence by the f.ith of him.

13 Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory.

14 For this cause I bow my knees vnto the Father of our Lord Iesus Christ,

15 Of whom the whole family in heauen and earth is named:

16 That he would grant you according to the riches of his glory, to be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man :

17 That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith, that ye being rooted and grounded in loue,

18 May be able to comprehend with all Saints, what is the breadth, & length, & depth, and height:

19 And to know the loue of Christ which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with all the fulnesse of God.

20 Now vnto him that is able to doe exceeding abundantly, aboue all that we aske or thinke, according to the power that worketh in vs:

21 Vnto him be glory in the Church by Christ Iesus, throughout all ages world without end. Amen.

C H A P. III I I.

1 He exhorteth to walke: 24 to put on the new man,
25 To cast off lying, and corrupte communciations.

I Therefore the Prisoner of the Lord beseech you, that ye walke worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,

2 With all lowlinesse and meekenesse, with long suffering, forbearing one another in loue.

3 Endeauouring to keepe the vasure of the Spirit, in the bond of peace.

4 There is one body and one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling.

5 One Lord, one Faith, one Baptisme,

6 One God, and Father of all, who is aboue all, and through all, and in you all.

7 But vnto every one of vs is given grace, according

C H A P. I I I I.

ording to the measure of the gift of Christ.

8 Wherefore he faith, When he ascended vp on high he led captivity captive, & gaue gifts vnto men.

9 (Now that he ascended what is it, but that hee also descended first into the lower parts of the earth?

10 He that descended, is the same also that ascended vp farre aboue all heauens that he might fill all things.)

11 And hee gave some Apostles, and some Prophets: and some Euangelists: and some Pastors and teachers;

12 For the perfecting of the Saints, for the worke of the ministry, for y edifying of the body of Christ:

13 Till we all come in y vniuersitie of the faith, & of the knowledge of the Sonne of God, vnto a perfect man, vnto y measure of the stature of the fulnes of Christ.

14 That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with euery wind of doctrine by the flight of men, and cunning craftynesse, whereby they lie in wait to deceiue;

15 But speaking the truthe in loue, may growe vp into him in all things which is the head , euen Christ :

16 From whom the whole body fitly ioyned together, and compacted by that which euery ioyned supplieth, according to the effectuall working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the body vnto the edifying of it selfe in loue.

17 This I say therefore, and testifie in the Lord, that ye henceforth walke not as other Gentiles walke in the vanity of their mind

18 Hasing y understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God, through y ignorance that is in them, because of the blindnesse of their heart :

19 Who being past feeling, hane ginen themselves ouer vnto lasciuiousnes, to walke all vncleanness with greedinesse,

20 But ye haue not so learned Christ :

21 If so be that ye haue heard him, and haue been taught by him, as the truth is in Iesus,

22 That ye put off concerning the former conuersation, the old man which is corrupt according to the deceitfull lusts;

23 And be renewed in the spirit of your minde :

24 And

TO THE EPHESIANS.

24 And that ye put on that new man, which after God is created in righteousness, and true holiness,

25 Wherefore putting away lying, speake every man truth with his neighbour, for we are members one of another.

26 Be angry and sinne not: let not the Sunne goe downe upon your wrath:

27 Neither giue place to the devill.

28 Let him y stole, steale no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that ye may haue to giue to him y needeth.

29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the vse of edifying, that it may minister grace vnto the hearers.

30 And grieve not the holy spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed to the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitterness and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and euil speaking be put away from you, with all malice,

32 And be yee kinde one to another, tender hearted, forgiuing one another, even as God for Christ sake hath forgiuen you.

C H A P. V.

2 He exhorteth to loue, 3 and to flee fornication.

B E ye therfore followers of God as deare children.

2 And walke in loue, as christ also hath loued vs, and hath giuen himselfe for vs, an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet smelling sanguine:

3 But fornication and all uncleanness, or contousness, let it not be once named among you, as becommeth Saints:

4 Neither filthinesse, nor foolish talking, nor jesting which are not convenient: but rather giuing of thankes.

5 For this yee know, that no whoremonger, nor uncleane person, nor covetous man who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdome of Christ, and of God.

6 Let no man deceiue you with vaine words: for because of these things commeth the wrath of God vpon the children of disobedience.

7 Be ye not therefore partakers with them.

8 For yee were sometimes darkenesse; but now are ye light in the Lord: walke as children of light.

9 (For

C H A P . V.

9 (For the fruit of the spirit is in all goodness, and righteousness and trueth.)

10 Proouing what is acceptable vnto the Lord:

11 And have no fellowship with the vnfruitfull workers of darkness, but rather reprove them.

12 For it is a shame euen to speake of those things which are done of them in secret.

13 But all things that are reprooued, are made manifest by the light: for whatsoeuer doeth make manifest, is light.

14 Wherfore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, & arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.

15 See then that yee walke circumspectly, not as fooles, but as wise;

16 Redeeming the time, because the dayes are euill.

17 Wherefore be ye not vnwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is.

18 And be not drunke with wine, wherein is excess: but be filled with the Spirit.

19 Speaking to your selues in Psalmes, and Hyynnes, and spirituall songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord:

20 Giuing thankes alwayes for all things vnto God, and the Father, in the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ.

21 Submitting your selues one to another in the feare of God.

22 Wives submit your selues vnto your own husbands as vnto the Lord.

23 For the husband is the head of the wife, euen as Christ is the head of the Church: and hee is the Sanctor of the body.

24 Therefore as the Church is subiect vnto Christ, so let their wifes be to their owne husbands in euerthing.

25 Husbands, loue your wifes, euen as Christ also loued the Church, and gaue himselfe for it.

26 That he might sanctifie and cleanse us with the washing of water by the word,

27 That he might present it to himselfe a glorious Church, not haning spot or wrinkle, or any such thing: but if it should be holy, and without blemish.

28 So ought men to loue their wifes, as their owne bodies: he that loueth his wife, loueth himselfe.

29 For

TO THE EPHESIANS.

29 For no man hateth his owne flesh: but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the Church:

30 For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

31 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be ioyned vnto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.

32 This is a great mysterie: but I speake concerning Christ and the Church.

33 Neverthelesse, let every one of you in particular so loue his wife, even as himselfe, and the wife see that she reverence her husband.

C H A P. V I.

1 The duetie of the children: 5 of seruants. 10 Our life is a marfare. 13 The Christians armour.

Children obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right.

2 Honour thy father and mother, (which is the first Commandement with promise.)

3 That it may be well with thee, and thou mayest liue long on the earth.

4 And yee fathers, prouoke not your children to wrath: but bring them vp in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

5 Seruants, be obedient vnto them that are your masters according to the fletch, with feare and trembling, in singlenesse of your heart, as vnto Christ:

6 Not with eye seruise, as men pleasers, but as the seruants of Christ, doing y^e will of God from y^e heart.

7 With good will doing seruise, as to the Lord, and not to men:

8 Knowing that whatsoeuer good thing any man doeth, the same shall he receiue of the Lord, whether he be bond or free.

9 And ye masters, doe y^e same things vnto thē forbearing threatening: knowing y^e your master also is in heauen, neither is there respect of persons with him.

10 Finally my brethren be strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might.

11 Put on the whole armour of God, that yee may be able to stand against the wiles of the dewill.

12 For we wrestle not against fletch and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the

C H A P. I.

rulers of the darkenesse of this world, against spirituall wickednesse in high places.

13 Wherefore take vnto you the whole armour of God, that yee may be able to withstand in the euill day, and having done all to stand.

14 Stand therefore, having your loynes girt about with trueth, and having on the breastplate of righteousness:

15 And your feet shod with the preparation of the Gospel of peace.

16 Aboue all taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fierie darts of the wicked.

17 And take the helmet of saluation, and the sword of the spirit, which is the word of God;

18 Praying alwayes with all prayer and supplication in the spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseveriance, and supplication for all Saints,

19 And for mee, that vtterance may be gisen vnto mee, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make knowne the mysterie of the Gospel:

20 For which I am au ambassadour in bonds, that therein I may speake boldly as I ought to speake.

21 But that ye also may know my affaires, and how I doe, Tychicus a beloued brother, and fauill minister in my Lord, shal make known to you all things:

22 Whom I haue sent vnto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affaires, and that hee might comfort your hearts.

23 Peace be to the brethren, and loue with faith from God the Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

24 Grace be with all them that loue our Lord Iesus Christ in sincerite. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome vnto the Ephesians by
Tychicus.

The Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Philippians.

C H A P. I.

3 Pauls thankfulness to God for them.

Paul and Timothens the seruants of Iesus Christ, to all the Saints in Christ Iesus, which are at Philippi, with the Bishops and Deacons;

¶ Grace

TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

2 Grace be vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 I thanke my God vpon every remembrance of you,
4 Alwayes in every prayer of mine for you all, making request with ioy

5 For your fellowship is the Gospel from the first day vntill now,

6 Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good worke in you, will performe it vntill the day of Iesus Christ:

7 Euen as it is meet for me to thinke this of you all, because I haue you in my heart, in as much as both in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the Gospel, ye all are partakers of my grace.

8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all, in the bowels of Iesus Christ.

9 And this I pray, that your loue may abound yet more and more in knowledge, and in all iudgement:

10 That yee may approoue things that are excellent, that ye may be sincere, and without offence till the day of Christ:

11 Being filled with 3 fruits of righteousness which are by Iesus Christ vnto the glory & praise of God,

12 But I would yee shoulde understand, brethren, that the things which happened vnto mee, haue fallen out rather vnto the furtherance of the Gospel.

13 So that my bonds in Christ, are manifest in all the palace, and in all other places.

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bolde to speake the word without feare.

15 Some indeed preach Christ, euen of envy and strife, and some also of good will.

16 The one preach Christ of contention, not sincerely supposing to adde affliction to my bonds:

17 But the other of loue, knowing that I am set for the defence of the Gospel.

18 What then? Notwithstanding every way, whether in pretence, or in trutb, Christ is preached, and I therein doe reioyce, yea, and will reioyce.

19 For I know that this shall turne to my saluation through your prayer; and the supply of the spirit of Iesus Christ.

20 According to my earnest expectation, and my hope

C H A P. II.

hope, that in nothing I shalbe ashamed: but that with all boldnesse, as alwayes, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death.

21 For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gaine.

22 But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose I wot not.

23 For I am in a strait betwixt two, hauing a desire to depart, and to be with Christ, which is far better.

24 Neuerthelesse, to abide in the flesh, is more needfull for you.

25 And hauing this confidence, I know that I shal abide and continue with you all, for your furtherance and ioy of faith;

26 That your reioyng may be more abundant in Iesus Christ for me, by my comming to you againte.

27 Onely let your conuersation bee as it becommeth the Gospel of Christ, that whether I come and see you, or else be absent, I may heare of your affaires, that ye stand fast in one spirir, with one minde, striaung together for the faith of the Gospel.

28 And in nothing terrified by your aduersaries, which is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of saluation, and that of God.

29 For unto you it is given in the behalfe of Christ, not onely to beleue on him, but also to suffer for his sake:

30 Hauing the same conflict which ye saw in me, and now heare to be in me.

C H A P. II.

2 He exhorteth to unity and humilitie.

IF there be therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of loue, if any fellowship of the spirir, if any bowels and mercies;

3 Fulfill ye my ioy, that ye be like minded, hauing the same loue, being of one accord, of one minde.

4 Let nothing bee done through strife or vaine-glory, but in lowlinesse of mind let each esteeme other better then themselves.

5 Looke not every man on his owne things, but every man also on the things of others.

6 Let this minde be in you, which was also in Christ Iesus:

7 Who being in the forme of God, thought it

TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

not robbery to be equal with God :

7 But made himselfe of no reputation, and took
vpon him the forme of a servant, and was made in
the likenesse of men.

8 And being found in fashio[n] as a man, he hum-
bled himselfe, and became obedient vnto death,
even the death of the croſie.

9 Wherfore God also hath highly exalted him,
and giuen him a Name, which is aboue every name:

10 That at the Name of Iesus every knee shoulde
bow, of things in heauen, and things in earth, and
things vnder the earth :

11 And that euery tongue shoulde confesse, that Ie-
sus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

12 Wherefoer, my beloved, as ye haue alwayes ob-
eyed, not as in my presence onely, but now much
more in my absence, worke out your owne saluation
with feare and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both to
will and to doe of his good pleasure.

14 Doe all things w[ith]out murmurings and di-
gutlings :

15 That ye may be blameleſſe, and harmeleſſe, the
sons of God, without rebuke in the mids of a cro-
oked and peruerſe nation, among whom yee ſhine as
lighes in the world :

16 Holding forth the word of life, that I may re-
joyce in the day of Christ, that I haue not runne in
vaine, neither laboured in vaine.

17 Yea, and if I be offered vpon the ſacrifice and
ſeruice of your faith, I joy and rejoyce with you all.

18 For the ſame cauſe alſo doe ye joy, and rejoyce
with me.

19 But I trauſt in the Lord Iesus to ſend Timotheus
shortly vnto you, that I alſo may be of good com-
fort, when I know your ſtate.

20 For I haue no man like minded, who will na-
turally care for your ſtate.

21 For all ſecke their owne, not the things which
are Iesus Chrifts.

22 But ye know the proofe of him, that as a ſan
with ſ[ur] father, he hath learned with me in the Gofpel.

23 Him therefore I hope to ſend preſently, ſo ſoone
as I ſhall ſee how it will goe with me.

34 But

C H A P. III.

24 But I trust in th: Lord that I also my selfe shall come shortly.

25 Yet I supposed it necessary to sent to you E-paphroditus my brother, and companion in labour, and fellow souldier, but your messenger, and he that ministred to my wants.

26 For he longed after you all, and was full of heauines, because y^e had heard that he had beeene sicke.

27 For indeed he was sicke nigh vnto death, but God had mercy on him: and not on him onely, but on me also, lest I shoulde hane sorrow vpon sorrow.

28 I sent him therefore the more carefully, that when y^e see him againe, ye may rejoyce, and that I may be the lesse sorrowfull.

29 Receiue him therefore in the Lord, with all gladnesse, and hold such in reputation:

30 Because for the worke of Christ he was nigh vnto death, not regarding his life, to supply your lacke of seruice towards me.

C H A P. III.

1 He warneþ þens of false teachers. 14 He exhorteth them to decline from carnall Christians.

Finally, my bretheren, rejoyce in the Lord. To write the same things vnto you, to me indeed is no grieuous, but for you it is safe.

2 Beware of dogs, beware of euill workers: beware of the concioner.

3 For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoyce in Christ Iesus, and haue no confidence in the flesh.

4 Though I might also haue confidence in the flesh, If any other man thinketh that he hath wherof he might trust in the flesh, I more:

5 Circumcised the eight day, of the stroke of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrewes, as touching the Law a Pharisee:

6 Concerning zeale, persecuting the Church: touching f righteausenes which is in the law blameless,

7 But what things were gaine to me, t hōſe I counted losſe for Christ,

8 Yea doubtlesſe, and I count all this ḡs but losſe, for excellencie of the knowledge of Christ Iesus my Lord: for whom I haue suffered the losſe: of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ,

TO THE PHILIPPIANS.

9 And be found in him , not hauing mine owne
righteonsnesse, which is of the Law, but that which is
through the faith of Christ, the righteousnesse which
is of God by faith:

10 That I may know him, and the power of his
resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, be-
ing made conformable vnto his death,

11 If by any meanes I might attaine vnto the re-
surrection of the dead.

12 Not as though I had already attained, either
were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may
apprehend that for which also I am apprehended of
Christ Iesus.

13 Brethren, I count not my selfe to haue appre-
hended : but this one thing I doe, forgetting those
things which are behind, and reaching soorth vnto
those things which are before.

14 I presse towards the marke, for the price of the
high calling of God in Christ Iesus.

15 Let vs therefore as many as be perfect, be thus
minded : and if in any thiag ye be otherwise minded,
God shall reueale euuen this vnto you.

16 Neuerthelesse , whereto we haue already attai-
ned, let vs walke by the same rule, let vs mind the
same thing.

17 Brethren, be followers together of me, & marke
them which walke so, as ye haue vs for an ensample.

18 (For many walke of whom I haue told you of-
ten, and now tell you euuen weeping, *that they* are the
enemies of the crosse of Christ :

19 Whose end is destruction, whose god is their
belly, and whose glory is their shame, who mind
earthly things.)

20 For our conuersation is in heauen, from whence
also we looke for the Saviour, the Lord Iesus Christ;

21 Who shall change our vile body, that it may be
fashioned like vnto his glorious body, according to
the working, whereby he is able euuen to subdue all
things vnto himselfe.

C H A P. I I I .

4 Generall exhortations. 10 His joy for their liberali-
ty towards him, and Gods grace in them.

T Before my brethren, dearely beloved and lon-
ged for my joy and crowne, so stand fast in the
Lord, my dearely beloved,

2 I:bc

C H A P. IIII.

3 I beseech Eudias, and beseech Syntiche, that they be of the same mind in the Lord.

3 And I entreat thee also, true yoke-fellow, helpe those women which laboured with mee in the Gospel, with Clement also, and with other my fellow-labourers, whose names are in the booke of life.

4 Rejoyce in the Lord alway : and againe, I say, Rejoyce.

5 Let your moderation be knownen vnto all men. The Lord is at hand.

6 Be carefull for nothing : but in every thing by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving, let your request be made knownen vnto God.

7 And ſy peace of God wylleſt all vnderſtanding, ſhal keepe your hearts & minds through Christ Iesuſ.

8 Finally brethren, whatſoever things are true, whatſoever things are honest, whatſoever things are iuit, whatſoever things are pure, whatſoever things are lonely, whatſoever things are of good report : if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, thinke on theſe things.

9 Those things which ye haue both learned and received, and heard and ſene in me, doe : and the God of peace ſhall be with you.

10 But I rejoyced in the Lord greatly, that now at the laſt your care of me hath flouriſhed again, wherein ye were alſo carefull, but ye lacked opportunity.

11 Note that I ſpeak in respect of want : for I haue learned in whatſoever ſtate I am, therewith to be content.

12 I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound : euer, where and in all things I am iuſtruted ; both to be full, and to be hungry, both to abound, and to ſuffer need.

13 I can doe all things through Christ, which ſtrengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding, ye haue well done, that ye did communicate with my affliction.

15 Now ye Philippians knew alſo that in the beginning of the Gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no Church communicated with me as concerning giving, and receiving, but ye onely.

16 For euē in Theſſalonica, ye ſent once, and againe to my neceſſity,

TO THE COLOSSIANS.

17 Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit
that may abound to your account.

18 But I have all, and abound: I am full, having
received of Epaphroditus the things which were sent
from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice accept-
able, well pleasing to God,

19 But my God shall supply all your need, accord-
ing to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus.

20 Now unto God and our Father, be glory for
ever and ever, Amen.

21 Salute every Saint in Christ Jesus: the brethren
which are with me greet you.

22 All the Saints salute you, chiefly they that are
of Celsus household.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ bee with you
all, Amen.

¶ It was written to the Philippians from Rome, by
Epaphroditus.

The Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Colosians.

C H A P. I.

3 He thanketh God for their faith, & prayeth for their
increase in grace, 14 and describeth the true Christ.

Paul an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will
of God, and Timotheus our brother,

2 To the Saints and faithfull brethren
in Christ, which are at Colosse, grace bee
vnto you, and peace from God our Father, and the
Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We give thankes to God and the Father of our
Lord Jesus Christ, praying alwayes for you,

4 Since we heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and
of the love which ye haue to all the Saints,

5 For the hope which is laide for you in heauen,
wherof ye heard before in the word of the trueth of
the Gospel,

6 Which is come vnto you, as it is in all the world,
and bringeth forth fruit, as it doeth also in you, since
the day ye heard of it, and knew the grace of God in
trueth,

7 As ye also learned of Epaphras our deare fellow
servant, who is for you a faithfull minister of Christ:

8 Who also declareth vnto vs your love in the
Spirit.

9 For

C H A P. I.

9 For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, doe not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wisedome and spiritual vnderstanding:

10 That ye mighte walke worthy of the Lord vnto all pleasing, being fruitfull in every good worke, and increasing in the knowledge of God:

11 Strengthened with all might according to his glorious power, vnto all patience and long suffering with ioyfulnessie:

12 Giving thankes vnto the Father, which hath made vs meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the Saints in light:

13 Who hath deliuered vs from the power of darknesse, and hath translated vs into the kingdome of his deare Sonne,

14 In whom we haue redemption, through his blood, even the forgiuenesse of sinnes:

15 Who is the image of the inuisible God, the first borne of every creature.

16 For by him were all things created that are in heauen, and that are in earth, visible and inuisible; whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him.

17 And he is before all things, and by him all things consist.

18 And he is the head of the body, the Church: who is the beginning, the first borne from the dead, that in all things he might haue the preemience:

19 For it pleased the Father, that in him should all fulnesse dwell,

20 And having made peace through the blood of his crosse) by him to reconcile all thangs vnto himselfe, by him, I say, whether they be thangs in earth, or thangs in heauen.

21 And you that were sometimes alienated, and enemies in your minde by wicked workes, yet now hath he reconciled,

22 In the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and vblameable, and unrepronable in his sight.

23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and settled, and be not moued away from the hope of the Gospel,

TO THE COLOSSIANS.

Gospel, which ye haue heard, *and* which was preache[n]ed to euery creature which is vnder heauen, whereof I Paul am made a minister:

24 Who now reioyce in my suffrings for you, and shew vp that which is behinde of the afflictions of Christ in my flesh, for his bodies sake, which is the Church,

25 Whereof I am made a Minister, according to the dispensation of God, which is ginen to me for you, to fulfill the word of God:

26 *Even* the mystery which hath beene hid from ages, and from generations, but now is made manifest vnto his Saints,

27 To whom God would make knownen what is the riches of the glory of this mysterie among the Gentiles, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory:

28 *Whom* we preach, warning euery man, and teaching euery man in all wisedome, that wee may present euery man perfect in Christ Iesus.

29 Whereunto I also labour, straining according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

C H A P. II.

1 He exhorteth them to be constant in Christ, *and* beware of Philosophie, and vaine traditions.

F or I would that ye knew what great conflict I haue for you and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as haue not seene my face in the flesh:

2 That their hearts may be comforted, being knit together in loue, and vnto all riches of the full assurance of understanding to the acknowledgement of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ,

3 In whom are hid all the treasures of wisedome, and knowledge.

4 And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with entailing words.

5 For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, ioying and beholding your order, and the stedfastnesse of your faith in Christ.

6 As ye haue therefore receiued Christ Iesus the Lord, so walke ye in him:

7 Rooted and built vp in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye haue been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving.

8 Beware lest any man spoile you through Philosophie and vaine deceit, after the tradition of men, af-

C H A P. I I.

ter the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ:

9 For in him dwelleth all the fulnesse of the God-head bodily.

10 And ye are compleate in him, who is the head of all principality and power.

11 In whom also yee are circumcised with the Circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the bannes of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ:

12 Buried with him in Baptisme, wherein also you are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead.

13 And you being dead in your sinnes, and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, hauing forgiuen you all trespasses,

14 Blotting out the hand-writing of ordinances that was against vs, which was contrary to vs, and tooke it out of the way, nailing it to his croſie:

15 And hauing spoiled principalities, and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triomphing ouer them in it.

16 Let no man therefore judge you in meat or in drinke, or in respect of an holy day, or of the new Moon, or of the Sabbath dayes:

17 Which are a shadow of things to come, but the body is of Christ.

18 Let no man beguile you of your reward, in voluntary humility, and worshipping of Angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind:

19 And not holding the head, from which all the body by joints and bands hauing nourishmene ministered and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God.

20 Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subiect to ordinances?

21 (Touch not, taste not, handle not)

22 Which all are to perish with the vſing) after the commandements and doctrines of men:

23 Which things haue indeed a shew of wisdom in will-worshipping, and humility, and neglecting of the body, not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.

TO THE COLOSSIANS.

CHAP. III.

1 He sheweth where we should seek Christ. 13 We exhort you to sundry duties.

If ye then be risen with Christ, seeke those things which are aboue, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God:

2 Set your affection on things aboue, not on things on the earth.

3 For you are dead, and your life is hid with Christ in God.

4 When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory.

5 Mortifie therefore your members which are vpon the earth, fornication, vncleanness, inordinate affection euill concupisence, and covetousnesse, which is idolatry:

6 For which things sake, the wrath of God commeth on the children of disobedience.

7 In the which, ye also walked sometime, when ye liued in them.

8 But now you also put off all these anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, seeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds:

10 And haue put on the new man, which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him,

11 Where there is neither Greeke, nor Iew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Sythan, bond nor free, but Christ is all, and in all.

12 Put on therefore (as the elect of God, holy and beloved) bowels of mercies kindnesse, humblenesse of mind, meekenesse, long suffering,

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiuing one another, if any man hane a quarrell against any: even as Christ forgave you, so also doe ye.

14 And aboue all these things pas on charity, which is the boud of perfectnesse.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one body: and be ye thankfull.

16 Let the word of Christ dwell in you richly in all wisedome, teaching and admonishing one another in Psalms

C H A P. I I I I.

Psalmes and Hymnes, and spirituall songs, singing with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

17 And whatsoever ye doe in word or deed, *for all* in the Name of the Lord Iesus, giving thanks to God, and the Father by him.

18 Wives, submit your selues to your owne husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.

19 Husbands, loue your wifes, and be not bitter against them.

20 Children, obey your parents in all things: for this is well pleasing to the Lord.

21 Fathers, prouoke not your chil'dren to anger, lest they be disengaged.

22 Servants, obey in all things your masters, according to the flesh: not with eye-service, as men-pleasers, but in singlenesse of heart, fearing God:

23 And whatsoever ye doe, doe it heartily, as to the Lord, and not vnto men.

24 Knowing that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance: for yee serue the Lord Christ.

25 But he that doeth wrong, shall receive for the wrong which he hath done: and there is no respect of persons.

C H A P. I I I I.

1 He abhorteth to ferueny in prayer, 5 and to walke wisely toward them that doe not yet know Christ.

Masters, give vnto your servants that which is iust and equall, knowing that ye also haue a Master in heaven.

2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same, with thanksgiving:

3 Withall praying also for vs, that God would open vnto vs a doore of vtterance, to speake the mystery of Christ, for which I am also in bonds:

4 That I may make it manifest, as I ought to speak.

5 Walke in wisdome toward them that are without, redeeming the time.

6 Let your speech be alwayes with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answere every man.

7 All my state shall Tychicus declare vnto you, who is a beloved brother, and a faithfull minister, and fellow-servant in the Lord:

I. THESSALONIANS.

8 Whom I have sent vnto you for the same purpose,
y he might know your estates, & comfort your hearts,

9 With Onesimus a faithfull and beloued brother, who is one of you. They shall make knowne
vnto you all things which are done here.

10 Aristarchus my fellow prisoner saluteth you, and Marcus sisters sonne to Barnabas, (touching
whom ye receiuied commandements, if he come vnto you, receive him :)

11 And Iesus w is called Iustus, who are of the cir-
cucion. These only are my fellow-workers vnto the
kingdom of God: which haue bin a comfort vnto me.

12 Epaphras, who is one of you, a seruant of Christ,
saluteth you, alwayes labouring feruently for you in
prayers, that ye may stand perfect, and complete in
all the will of God.

13 For I beare him record, that he hath a great
zeale for you, and them that are in Laodicea, and
them in Hieropolis.

14 Luke the beloved Physician, and Demas greet
you.

15 Salote the brethren which are in Laodicea,
and Nympha, and the Church which is in his house.

16 And when this Epistle is read amoungst you, cause
that it be read also in the Church of the Landiceans:

16 And say to Archippus, Take heed to the min-
istry, which thou hast receiuied in the Lord, that thou
fulfill it.

17 The salutation by the hand of mee Paul. Re-
member my bonds: Grace be with you. Amen.

* Written from Rome to the Colossians, by Ty-
chicus and Onesimus.

The first Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Thessalonians.

C H A P. I.

* He sheweth his minfulness of them in thanksgiving
and praier, & his persuasio of their sincere faith.

Paul and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto
the Church of the Thessalonians, which
is in God the Father and in the Lord Je-
sus Christ, grace be vnto you, and peace
from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

* We

C H A P. II.

2 We give thankes to God alwayes for you all, making mention of you in our prayers.

3 Remembraunce without ceasing your worke of faith, and labour of loue, and patience of hope in our Lord Iesus Christ, in the sight of God & our father:

4 Knowing brethren beloued, your election of God.

5 For our Gospell came not vnto you in word onely, but also in po vter, and in the holy Ghost, and in much assurance, as ye know what maner of men we were among you for your sake.

6 And ye became followers of vs, and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction, with ioy of the holy Ghost.

7 So that ye were ensamples to all that beleue in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lord, not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to Godward is spread abroad, so that we need not to speake any thing.

9 For they them selues shew of vs, what maner of entring in we had vnto you, and how ye turned to God from idoles, to serue the living and true God,

10 And to wait for his Sonne from heauen, whom he raised from the dead, even Iesus which delivered vs from the wrath to come.

C H A P. II.

1 How the Gospel was preached vnto them and how they received it. 8 Why he was so long absent.

F Or your selues, brethren, know our entrance in vnto you, that it was not in vaine.

2 But euuen after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, wee were bold in our God to speake vnto you the Gospel of God with much contention.

3 For our exhortation was not of deceit, nor of vncleanness, nor in guile:

4 But as wee were allowed of God to be put in trust with the Gospell, euuen so we speake, not as pleasing men, but God, whick trieth our hearts.

5 For neither at any time vsed wee flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloake of conuersenesse, God is witnesse:

6 Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you
nor

I. THESSALONIANS.

not yet of others, when we might haue bene burdensome as the Apostles of Christ.

7 But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children.

8 So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willingly to haue imparted vnto you, not the Gospel of God onely, but also our owne soules, because ye were deare vnto vs.

9 For ye remember, brethren, our labour and tra-
vaille: for labouring night and day, because we would
not be chargeable vnto any of you, we preached vnto
you the Gospel of God.

10 Ye are witnessies, and God also, how holily, and
justly, & unblameably we behaued our selues, among
you that beleene:

11 As you know how we exhorted, and comforted,
and charged euery one of you, (as a father doeth his
children.)

12 That ye wold walke worthy of God, who hath
called you vnto his kingdome and glory.

13 For this cause also thankwe we God, without ceas-
ing, because when yee received the word of God
which ye heard of vs, ye received it not as the word
of men, but (as it is in trueth) the word of God, which
effectually worketh also in you that beleene.

14 For yee brethren, became followers of the
Churches of God, which in Iudea are in Christ Ies-
sus: for ye haue also suffered like things of your own
countreymen, even as they haue of the Iewes:

15 Who both killed the Lord Iesus, and their own
Prophets, and haue persecuted vs, and they please not
God, and are contrary to all men:

16 Forbidding vs to speake to the Gentiles, that
they might be saued, to fill vp their sinnes alway: for
the wrath is come vpon them to the vttermost.

17 But we brethren, being taken from you for a
short time, in presence, not in heart, endeauoured the
more abundantly to see your face with great desire.

18 Wherfore we would haue come vnto you (even I Paul) once and againe; But Satan hindred vs.

19 For what is our hope, or joy, or crowne, of rejoy-
cing? Are not euен yee in the presence of our Lord
Iesus Christ at his comming?

20 For ye are our glory and joy.

C H A P. III.

1 Of Pauls sending of Timothy vnto them. 2 His
joy for them, 3 His desire to see them.

W Herefore, when we could no longer forbear,
2 And sent Timotheus our brother & minister of
God, & our fellow labouer in the Gospel of Christ, to
establish you, & to comfort you concerning your faith.

3 That no man should be moued by these afflictions: for your selues know that we are appointed
thereunto.

4 For verely when we were with you, we tolde
you before, that we shold suffer tribulation, euen as
it came to passe, and ye know.

5 For this cause when I could no longer forbear,
I sent to know your faith; lest by some meanes the
tempter haue tempted you, & our labour be in vaine.

6 But now when Timotheus came from you vnto
vs, & brought vs good tidings of your faith & chari-
ty, & that ye haue good remembrance of vs alwayes,
desiring greatly to see vs, as we also so see you:

7 Therefore brethren, we were comforted ouer
you in all our affliction and distresse, by your faith:

8 For now we live, if ye stand fast in the Lord.

9 For what thankes can we render to God againe
for you, for all the ioy wherewith wee ioy for your
sakes before our God;

10 Night and day praying exceedingly that we
might see your face, and might perfect that which
is lacking in your faith?

11 Now God himselfe and our Father, and our
Lord Iesus direct our way vnto you.

12 And the Lord make you to increase & abound
in loue one towards another and towards all men,
euen as we doe towards you:

13 To the end he may stablish your hearts vnable-
mable in holines before God, euen our Father, at the
comming of our Lord Iesus Christ & all his Saints.

C H A P. IV.

1 Exhorteth them to go on in godlinesse. 6 To
holinesse, 9 to loue, 11 to quietnesse.

Furthermore then, we beseech you, brethren, and
Exhort you by the Lord Iesus, that as ye haue
received of vs, how ye ought to walke, and to please
God, so ye would abound more and more.

3 For

I. THESSALONIANS.

2 For ye know what commandements we gave you by the Lord Iesus.

3 For this is the will of God, even your sanctification: that ye should abstaine from fornication.

4 That every one of you should know how to possesse his vessel in sanctification and honour:

5 Not in the lust of concupisence, even as the Gentiles which know not God:

6 That no man go beyond and defraud his brother in any matter, because the Lord is the avenger of all such as we also have forewarned you, and testified:

7 For God hath not called vs vnto uncleanness, but vnto holynesse.

8 He therefore despiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also giuen vnto vs his holy Spirit.

9 But as touching brotherly loue, ye need not that I write vnto you: for ye your selues are taught of God to loue one another.

10 And indeed ye do it towards all the brethren, which are an all Macedonia: but we beseech you brethren, that ye increase more and more:

11 And that ye study to be quiet, and to doe your owne busynesse, and to worke with your owne hands, (as we comanded you:)

12 That ye may walke honestly toward them that are without, and that ye may haue lacke of nothing.

13 But I would not haue you to be ignorant brethren, concerning them which are asleepe, that ye sorrow not, enen as others which haue no hope.

14 For if we beleene that Iesus died, and rose againe: even so them also which sleepe in Iesus, will God bring with him.

15 For this we say vnto you by my word of my Lord, that we whare aliuine & remaine vnto the coming of the Lord shall not preuent them which are asleepe:

16 For my Lord himselfe shall descend from heauen w a shout, wth the voice of my Archangel, & wth the trompe of God & the dead in Christ shall rise first.

17 Then we which are aliuine, and remaine, shalbe caught vp together wth them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the ayre, and so shall we euer be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore comfort one another wth these words.

C H A P. V.

1 He sheweth of Christ's second comming to judgement,
16 and gineth diuers precepts, 23 and so concludes,

B Vt of the tithes and of the seasons, brethren, ye
haue no need that I write vnto you.

2 For your selues know perfectlly, that the day of
the Lord so commeth as a thiefe in the night.

3 For when they shall say, Peace, and safetie: then
sudden destruction commeth vpon them, as traualle
vpon a woman with child, and they shall not escape.

4 But ye brethren, are not in darknesse, that that
day should ouertake you as a thiefe.

5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children
of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darknesse.

6 Therefore let vs not sleepe as doe others: but
let vs watch and be sober.

7 For they that sleepe, sleepe in the night, and
they that be drunke, are drunken in the night.

8 But let vs who are of the day, be sober, putting
on the breastplate of faith and loue, and for an hel-
met, the hope of saluation.

9 For God hath not appointed vs to wrath: but
to obtaine saluation by our Lord Iesus Christ.

10 Who died for vs, that whether wee wake or
sleepe, we should liue together with him.

11 Wherefore, comfort your selues together, and
edifie one another, even as also ye doe.

12 And we beseech you, brethren, to know them
which labour among you, and are ouer you in the
Lord, and admonish you:

13 And to esteeme them very highly in loue for
their works sake, and be at peace among your selues.

14 Now we exhort you, brethren, warne them
that are vnruly, comfort the feeble minded, support
the weake, be patient toward all men.

15 See that none render euill for euill vnto any
man: but enet follow that which is god, both a-
mong your selues, and to all men.

16 Reioyce evermore.

17 Pray without ceasing:

18 In every thing giue thanks: for this is the will
of God in Christ Iesus concerning you.

19 Quench not the spirit.

20 Delpise not prophecyngs:

21 Prone all things; hold fast that which is good.

32 Ab-

II. THESSALONIANS.

23 Abstaine from all appearance of euill.

23 And the very God of peace sanctifie you whol-
ly: and I pray God,your whole spirit, and soule, and
body be preserved blamelesse vnto the cominge of
our Lord Iesus Christ.

24 Faithfull is he that calleth you, who also will
doe it.

25 Brethren,pray for vs.

26 Greet all the brethren with an holy kisse.

27 I charge you by the Lord, that this Epistle bee
read vnto all the holy brethren.

28 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ bee with
you, Amen.

¶ The first Epistle vnto the Thessalonians, was
written from Athens.

¶ The second Epistle of Paul the Apo- stle to the Thessalonians.

C H A P. I.

1 He sheweth his good opinion of their faish, loue, and
patience, & and cōfōrteþ them against persecution
 Aul and Silvanns, and Timotheus vnto the Church of the Thessalonians,
in God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ:

2 Grace vnto you, and peace from
God our Father, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

3 We are bound to thanke God alwayes for you,
brethren, as it is meet, because that your faith gro-
meth exceedingly, and the charity of euery one of you
all towards each other aboundeth.

4 So that wee our selues glory in you in the
Churches of God, for your patience and faith in all
your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure;

5 Which is a manifest token of the righteous
judgement of God, that yee may be counted worthy
of the kingdome of God, for which ye also suffer:

6 Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to re-
compense tribulation to them that trouble you:

7 And to you that are troubled, rest with vs, when
the Lord Iesus shall be revealed from heauen, with
his mighty Angels,

8 In flaming fire, taking vengeance on them that
know not God, and that obey not the Gospel of our
Lord Iesus Christ:

¶ Who

C H A P. II.

9 Who shall bee punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of the Lord : and from the glory of his power.

10 When he shall come to be glorified in his Saints, and to be admired in all them that believe, (because our testimony among you was believed) in that day.

11 Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our God would count you worthy of this calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of his goodness, and the worke of faith with power :

12 That the Name of our Lord Iesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and the Lord Iesus Christ.

C H A P. III.

1 *He exhorteth them to continue steadfast: 3 Showest, that there shalbe a departure from the faish.*

Now wee beseech you brethren, by the comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, and by our gathering together vnto him,

2 That ye be not soone shaken in minde, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as from vs, as that the day of Christ is at hand,

3 Let no man deceiue you by any meanes for *that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sinne be revealed, the sonne of perdition,*

4 Who opposeth and exalteth himselfe above all that is called God, or that is worshipped: so that he as God, setteth in the Temple of God, shewing himselfe that he is God.

5 Remember yee not that when I was yet with you, I told you these things ?

6 And now ye know what withholdeth, that hee might be revealed in his time.

7 For the mystery of iniquity doeth already worke, onely he who now letteth, *willes, vntill he be taken out of the way.*

8 And then shall the wicked be reuealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy w^t the brightnesse of his comminge

9 *Even him whose co:ming is after the working of Satan, with all power and signes, and lying wonders,*

II. THESSALONIANS.

10 And with all deceiueableness of vnrighteouſeſſe, in them that perish : because they received not the loue of the trueth, that they might be ſaned.

11 And for this cauſe God ſhall ſend them ſtrong deluſion, that they ſhould beleue a lie:

12 That they all might be damned who beleue not the trueth, but had pleaſure in vnrighteouſeſſe.

13 But we are bound to giue thanks alway to God for you, brethren, beloved of the Lord, because God hath frō ſt beginning chosen you, to ſaluation through ſanctification of the ſpirit, and belief of the trueth,

14 Whereunto he called you by our Gofpel, to the obtaining of the glory of the Lord Iefus Chrift.

15 Therefore brethren, ſtand fast, and hold the traditions which vee haue beene taught, whether by word or our Epiftle.

16 Now our Lord Iefus Chrift himſelfe, and God even our Father, w̄ hath loued vs, & hath giuen vs euerlaſting conforimation, & good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and ſtabliſh you in every good word and worke.

C H A P. III.

He craveth their prayers, 3 testifieth his confidence of them, 5 prayeth for them.

Finally, brethren, pray for vs, that the word of the Lord may haue free course, and be glorified even as it is with you:

2 And that we may be deliuered from vntreafona-ble and wicked men, for all men haue not faith.

5 But the Lord is fauifull, who ſhall ſtabliſh you, and keepe you from euill.

4 And we haue confidence in the Lord touching you, that ye both doe, and will doe the things which we command you.

5 And the Lord direc̄t your hearts into the loue of God, and into the patient waiting for Chrift.

6 Now we command you brethren, in the Name of our Lord Iefus Chrift, that you withdraw your ſelues from every brother that walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which he receiuēd of vs.

7 For your ſelues know how ye ought to follow vs: for we behaued not our ſelues disorderly among you.

8 Neither did wee eate any mans bread for nought; but wrought with labour and tranell night and

C H A P. I.

and day, y^e we might not be chargeable to any of you.

9 Not because we have not power, but to make our selues an ensample vnto you to follow vs.

10 For euern when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any man would not worke, neither shoulde he eate.

11 For we heare that there are some which walke among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busie-bodies.

12 Now them that are such, we command, and exhort by our Lord Iesus Christ, that with quietnes they worke, and eate their owne bread.

13 But ye, brethren, be not weary in well doing.

14 And if any man obey not our word, by this Epistle, note that man, and haue no company with him, that he may be ashamed.

15 Yet count him not as an enemie, but admonish him as as a brother.

16 Now the Lord of peace himselfe, give you peace alwayes, by all meanes. The Lord be with you all.

17 The salutation of Paul with mine owne hand, which is the token in every Epistle: so I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

¶ The second Epistle to the Theſſalonians was written from Athens.

¶ The first Epistle of Paul the Apostle to Timothy.

C H A P. I.

1 Paul's charge to Timothy. 5 The end of the Law. II
Of Paul's calling. 20 Of Hymenaeus and Alexander.

Paul an Apostle of Iesus Christ by the commandement of God our Sauour, and Lord Iesus Christ, which is our hope,

2 Vnto Timothy my owne sonne in the faith, Grace, mercy and peace from God our Father, and Iesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some, that they teach no other doctrine,

4 Neither give heed to fables, and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather then edifying which is in faith: so doe.

5 Now

I. TIMOTHIE.

3 Now the end of the commandement is charity, out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith vnsained.

6 From which some hating swarued, haue turned aside vnto vaine iangling,

7 Desiring to be teachers of the Law, vnderstanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirme,

8 But we know that the Law is good, if a man use it lawfully.

9 Knowing this, that the Law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawlesse and disobedient, for the vngodly, and for sinners, for vnholie, and profane, for murtherers of fathers, and murtherers of mothers, for man-slayers,

10 For whoremongers, for them that defile themselves with mankind, for men-stealers, for liars, for perjured persons; and if there be any other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine:

11 According to the glorious Gospel of the blessed God, which was committed to my trust.

12 And I thanke Christ Iesu our Lord, who hath enabled me: for that he counted me fauifull, putting me into the ministry,

13 Who was before a blasphemer, and a persecuter, and iniurious. But I obtained mercy, because I did it ignorantly, in vnbeline.

14 And the grace of our Lord was exceeding abundant in faith and loue, which is in Christ Iesu.

15 This is a fauifull saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Iesu came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chiese.

16 Howbeit, for this cause I obtained mercy, that in me first, Iesu Christ might shew forth all long suffering, for a patterne to them which should hereafter beleue on him to life euellisting.

17 Now vnto the King eternall, immortall, invisible, the onely wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever, Amen.

18 This charge I commit vnto thee, son Timothie, according to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest wag a good warfare;

19 Holding faith and a good conscience, which some hating, pat away, concerning faith, haue made shipwracke.

C H A P. II.

8 Of whom is Hymeneus and Alexander, whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme.

C H A P. II.

1 It is meet to pray and give thankes for all men.
2 Of women's attire, and behaviour.

T Exhort therefore, that first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions, and giving of thankes bee made for all men:

3 For kings and for all that are in authoritie, that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godlinesse and beneftie.

3 For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour,

4 Who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the knowledge of the truthe.

5 For there is one God, and one Mediator betweene God and men, the man Christ Iesus:

6 Who gane himselfe a ransome for all, to be testifed in due time.

7 Whereunto I am ordained a preacher, and an Apostle (I speake the truthe in Christ, and lie not) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and verity.

8 I will therefore that men pray euery where, lifting vp holy hands, without wrath and doubting.

9 In like maner also, that women adorne themselves in modest apparel, with shamefastnes & sobriety, not with braided haire, or gold, or pearles, or costly arrayes.

10 But (which becommeth women, professing godlinesse) with good works.

11 Let the woman learne in silence wth all subiectioune.

12 But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurpe authoritie over the man, but to be in silence.

13 For Adam was first formed, then Eue:

14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression:

15 Nowwithstanding, shee shall be fained in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charitiie, and holinesse with sobrietie.

C H A P. III.

1 Of Bishops and Deacons, and their wives. 19 The mysterie of godlinesse.

T His is a true saying: If a man desire the office of a Bishop, he desireth a good worke,

I. T I M O T H Y.

3 A Bishop then must be blamelesse, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behanior, given to hospitality, apt to teach;

3 Not given to wine, no ftriker, not greedy of filthy lucre, but patient, not a brawler, not covetous.

4 One that ruleth well his owne house, having his children in subiection with all grauitie:

5 (For if a man know not how to rule his owne house, how shall he take care of the Church of God?)

6 Not a nouice, lest being lifted vp with pride, he fall into the condemnation of the devill.

7 Moreover, he must haue a good report of them which are without, lest he fall into reproach, and the snare of the devill.

8 Likewise must the Deacons be graue, not double tongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre,

9 Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.

10 And let these also first be proved, then let them use the office of a Deacon, being found blamelesse.

11 Euen so must their wiues be graue, not flande-
ters, sober, faithfull in all things.

12 Let the Deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children, and their owne houses well.

13 For they that hane vsed the office of a Deacon well, purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldnesse in the faith, which is in Christ Iesus.

14 These things write I vnto thee, hoping to come vnto thee shortly.

15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behaue thy selfe in the house of God, which is the Church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the trueth.

16 And without controuersie, great is the mystery of godlinesse: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seene of Angels, preached vnto the Gentiles, beleeneued on in the world, received vp into glory.

C H A P. I I I I.

3 That in the latter dyes there shall be a departare from the faith. 6 Precepts giuen to Timothys.

Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, gi-
ving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devills:

2 Speaking

C H A P. V.

2 Speaking lies in hypocrisy, hauing their con-
science seared with a hote iron.

3 Forbidding to marry, *and commanding* to ab-
staine from meats, which God hath created to bee
receiued with thanksgiving of them which beleue,
and know the trueth.

4 For every creature of God is good, and nothing
to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving:

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God & prayer.

6 If then put the brethren in remembrance of
these things, thou shalt be a good minister of Iesus
Christ, nouished vp in the words of faith, and of
good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

7 But refuse profane and old wijes fables, and
exercise thy selfe rather vnto godlinesse.

8 For bodily exercise profiteth little, but godli-
nesse is profitable vnto all things, hauing promise of
the life that now is, and of that which is to come.

9 This is a faithfull saying, and worthy of all ac-
cepcion:

10 For therefore we both labour, and suffer re-
proach, because we trust in the liuing God, who is the
Saviour of all men, specially of those that beleue.

11 These things command and teach.

12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be thou an
example of the beleeuers, in word, in conversation,
in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

13 Till I come, give attendance to reading, to ex-
hortation, to doctrine.

14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was
given thee by prophetic, with the laying on of the
hands of the Presbytery.

15 Meditate on these things, give thy selfe wholly
to them, that thy profit may appear to all.

16 Take heed vnto thy selfe, & vnto the doctrine:
continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both
fase thy selfe, and them that heare thee.

C H A P. V.

1 Rules to be obserued in reproving. 3 Of wisdomes
17 Of Elders.

R Ebuke not an Elder, but entreat him as a fathet
and the yonger men as brethren:

2 The elder women as mothers, the yonger as si-
sters with all purity.

3 Honours

I. TIMOTHIE.

3 Honest widowes that are widowes indeed,

4 But if any widow haue children , or nephewes,
let them learne first to shew piety at home, and to
requite their parents:for that is good and acceptable
before God.

5 Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate,
trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and
prayers night and day.

6 But shee that liueth in pleasure, is dead while
she liueth.

7 And these things give in charge , that they may
be blamelesse.

8 But if any prouide not for his owne , and espe-
cially for those of his own house, he hath denied the
faith, and is worse then an infidell.

9 Let not a widow be taken into y number, vnder
threescore yeeres old, haing bin y wife of one man:

10 Well reported of for good workes, if she haue
brought vp children, if she haue lodged strangers, if
she haue washed the Saints feet, if she haue relieved
the afflicted , if she haue diligently followed every
good worke.

11 But the yonger widdowes refuse:for when they
haue begunne to waxe wanton against Christ, they
will marry :

12 Hauing damnation, because they haue cast off
their first faith.

13 And withal they learne to be idle, wadding about
frō house to house:and not only idle, but tattlers also,
& busibodies, speaking things which they ought not.

14 I will therefore that the yonger women marry,
beare children, guide the house , give none occasion
to the adversary to speake reproachfully.

15 For some are already turned aside after Satan.

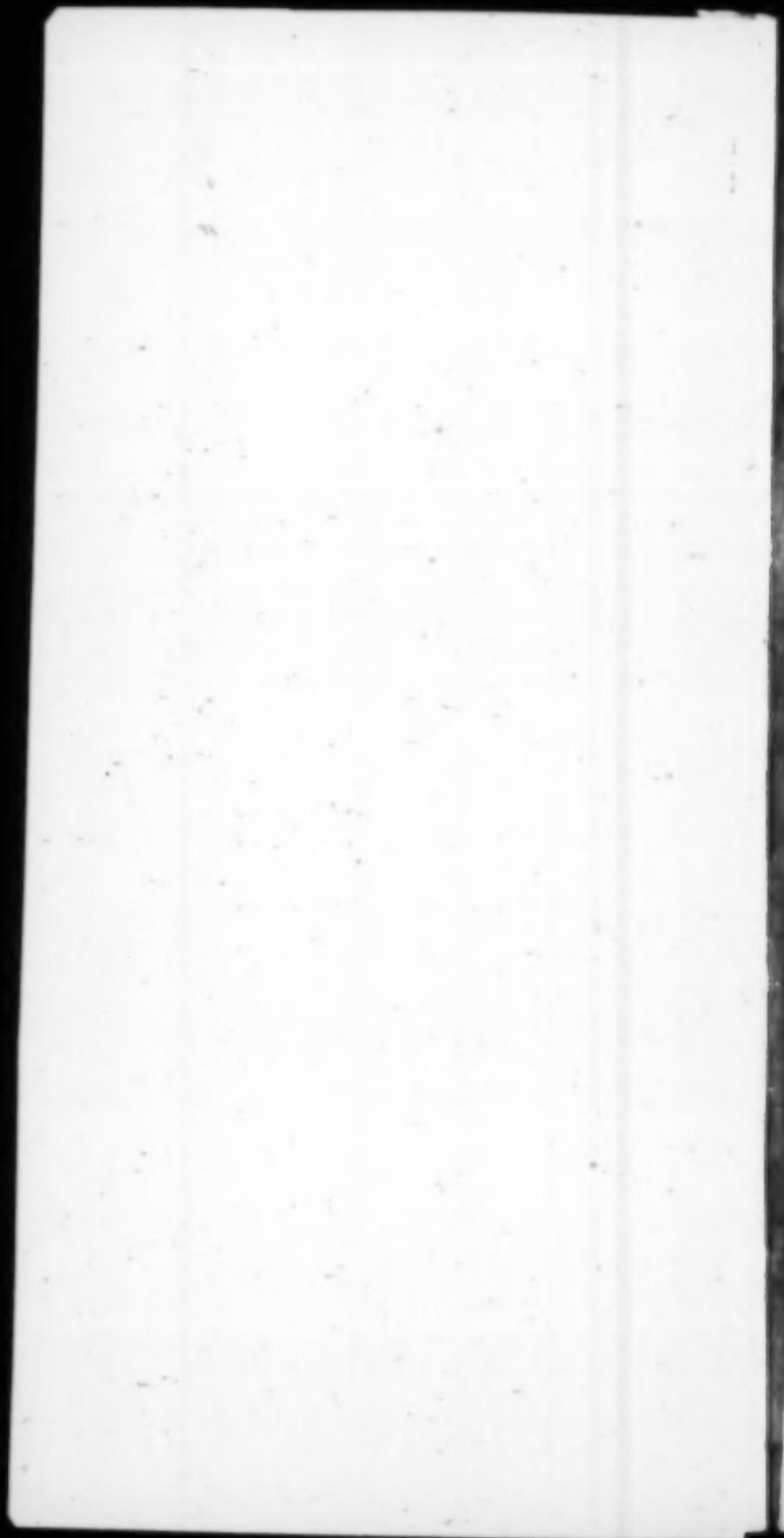
16 If any man or woman that belieueth haue wi-
dowes, let them reliue them, and let not the Charrh
be charged , that it may reliue them that are wi-
dowes indeed.

17 Let the Elders that rule well, be counted wor-
thy of double honour, especially they who labour in
the word and doctrine.

18 For the Scripture saith, Thou shal not muzzle
the oxe that treadeth out the coen:and, The labo-
rers is worthy of his reward,

19 Against

ves,
l to
able
ate,
and
aile
any
pe-
the
der
inc;
one
, if
used
very
ney
cy
off
at
o,
ot,
ry,
on
n,
j.
th
j-
r-
in
le
r
ft



C H A P. VI.

19 Against an Elder receive not an accusation; but before two or three witnesses.

20 Them that sinne rebuke before all, that others also may feare.

21 I charge thee before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the elect Angels, that thou obserue these things without presenting one before another, doing nothing by partiality.

22 Lay hands suddealy on no man, neither be partaker of other mens sinnes: Keepe thy selfe pure.

23 Drinke no longer water, but vse a little wine for thy stomackes sake, and thine often infirmities.

24 Some mens sinnes are open before hand going before to iudgement: and some men they follow after.

25 Likewise also the good wortkes of some are manifest before hand, and they that are otherwise, cannot be hid.

C H A P. VI.

1 Servants duties. 3 Anoyd new fangled stachers.

6 The gaine of godlinesse, and emill of covetousnesse.

L et as many seruants as are vnder the yoke, count their owne masters worthy of all honour that the Name of God, and his doctrine be not blasphemed.

2 And they that haue beleeving masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren: but rather doe them service, because they are faithfull and beloved, partakers of the benefit: These things teach and exhort.

3 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome wordes, evyn the wordes of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godlinesse,

4 Hee is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions, and strifes of words, whereof commeth envy, strife, raylings, euill furnisings,

5 Peruerse disputings of men of corrupt mindes, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gaine is godlinesse: From such withdraw thy selfe.

6 But godlinesse with contentment is greate gaine.

7 For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certayne we can carry nothing out.

I. TIMOTHIE.

8 And having food and rayment, let vs be there-with content.

9 But they that will be rich, fall into temptation, and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtfull lusts, which diowne men in destruction and perdition.

10 For the love of money is the root of all euill, which while some courted after, they haue erred from the faith, and pierced themselves thorow with many sorowes.

11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things, and follow after righteousness, godlinesse, faith, loue, patience, meeknesse.

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternall life, whereunto thou art also called, and haue professed a good profession before many witnessses.

13 I giue thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Iesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession,

14 That thou keepe this commandement without spot, vntrebukable, vntill the appearing of our Lord Iesus Christ:

15 Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and onely Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords:

16 Who onely hath immortality, dwelling in the light, which no man can approach vnto, whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen.

17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not high minded, nor trust in vncertaine riches, but in the living God, who giueth vs richly all things to enjoy;

18 That they doe good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute, willing to communicate,

19 Laying vp in store for thenelnes a good foundation against the time to come, that they may lay hold on eternall life.

20 O Timothy, keepe that which is committed to thy trust, auoide profane and vaine babblings, and oppositions of science, falsely so called:

21 Which some professing, haue erred concerning the faith. Grace be with thee. Amen.

¶ The first to Timothy was written from Laodices, which is the chiefeſt city of Phrygia Pacaciana.

¶ The

C H A P. I.

The second Epistle of Paul the
Apostle to Timothie.

C H A P. I.

1 Pauls loue to Timothie, and Timothies faish.

TAUL an Apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God, according to the promise of life, which is in Christ Jesus:

2 To Timothie my dearely beloved sonne: grace mercie, and peace from God the Father, and Christ Iesu our Lord.

3 I thanke God, whom I serue from my forefathers with pure conscience, that without ceasing I haue remembrance of thee in my prayers night and day,

4 Greatly desiring to see thee being mindfull of thy teates, that I may be filled with ioy,

5 When I call to remembrance the vnsainted faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice: and i am perswaded that in thee also.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou stirre vp the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands.

7 For God hath not giuen vs the spirit of feare, but of power, of loue, and of a sound mind.

8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor of me his prisoner, but be thou partaker of the afflictions of the Gospel, according to the power of God.

9 Who hath saued vs, and called vs, with an holy calling, not according to our workes, but according to his owne purpose and grace, which was giuen vs in Christ Iesu, before the world began.

10 But is now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Iesu Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortalitie to light, through the Gospel:

11 Whereunto I am appointed a Preacher: and an Apostle, and a teacher of the Gentiles.

12 For the which cause I also suffer these things: neuerthelesse, I am not ashamed: for I know whou I haue beleued, and I am perswaded that he is able to keepe that which I haue committed vnto him against that day.

II. TIMOTHIE.

13 Hold fast the forme of sound words which thou hast heard of mee, in faith and loue , which is in Christ Iesus.

14 That good thing which was committed vnto thee, keepe by the holy Ghost which dwelleth in vs,

15 This thou knowest , that all they which are in Asia be turned away from me, of whom are Phygelius and Hermogenes.

16 The Lord gine mercie vnto the house of Onesiphorus : for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my chaine.

17 But when he was in Rome, hee sought mee out very diligently, and found me.

18 The Lord grant vnto him, that hee may finde mercie of the Lord in that day : and in how many things he ministred vnto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very well.

C H A P. II.

24 How the Lords seruant ought to behauie himselfe.

T Hou therefore, my sonne, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Iesus.

2 And the thjngs that thou haft heard of mee among many witnessses, the same commit thou to faithfull men, who shall be able to teach others also.

3 Thou therefore endure hardesse , as a good souldier of Iesus Christ.

4 No man that warreth intangleth himselfe with the affaires of this life, that hee may please him who hath chosen him to be a souldier.

5 And if a man also strine for masteries, yet is hee not crowned except he itriue lawfully.

6 The husbandman that laboureth, must be first partaker of the fruits.

7 Consider what I say , and the Lord giue thee understanding in all things.

8 Remember that Iesus Christ, of y^e seed of Dauid, was raised from the dead, according to my Gospel :

9 Wherin I suffered trouble as an euill doer, even vnto bonds : but the word of God is not bound.

10 Therefore I endure all things for the Elects Sakes, that they may also obtain the saluation which is in Christ Iesus with eternall glory.

11 It is a faithfull saying : for if we be dead with him, we shall also liue with him.

C H A P. I I.

12 If we suffer, we shall also reigne with him, if we deny him, he also will deny vs.

13 If we beleue not, yet hec abideth faithfull, hec cannot deny himselfe.

14 Of these things put them in remembrance, charging them before the Lord, that they stiue not about words to no profit, but to the subuerting of the hearers.

15 Study to shew thy selfe approoued to God, a workeman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly diuiding the word of trueth.

16 But shunne prophane and vaine bablings, for they will increase vnto more vngodliness.

17 And their word will eate as doeth a canker: of whom is Hymeneus and Philetus?

18 W^oho concerning the trueth haue erred, saying, that the resurrection is past already, and overthrow the faith of some.

19 Neuerthelesse, the foundation of God standeth sure, hauing this seale, The Lord knoweth them that are his. And let euery one that nameth the Name of Christ, depart from iniquity.

20 But in a great house there are not onely vessels of gold and of siluer, but also of wood, and of earth: and some to honour, and some to dishonour.

21 If a man therefore purge himselfe from these, he shalbe a vessel vnto honor, sanctified & meet for the masters vse, & prepared vnto every good worke.

22 Flie also youthfull lustes: but follow righteoufulness, faith, charity, peace with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.

23 But foolish and vnlearned questions auoyde, knowing that they doe gender stroites.

24 And the seruant of the Lord must not stroite: but be gentle vnto all men, apt to teach, patient,

25 In meekenesse instructing those that oppost themselues, if God peraduenture will give them re-pentance to the acknowledging of the trueth.

26 And that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devill, who are taken captive by him at his will.

C H A P. I I I.

¶ Of the last dayes. 6 The enemies of the trueth are describe, i. 11 Pauls example proposuald.

II. TIMOTHIE.

THIS know also, that in the last dayes perillous times shall come,

2 For men shall be louers of their owne selues, covetous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, vnhankfull, vnholy,

3 Without naturall affection, truce-breakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce despisers of those that are good.

4 Traitors, heady, high minded, louers of pleasures more then louers of God,

5 Hauing a forme of godlinesse, but denying the power thercof: from such turne away.

6 For of this sort are they which creepe into houses, and lead captiue silly women laden with sins, led away with dauers lusts,

7 Euer learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the trueth.

8 Now as Iannes and Iambres withstood Moses, so doe these also resist the trueth: men of corrupt minides, reprobate concerning the faith.

9 But they shall proceede no further: for their folly shalbe manifest vnto all men, as theirs also was.

10 But thou hast fully knowne my doctrine, manner of life, purpose, faith, long suffering, charitie, patience,

11 Persecutions, afflictions, whick came vnto mee at Antioch, at Iconium, at Lystra, what persecutions I endured: but out of them all the Lord deliuered mee.

12 Yea, and all that will liue godly in Christ Iesus shall suffer persecution.

13 But euill men and seducers shall waxe worse and worse, deceiuing, and being deceived.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned, and hast becme assur'd of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them.

15 And that from a childe thou hast knowe the holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise vnto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Iesus.

16 All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproofe, for correction, for instruction in righteousesse,

17 That the man of God may be perfect, thorowly furnished vnto all good works,

CHAP. III.

1 Pauls exhortation to Timothy. 6 The neareness
of Pauls death. 9 Paul willeth him to come to
him.

1 Charge those therefore before God, and the Lord
Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the
dead at his appearing, and his kingdom :

2 Preach the word, bee instant in season, out of
season, reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long suffer-
ing and doctrine.

3 For the time will come when they will not en-
dure sound doctrine, but after their owne lusts shall
they heape to themselves teachers, hating itching
earns :

4 And they shall turne away their ears from the
truth, and shall be turned into fables.

5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions,
doe the worke of an Euangelist, make full prooie of
thy ministery.

6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time
of my departure is at hand.

7 I haue fought a good fight, I haue finisched my
course, I haue kept the faith.

8 Henceforth there is laid vp for me a Crowne
of righteousness, which the Lord the righteous
Judge shall give me at that day, and not to me only,
but vnto them also that loue his appearing.

9 Doe thy diligence to come shortly vnto me :

10 For Demas hath forsaken me, hauing loued this
present world, and is departed vnto Thessalonica :
Crescens to Galatia, Titus vnto Dalmacia.

11 Onely Luke is with me. Take Marke and bring
him with thee: for he is profitable to me for the
ministry.

12 And Tychicus haue I sent to Ephesus.

13 The cloake that I left at Troas with Carpus,
when thou commest, bring with thee, & the books
but especially the parchments.

14 Alexander the copper-smith did me much euil,
the Lord reward him according to his works.

15 Of whom be thou ware also, for he hath greatly
withstood our words.

16 At my first answer no man stood with me, but
all men forsooke me: I pray God that it may not be
laid to their charge.

To TITVS.

17 Nowithstanding the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me, that by me the preaching might be fully knowne, and that all the Gentiles might heare: and I was deliuere out of the mouth of the Lyon.

18 And the Lord shall deliuer me from every euil worke, and will preserue me vnto his heauenly king dome; to whom be glory for euer and euer. Amen.

19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the houehold o. Onesiphorus.

20 Erastus abode at Corinth: but Trophimus haue I left at Miletum sicke.

21 Doe thy diligence to come before winter. Eu. bulus greeteth thee, and Pudens and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren.

22 The Lord Iesu Christ be with thy spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.

¶ The seconde Epistle vnto Timotheus, ordaine
the first Bishop of the Church of the Ephesi-
ans, was written from Rome, when Paul was
brought before Nero the second time.

The Epistle of Paul to Titus.

CHAP. I.

6 How Ministers should be qualified.

Taul a seruant of God, and an Apostle
of Iesu Christ, according to the faith
of Gods Elect, and the acknowledging
of the truth, which is after godli-
nesse,

2 In hope of eternall life, which God that cannot
lie, promised before the world began:

3 But hath in due times manisfested his word,
through preaching, which is committed vnto me, ac-
cording to the commandement of God our Sauour:

4 To Titus mine owne sonne after the common
faith, Grace, mercy and peace from God the Father,
and the Lord Iesu Christ our Sauour.

5 For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou
shouldest set in order the things that are wanting,
and ordaine Elders in euery citie, as I had appoin-
ted thee.

6 If any be blamelesse, the husband of one wife,
hauing faithful children, not accused of riot, or
vnriuly.

C H A P. II.

7 For a Bishop must be blamelesse as the steward of God: not selfe willed, not soone angry, nor given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre,

8 But a louer of hospitality, a louer of good men, sober, iust, holy, temperate,

9 Holding fast the fauorsfull word, as hee hath beeene taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine, both to exhort, and to conuince the gainesayers.

10 For there are many vnruly and vaine talkers, and deceiners, especially they of the circumcision:

11 Whose mouthes must be stopped, who subuert whole houses; teaching things that they ought not for filthy lucre sake.

12 One of themselues, *calle* a Prophet of their owne, said, The Cretians are alwayes lyars, euill beasts, slow bellies.

13 This witnesse is true: wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be found in the faith:

14 Not giuing heed vnto Iewish fables and commandements of men, that turne from the trueth.

15 Vnto the pure all things are pure, but vnto them that are defiled & vndeleeuing, is nothing pure; but euен their minde and conscience is defiled.

16 They protest that they know God: but in works they deny him, being abominable and disobedient, and vnto euery good worke reprobate.

C H A P. III.

1 Paul diuelleth Titus Loth for his doctrine & life. 2
The duty of servants, & generally of all Christians.

B Vt speake thou the things that become sound doctrine:

3 That the aged men be sober, graue, temperate, sound in faith, in charitie, in patience.

4 The aged women likewise, that shal be in behaviour, as becommeth holiness, not false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things:

5 That they may teach the young women to be sober, to loue their husbands, to loue their children.

6 To be discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their owne husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

7 In all things shewing thy selfe a pattern of good workes: in doctrine shewing vncorruptnesse, grauitie,

sinceritie, 8 Sound

TO TITVS.

8 Sound speach that cannot be condemned, that he
that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, hauing
no euill thing to say of you.

9 Exhort servants to be obedient vnto their own
masters, and to please them well in all things, not
answering againe:

10 Not purloyning, but shewing all good fidelite,
that they may adorne the doctrine of God our Sa-
uiour in all things.

11 For the gae of God, that bringeth saluation,
hath appeared to all men.

12 Teaching vs, that denying vngodliness and
worldly lusts, wee should liue soberly, righteously,
and godly in this present world,

13 Looking for that blessed hope and the glorious
appearing of that great God, and our Sauiour Iesus
Christ,

14 Who gaue himselfe for vs, that hee might re-
deeme vs from all iniquitie, and purifie vnto him-
selfe a peculiar people, zealous of good works.

15 These things speake and exhort, and rebuke
with all authoritie. Let no man despise thee.

C H A P. III.

1 *Titus is further directed what to teach, and wh-*
at
not. 10 *To rebuke obſtinate hereticks.*

P Ut them in mind to be subiect to principalities
and powers, to obey Magistrate, to be ready to
every good worke,

2 To speake euill of no man, to be no brawlers;
but gentle, shewing all meekenesse vnto all men.

3 For wee our selues also were sometimes foolish,
disobedient, deceiued, seruing diuers lusts and plea-
sasures, liuing in malice and envy, hatefull, and ha-
ting one another.

4 But after that the kindnesse and loue of God
our Sauiour toward man appeared,

5 Not by workes of righteousness which we haue
done, but according to his mercie he sau'd vs by the
washing of regeneration and renewing of the holy
Ghost,

6 Which he shed on vs abundantly, through Ie-
sus Christ our Sauiour:

7 That being iustified by his grace, we should be
made heires according to the hope of eternall life.

8 This

C H A P. III.

8 This is a faithfull saying, and these things, I will that thou affirme constantly, y^e they which haue believéd in God, might be carefull to maintaine good works: these things are good & profitable vnto men.
9 But auoyd foolish questions and genealogies, and contentions, and striuings about the Law; for they are vniprofitable and vaine.

10 A man that is an heretike, after the first and second admonition, reiect:

11 Knowing that hee that is such, is subuerted and sinnewch, being condemned of himselfe.

12 When I shall send Artemas vnto thee, or Tychicus, be diligent to come vnto mee to Nicopolis: for I haue determined there to winter.

13 Bring Zenas the Lawyer and Appollo's on their iourney diligently, y^e nothing be wanting vnto them.

14 And let ours also learne to maintaine good workes for necessary vses, that they be not vnfrofitable.

15 All y^e are with me salute thee. Greet them that loue vs in the faith. Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to Titus, ordained the first Bishop of the Church of the Cretians, from Nicopolis of Macedonia.

¶ The Epistle of Paul to Philemon.

1 Pauls ioy for Philemons faish & loue. 9 He defireth him to forgive Onesimus, and to receive him againe.

Paul a prisoner of Iesus Christ, and Timothy our beloued vnto Philemon our dearely brother & fellow labouter.
2 And to our belonē Apphia, and Archippus our fellow fouldier, and to the Church in thy house.

3 Grace to you, and peace from God our Father and the Lord Iesus Christ.

4 I thanke my God making mention of thee alwayes in my prayers,

5 Hearing of thy loue and faith, which thou hast toward the Lord Iesus, and toward all Saints:

6 That the communication of thy faith may become effectuall by the acknowledging of euery good thing, which is in you in Christ Iesus.

7 For we haue great ioy and consolation in thy loue

TO PHILEMON.

1oue, because the bowels of the Saints are refreshed by thee, brother.

8 Wherefore though I might bee much bold in Christ, to enioyne thee that which is convenient :

9 Yet for loues sake I rather beseech thee, being such a one as Paul the aged, and now also a prisoner of Iesus Christ.

10 I beseech thee for my sonne Onesimus, whom I haue begotten in my bonds.

11 Which in times past was to thee vnproufitable, but now profitable to thee and to me :

12 Whom I haue sent againe : thou therefore receive him that is mine owne bowels.

13 Whom I would haue retained with me, that in thy stead he might haue ministred vnto me in the bonds of the Gospel.

14 But without thy minde would I doe nothing, that thy benefit shold not be as it were of necessity, but willingly.

15 For perhaps he therefore departed for a season, that thou shouldest receive him for euer.

16 Not now as a seruant, but aboue a servant, a brother beloved, specially to mee, but how much more vnto thee, both in the flesh, and in the Lord?

17 If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as my selfe.

18 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth thee ought, put that on mine account.

19 I Paul haue written it with mine owne hand, I will repay it, albeit I doe not say to thee how thou owest to me, euenthine owne selfe besides :

20 Yea, brother, let mee haue ioy of thee in the Lord : refresh my bowels in the Lord.

21 Hating confidence in thy obedience, I wrote vnto thee, knowing that thou wilt also do more then I say.

22 But withall prepare mee also a lodging, for I trust that through your prayers I shall be giuen vnto you.

23 There salute thee Epaphras my fellow prisoner in Christ Iesus.

24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas my fellow laboures.

25 The grace of our Lord Iesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.

¶ Written

C H A P. I.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon, by Onesimus
a servant.

¶ The Epistle of Paul the Apostle
to the Hebrewes.

C H A P. I.

¶ Christ in these last times comming to vs from the
Father, is preferred above the Angels.

 Od who at sundry times, and in divers
manners speake in times past vnto the
Fathers by the Prophets;

¶ Hath in these last dayes spoken
vnto vs by his Sonne, whom he hath
appointed heire of all things, by whom also he
made the worlds:

¶ Who being the brightness of his glory and the
expresse image of his person, & upholding all things
by the word of his power, when he had by himselfe
purged our sinnes, sate downe on the right hand of
the Maiestie on high.

¶ Being made so much better then the Angels,
as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent
Name then they.

¶ For vnto which of the Angels said hee at any
time, Thou art my Sonne, this day haue I begotten
thee? And againe, I will be to him a Father, and he
shall be to me a Sonne.

¶ And againe, when hee bringeth in the first be-
gotten into the world, hee saith, And let all the An-
gels of God worship him.

¶ And of the Angels he saith, Who maketh his
Angels spirits, and his Ministers a flame of fire.

¶ But vnto the Sonne he saith, Thy throne, O
God is for euer and euer: a scepter of righteousness,
is the scepter of thy kingdome.

¶ Thou hast loued righteousness, and hated ini-
quite; therefore God, even thy God hath anointed
thee with the oyle of gladnesse aboue thy fellowes.

¶ And thou Lord, in the beginning hast laid the
foundation of the earth: and the heauens are the
workes of thine hands.

¶ They shall perish, but thou remainest: and they
all shall waxe olde as doth a garment.

¶ And as a vesture shalt thou fold them vp, and
they

TO THE H E R R E W E S.

they shall be changed, but thou art the same, and thy
yeeres shall not fail.

13 But vnto which of the Angels said hee at any
time, Sit on my right hand, till I make thine ene-
mies thy footstooles?

14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to
minister for them, who shalbe heires of saluation?

C H A P. II.

1 We must be obedient to Christ, & because he tooke
our nature upon him.

T Herefore wee ought to gine the more earnest
heed to the things which we haue heard, lest at
at any time we should let them slip.

2 For if the word spoken by Angels was stedfast,
and euery transgression and disobedience, received
a iust recompence of reward:

3 How shall we escape, if we neglect so great salua-
tion, which at first began to be spoken by the Lord,
and was confirmed vnto vs by them that heard him,

4 God also bearing them witnesse, both with
signes and wonders, and with diuers miracles, and
gifts of the holy Ghost, according to his owne will?

5 For unto the Angels hath he not put in subje-
ction the world to come, whereof we speake.

6 But one in a certaine place testified, saying,
What is man that thou art mindfull of him? or the
the sonne of man that thou visitest him?

7 Thou madest him a little lower then the An-
gels, thou crownedst him with glory and honor, and
didst set him ouer the workes of thine hands.

8 Thou hast put all things in subjection vnder his
feet: For in that he put all in subjection vnder him,
he left nothing that is not put vnder him. But now
we see not yet all things put vnder him.

9 But we see, Iesus who was made a little lower
then the Angels, for the suffering of death, crowned
with glory and honour, that he by the grace of God
should taste death for every man.

10 For it became him, for whom are all things,
and by whom are all thing, in bringing many sonnes
vnto glory, to make the Captaine of their salvation
perfect through sufferings.

11 For both he that sanctifieth, and they who are
sanctified, are all of one: for which cause he is not
ashamed to call them brethren,

12 Say-

C H A P. III.

13 Saying, I will declare thy Name vnto my brethren, in the midst of the Church will I sing praise vnto thee.

14 And againe, I will put my trust in him: and againe, behold, I and the children which God hath given me.

14 Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, hee also himselfe likewise tooke part of the same, that through death he might destroy him, that had the power of death, that is the devill:

15 And deliuer them, who through feare of death were all their life time subiect to bondage.

16 For verely he tooke not on him *the nature of Angels*: but he tooke on *him* the seed of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behoued him to be made like vnto his brethren, ſy he might be a mercifull and faithfull high Priest in things pertaining to God: to make reconciliation for the sins of ſy people.

18 For in that hee himselfe hath suffered beeing tempted, he is able to ſuccour them that are tempted

C H A P. III.

1 Christ more worthy then Moſes, 7 Therefore we are the more bound to beleeue in him.

VV Herefore holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, confider the Apostle, and high Priest of our profefſion, Christ Ieſus,

2 Who was faithfull to him that appointed him, as also Moſes was faithfull in all his house.

3 For this man was counted worthy of more glory then Moſes, in asmuch as he who hath builded the house, hath more honour then the house.

4 For every house is builded by ſome man, but hee that built all things is God.

5 And Moſes verely was faithfull in all his house as a ſervant, for a testimony of those things which were to be ſpoken after:

6 But Christ as a Sonne oner his owne house, whose house are we, if wee hold fast the confidence and the reioyciag of the hope firme vnto the end.

7 Vv hereote as the holy Ghoſt ſaith, to day if ye will heare his voyce,

8 Hearden not your hearts as in the prouocation in the day of temptation in the wildernesſe:

9 When your fathers tempted me, prooued mee, and ſaw my works fourty yecres, 10 Where-

TO THE HEBREWS.

10 Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said, They doe alway erre in their hearts, and they haue not knownen my wayes.

11 So I sware in my wrath ; They shall not enter into my rest.

12 Take heed brethren, lest there be in any of you an euill heart of vnbelief, in departing from the living God.

13 But exhort one another daily while it is called To day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sinne.

14 For we are made partakers of Christ if we hold the beginning of our confidence stedfast vnto y^e end.

15 Whiles it is said , To day if yee will heare his voyce, harden not your hearts, as in the prouocation,

16 For some when they had heard , did prouoke howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses.

17 But with whom was hee grieved fourtie yeeres? was it not with them that had sinned, whose carkeisses fell in the wildernes?

18 And to whom sware he that they should not enter into his rest, but to them that beleued not?

19 So we see, that they could not enter in, because of vnbelief.

C H A P. IIII.

1 The Christians rest is attained by faith. 12 The power of Gods word. 14 By my bish Priest Jesus.

Let vs therefore feare, leit a promise being left vs, of entring into his rest , any of you should seeme to come short of it.

2 For vnto vs was the Gospel preached as well as vnto them : but y^e word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it.

3 For we which haue beleued doe enter into rest, as he said , As I haue sworne in my wrath , if they shall enter into my rest , although the workes were finisched from the foundation of the world.

4 For hee spake in a certaine place of the seventh day on this wise : And God did rest the seventh day from all his workes.

5 And in this place againe: If they shall enter into my rest.

6 Seing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached,

cakcs

C H A P. V.

entered not in, because of vnbeliefē:

7 Againe, hee limiteth a certaine day, saying in
Danid, To day, after so long a time, as it is said, To
day if ye will heare his voyce, harden not your hearts

8 For if Iesus had givē them rest, then would he
not afterward haue spōken of another day.

9 There remaineth therefore a rest vnto the peo-
ple of God.

10 For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath
ceased from his owne workes, as God did from his.

11 Let vs labour therefore to enter into that rest,
lest any man fall after the same example of vnbeliefē.

12 For the word of God is quicke and powerfull,
and sharper then any two edged sword, piercing even
to the diuiding asunder of sonle and spirit, and of the
ioynts & marrow, and is a discernēr of the thoughts
and intents of the heart.

13 Neither is there any creature that is not mani-
fest in his sight: but all things are naked and opened
vnto the eyes of him with whom we haue to doe.

14 Seeing then that wee haue a great high Priest
that is passed into the heauens, Iesus the sonne of
God, let vs hold fast our profision.

15 For we haue not an high Priest which cannot
be touched with the feeling of our infirmitiēs: but
was in all points tempted like as wee are, yet with-
out sinne.

16 Let vs therefore come boldly vnto the throne
of grace, that we may obtaine mercy, and finde grace
to helpe in time of need.

* C H A P. V.

1 The authority and honour of Christis Priesthood.

For every hie Priest taken from among men, is or-
deined for men in things pertaining to God, that
he may offer both gifts and sacrifices for sinnes.

2 Who can haue compassion on the ignorant, and
on them that are out of the way, for that he himselfe
also is compassed with infirmity.

3 And by reason hereof hee ought as for the peo-
ple, so also for himselfe, to offer for sinnes.

4 And no man taketh this honour, vnto himselfe
but he that is called of God, as was Aarōn.

5 So also Christ, glorified not himselfe, to bee
made an high Priest: but hee that said vnto him,
Thou

TO THE HEBREWS.

Thou art my Sonne, to day haue I begotten thee.

6 As hee saith also in another place, Thou art a Priest for ever after the order of Melchizedec.

7 Who in the dayes of his flesh, when hee had offered vp prayers and supplications, with strong crying and teares, vnto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared.

8 Though he were a sonne, yet learned he obedience, by the things which he suffered:

9 And being made perfect, he became the author of eternall saluation vnto all them that obey him.

10 Called of God an high Priest after the order of Melchizedec.

11 Of whom wee haue many things to say, and hard to be uttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye haue need that one teach you againe, which be the first principles of the oracles of God, and are become such as haue need of milke and not of strong meate.

13 For every one that vseth milke, is vnskillfull in the word of righteousness: for he is a babe.

14 But strong meate belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of vse haue their senses exercised to discerne both good and euill.

C H A P. VI.

1 He exhorteth not to fall backe from faith.

T Herefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let vs goe on vnto periculation, not laying againe the foundation of repentance from dead workes, and of faith towards God,

2 Of the doctrine of Baptisme, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternall iudgement.

3 And this will we doe, if God permit.

4 For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and haue tasted of the heauenly gift, and were made partakers of the holy ghost,

5 And haue tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come;

6 If they shall fall away, to renew them againe vnto repentance, seeing they crucifie to themselves the Sonne of God afresh, and put him to an open shame

7 For the earth w^t drinketh in the rains that committeth

C H A P. VII.

meth oft vpon it, and bringeth forth herbes meet for them by whō it is dressed receiueth blessing frō God.

8 But that which beareth thornes and bryars, is rejected, and is nigh vnto cursing, whose end is to be burned.

9 But beloved, wee are perswaded better things of you, and things that accompany saluation, though we thus speake.

10 For God is not vnrighteous to forget your worke, and labout of loue, which yee haue shewed toward his Name, in that yee haue ministred to the Saints, and doe minister.

11 And we desirē every one of you doe shew the same diligence, to ſfull assurance of hope vnto ſ end

12 That yee bee not floſt, but followers of them, who through faith and patience inherit the promises.

13 For when God made promise to Abraham, becaūe he could ſwear by no greater, he ſware by himſelfe.

14 Saying, Surely, bleſſing I will bleſſe thee, and multiplying, I will multiply thee.

15 And ſo after he had patiently endured, hee obtainēd the promise.

16 For men verely ſwearē by the greater, and an oath for confirmation is to them an end of all strife.

17 Wherein God willing more abundantly to shew vnto the heires of promise, the immutability of his counsell, confirmed it by an oath:

18 That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, wee might haue a ſtrong conſolation, who haue fled for refuge to lay hold vpon the hope ſet before vs.

19 Which hope we haue as an anchor of the ſoule both ſure and ſtediſt, and which entreth into that within the vaile,

20 Whither the forerunner is for vs entred, even Iefus, made an high Priest for euer after the order of Melchisēdec.

C H A P. VII.

I Christ is a Priest after the order of Melchisēdec.

For this Melchisēdec King of Salem, Priest of the moſt high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the Kings, and bleſſed him:

TO THE HEBREWS.

2 To whom also Abraham gave a tenth part of all : first being by interpretation king of righteousness, and after that also king of Salem , which is King of peace.

3 Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of dayes , nor end of life: but made like vnto the Soun of God, abideth a Priest continually.

4 Now consider how great this man was , vnto whom euen the Patriarch Abraham gaue the tenth of the spoiles.

5 And verely they that are of the sounes of Levi, who receive the office of the Priesthood, haue a commandement to take tithes of the people according to the Law, that is of their brethren , though they come out of the loynes of Abraham :

6 But he whose descent is not counted from them, receiued tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.

7 And without all contradiction, the lesse is blessed of the better.

8 And heere men that die , receive tithes : but there he receiuesth them, of whom it is witnessed, that he liueth.

9 And as I may so say , Levi also who receiuesth tithes, payed tithes in Abraham,

10 For he was yet in the loynes of his father when Melchisedec met him.

11 If therefore perfection were by the Leviticall Priesthood (for vnder it the people received the Law) what further need was there that another Priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron ?

12 For the Priesthood being changed , there is made of necessity a change also of the Law.

13 For he of whom these things are spoken , pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gaue attendance at the Altar.

14 For it is euident that our Lord speang out of Iuda, of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning Priesthood.

15 And it is yet far more euident : for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another Priest.

16 Who

C H A P. VII.

16 Who is made not after the law of a carnall commandement, but after ſy power of an endleſſe life.

17 For he testifieth : Thou art a Priest for euer after the order of Melchisdeck.

18 For there is verily a diſanulling of the commandement going before, for the weakeſſe, and vniſtatiōneſſe thereof.

19 For the law made nothing perfect : but the bringing in of a better hope did : by the which wee draw nigh vnto God.

20 And in as much as not without an oath he was made Priest,

21 (For thofe Priests were made without an oath: but this with an oath, by him that ſaid vnto him, The Lord ſware and will not repent, Thou art a Priest for euer, after the order of Melchisdec.)

22 By ſo much was Iefus made a ſuretie of a better Testament.

23 And they truely were many Priests, because they were not ſuffered to continue by reaſon of death.

24 But this man, because he continueth euer, hath an unchangeable Priesthood.

25 Wherefore he is able also to ſave them to the vtermoſt, that come vnto God by him, ſeeing he euer liueth to make interceſſion for them.

26 For ſuch an high Priest became vs, who is holy, harmeleſſe, vndeſiled, ſeparate from ſinners, and made higher then the heauens.

27 Who needeth not daily, as thofe high Priests, to offer vp ſacrifice, firſt for his owne ſinnes, and then for the peoples : for this he did once, when he offered vp hiimſelfe.

28 For the Law maketh men high Priests which haue infirmitie, but the word of the oath, which was ſince the Law, maketh the Sonne, who is conſecrated for euermore.

C H A P. VIII.

1 By Christ's eternall Priesthood the Leuiſcall Priesthood is aboliſhed.

Now of the things which we haue ſpoken, thiſ is the ſumme : wee haue ſuch an high Priest, who is ſet on the right hand of the throne of the Maieſtie in the heauens :

2 A minister of the Sanctuarie, and of the true Taber-

TO THE HEBREWS.

Tabernacle which the Lord pitched, and not man.

5 For euery high Priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices : wherefore it is of necessitie that this man haue somewhat also to offer.

6 For if hee were on earth, hee should not be a Priest, seeing that there are Priests that offer gifts according to the Law :

7 Who serue vnto the example and shadow of heauenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the Tabernacle. For see (saith he) that thou make all things according to the paterne shewed vnto thee in the mount.

8 But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also hee is the Mediator of a better couenant, which was establisched vpon better promises.

9 For if that first Couenant had bin faultles, then should no place haue bin sought for the second.

10 For finding fault with them, he saith , Behold, the dayes come (saith the Lord) when I will make a new couenant with the house of Israel, and the house of Iudah.

11 Not according to the Couenant that I made with their fathers, in the day when I tooke them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt, because they continued not in my Couenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord.

12 For this is the Couenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those dayes, saith the Lord: I will put my Lawes into their minde , and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people.

13 And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying , Know the Lord : For all shall know mee, from the least to the greatest.

14 For I will be mercifull to their unrighteousnesse, and their sinnes and their iniquities will I remember no more.

15 In that he saith, A new Couenant, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old, is ready to vanish away.

C H A P. I X.

1 The rises and bloody sacrifices of the Law.

Then

C H A P. IX.

Then verely the first *Covenant* had also ordinances of divine seruice, and a worldly Sanctuary.

2 For there was a Tabernacle made, the first, wherein was the Candlestick, and the Table, and the Shewbread, which is called the Sanctuary.

3 And after the second vaile, the Tabernacle which is called the holiest of all :

4 Which had the golden censer, and the Arke of the Covenant overlaid round about wth gold, wherein was the golden pot, that had Manna, and Aarons rod that budded, and the Tables of the Couenant.

5 And ouer it the Cherubims of glory shadowing the Mercy-seate, of which we canot now speake particularly.

6 Now when these things were thus ordained, the Priests went alwayes into the first Tabernacle, accomplishing the seruice of God.

7 But into the second *went* the high Priest alone once every yere, not without blood which he offered for himselfe, and for the errors of the people.

8 The holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the Holiest of all, was not yet made manifest, while as the first Tabernacle was yet standing :

9 Which *was* a figure for the time then present : in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the seruice perfect, as perteining to the conscience,

10 *Whicb* flood onely in meates, and drinke, and driers washings, and carnall ordinances imposed on them vntill the time of reformation.

11 But Christ being come an high Priest of good things to come, by a greater and more perfect Tabernacle, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building :

12 Neither by the blood of goats and calues : but by his owne blood he entred in once into the Holy place, having obtained eternall redemption for vs.

13 For if the blood of bulls and of goates, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the vndeane, sanctifieth to the purifying of the flesh :

14 How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternall Spirit, offered himselfe without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works, to serue the liuing God ?

15 And

TO THE HEBREWS.

15 And for this cause he is the Mediatour of the new Testament, that by meanes of death, for the redemption of the transgressions that were vnder the first Testament, they which are called, might receive the promise of eternall inheritance.

16 For where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the Testator.

17 For a Testament is of force after men are dead; otherwise it is of no strength at all whilst the Testator liueth.

18 Wheteupon neither the first Testament was dedicated without blood.

19 For when Moses had spoken euery precept to all the people according to the Law, hee tooke the blood of calues and of goarts, with water and scarlet wooll, and hysope, and sprinkled both the booke and all the people,

20 Saying, This is the blood of the Testament which God hath enioyned vnto you.

21 Moreouer, he iþprinkled with blood, both the Tabernacle, and all the vessels of the ministracy.

22 And almost all things are by the Law purged with blood: and without shedding of blood is no remission.

23 It was therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the heauens should be purified with these, but the heavenly things themselves with better sacrifices then these.

24 For Christ is not entred into the Holy place made with hands, which are the figures of the true, but into heauen it selfe, now to appeare in the presence of God for vs.

25 Nor yet that he shold offer himselfe often, as the high Priest entreth into the Holy place, euery yeare with blood of others:

26 For then must he often haue suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world, hath he appeared to put away sinne by the sacrifice of himselfe.

27 And as it is appointed vnto men once to die, but after this the judgement:

28 So Christ was once offered to beare the sins of many, and vnto them that looke for him, shal he appear the second time, without sin, vnto saluation.

C H A P. X.

2 The weake[n]esse of the sacrifices of the Law, to end
power of Christ's sacrifices.

For the Law having a shadow of good things to
come, and not y^e very image of y^e things, can never
with those sacrifices which they offred yeere by yeere
continually, make the commers thereunto perfect:

2 For then would they not haue ceased to be of-
fered, because that the worshippers once purged,
should haue had no more conscience of sins?

3 But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance
againe made of sinnes every yeere.

4 For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and
of goates should take away sinnes.

5 Wherefore when he commeth into the world,
he saith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not but
a body hast thou prepared me.

6 In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin: thou hast
had no pleasure:

7 Then said I, Loe I come, (In the volume of the
booke it is written of me) to doe thy will, O God.

8 Abone when he said, Saerifice, and offering and
burnt offerings, and offering for sinne thou wouldest
not, neither hadst pleasure therein, which are offered
by the Law:

9 Then said he, Loe, I come to doe thy will (O
God) He taketh away the first, that he may establish
the second.

10 By the which will we are sanctified, through
the offering of the body of Iesus Christ once for all.

11 And every Priest standeth daily ministering, and
offering often times the same sacrifices which can ne-
ver take away sins.

12 But this man after he had offered one sacrifice
for sins for euer, sate down on y^e right hand of God.

13 From hence foorth expecting till his enemies
be made his footstooles.

14 For by one offering he hath perfected for euer
them that are sanctified.

15 Whereof the holy Ghost also is a witness to
vs: for after that he had said before,

16 This is the couenant that I will make with
them after those dayes, saith the Lord: I will put my
Lawes into their hearts, and in their mindes will I
write them:

TO THE HEBREWS.

37 And their sins and iniquities will I remember no more.

38 Now where remission of these is, there is no more offering for sin.

39 Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the Holiest by the blood of Jesus.

40 By a new and living way which he hath consecrated for us through the vaile that is to say, His flesh

41 And having an hie Priest ouer his house of God:

42 Let vs draw neare with a true heart in ful assurance of faith, hating our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience, and our bodies washed w pure water.

43 Let vs hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering (for he is faithfull that promised.)

44 And let vs consider one another to pronounce vnto loue, and to good works:

45 Not forsaking the assembling of our selues together, as it maner of some is: but exhorting one another, & so much the more as ye see the day approaching.

46 For if we sin wilfully after that wee have received the knowledge of the trueth, there remaineth no more sacrifice for sinnes,

47 But a certaine fearefull looking for of judgment and fiery indignation w shal deuoure the aduersaries.

48 He that despised Moses Law, died without mercy vnder two or three witnessies.

49 Of how much soror punishment suppose ye, shal he be thought worthy who hath troden vnder foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the Covenant wherewith he was sanctified, an vnholie thing, & hath done despite vnto the Spirit of grace?

50 For we know him that hath said, Vengeance belongeth vnto me, I will recompence, saith the Lord: and againe, The Lord shall judge his people.

51 It is a fearefull thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

52 But call to remembrance the former dayes in which after ye were illuminated, ye endured a great fight of afflictions:

53 Partly whilst ye were made a gazing stocke both by reproaches, and afflictions, and partly whilst ye became companions of them that were so vsed.

54 For ye had compassion of me, in my bonds, and tooke joyfully the spoyleing of your goods, knowing

C H A P. XI.

In your selnes, that ye have in heauen a better and an
enduring substance.

35 Cast not away therefore your confidence which
hath great recompence of reward.

36 For ye have need of patience, that after we have
done the will of God, ye might receive the promise.

37 For yet a little while, and he that shall come,
will come, and will not tarry.

38 Now if just thall live by faith: but if any man
draw backe, my soule shall have no pleasure in him.

39 But we are not of them who draw backe vnto
perdition: but of them that beleue to the savinge of
the soule.

C H A P. XI.

1 What faith is. 6 Without it wee can not please
God. 7 The fruits thereof in the ffishers of men.

N ow faith is the substance of things hoped for,
the evidence of things not seene.

2 For by it the Elders obtained a good report.

3 Through faith we understand that the worlds
were framed by the word of God, so y^e things which
we seene, were not made of things that doe appear.

4 By faith Abel offered vnto God a more excell-
ent sacrifice then Cain, by which he obtained wit-
nesse, that hee was righteous, God testifying of his
gifts: and by it he being dead, yet speakeith.

5 By faith Enoch was translated, that he should
not see death, and was not found, because God had
translated him: for before his translation he had this
testimony, I hat he pleased God.

6 But without faith it is impossible to please
him: for he that commeth to God, must believe that
he is: and that he is a rewarder of them that dili-
gently seeke him.

7 By faith Noah being warned of God, of things
not seene as yet, moued wulfeare, prepared an Arke
to the savinge of his house, by the which he condem-
ned the world, and became heire of the righteousness
which is by faith.

8 By faith Abraham when he was cailed to goe
out into a place which he shold alree receiue for an
inheritance, obeyed, and he went out, not knowing
whither he went.

9 By faith hee sojourned in the land of promise,

TO THE HEBREWS.

as in a strange countrey , dwelling in Tabernacles with Isaac and Iacob , the heires with him of the same promise,

10 For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through faith also Sara her selfe received strength to conceiue seede, and was delinered of a child, when she was past age, because she iudged him faithfull who had promised.

12 Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead , so many as the starres of the skie in multitude , and as the sand which is by the sea those unnumberable.

13 These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seene them afarre off, and were perswaded of them, and embraced them, and confesed that they were strangers & pilgrims on the earth.

14 For they that say such things , declare plainly, that they seeke a countrey.

15 And truely if they had beeene mindfull of that countrey, from whence they came out , they might haue had opportunity to haue returned :

16 But now they desire a better countrey, that is, an heanenly : wherefore God is not ashamed to bee called their God, for he hath prepared for them a city.

17 By faith Abraham when he was tryed , offered vp Isaac : and he that had received the promises, offered vp his onely begotten sonne,

18 Of whom it was said, That, In Isaac shall thy seed be called.

19 Accounting that God was able to raise him vp, even from the dead : from whence also hee received him in a figure.

20 By faith Isaac blessed Iacob and Esau concerning things to come.

21 By faith Iacob when he was a dying , blessed both the sonnes of Ioseph, and worshipped, leaning vpon the top of his staffe.

22 By faith Ioseph when he died , made mention of the departing of the children of Israel : and gaue commandement concerning his bones.

23 By faith Moses when he was borne , was hid thre moneths of his parents , because they saw hee was a proper child, and they not afraid of the kings commandement.

24 By

C H A P. XI.

24 By faith, Moses when he was come to yeeres, refused to be called the sonne of Pharaohs daughter;

25 Chusing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, then to enjoy the pleasures of sinne for a season :

26 Esteeming the reproch of Christ greater riches then the treasures in Egypt : for he had respect vnto the recompence of the reward.

27 By faith hee forlooke Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king ; for he endured, as seeing him who is inuisible.

28 Through faith he kept the Passoer, and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the first borne, should touch them.

29 By faith they passed thorow the red sea, as by dry land : which the Egyptians assaying to doe, were drowned.

30 By faith the walles of Iericho fell downe, after they were compassed about seuen dayes.

31 By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them that beleueed not, when she had receivd the spies with peace.

32 And what shall I more say ? for the time would faile me to tell of Gideon, and of Barak, & of Sampson, and of Iephthah, of David also, and Samuel, and of the Prophets :

33 Who through faith subdued Kingdomes, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouthes of Lyons,

34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakenesse were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens :

35 Women received their dead raised to life againe : and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance, that they might receive a better resurrection.

36 And others had triall of cruell mockings and scourgings, yea moreouer, of bonds & imprisonment.

37 They were stoned, they were sawen asunder, were tempted, were slaine with the sword. they wandred about in sheepe skynnes, and goats skynnes, being destitute, afflicted, tormented.

38 Of whom the world was not worthy : they wandered

TO THE HEBREWS.

wandered in deserts, and in mountaines, and in dens,
and canes of the earth.

59 And these all having obtained a good report
through faith, received not the promise.

40 God having provided some better thing for vs,
that they without vs shold not be made perfect.

C H A P. XIII

1 *An exhortation to faith, patience, and godlynesse;*
Wherefore, seeing we also are compassed about
with so great a cloud of witnessies, let vs lay
aside every weight, and the sinne which doeth so
easily beset vs, and let vs run with patience the race
that is set before vs,

2 Looking vnto Iesus the authour and finisher
of our faith, who for the ioy that was set before him,
endured the crooke, despising the shame, and is set
downe at the right hand of the throne of God.

3 For consider him that endured such contradic-
tion of sinners against himselfe, lest ye be wearied
and faint in your minds.

4 Ye haue not yet resisted vnto blood, straining
against faine.

5 And ye haue forgotten the exhortation which
speaketh vnto you, as vnto children, My sonne, de-
spise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint
when thou art rebuked of him.

6 For whom the Lord loueth, he chasteneth, and
scourgeth every sonne whom he iocmeth.

7 If ye endure chasteing, God dealeth with you
as with sonnes: for what sonne is he whom the fa-
ther chasteneth not?

8 But if ye be without chasteing, whereof all
are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sonnes.

9 Furthermore, we haue had fathers of our flesh,
which corrected vs, and we gaue them reverence:
Shall we not much rather be in subiection vnto the
Father of spirits, and liue?

10 For they verely for a few daves chastened vs,
after their owne pleasure, but he for our profit, that
we might be partakers of his holynesse.

11 Now no chasteing for the present seemeth to
be iorous, but grieuous; nevertheless, afterward
it yeeldeth the peaceable fruit of righeteousnesse, va-
to them which are exercised thereby.

12 Where-

C H A P. XII.

12 Wherefore lift vp the hands which hang downe, and the feeble knees:

13 And make strait pathes for your feete, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way, but let it rather be healed.

14 Follow peace with all men, and holines, without which no man shall see the Lord:

15 Looking diligently, lest any man faile of the grace of God, lest any root of bittetnesse springing vp trouble you and thereby many be defiled:

16 Lest there be any fornicatour, or prophane person as Esau, who for one mortciall of meat sold his birth-right.

17 For ye know how that afterward when hee would haue inhereted the blessing he was rejected, for he found no place of repentance; though hee sought it carefully with teares.

18 For ye are not come vnto the mount that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor vnto blackenesse, and darknesse, and tempest,

19 And the sound of a triumper, and the voyce of words, which voyce they that heard, entreated that the word shoulde not be spoken to them any more.

20 For they could not endure that which was commanded: And if so much as a beast touch the Mountaine, it shal be stoned, or thrust thorow with a dart.

21 And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly feare and quake.

22 But ye are come vnto mount Sion, and vnto the city of the living God, the heauenly Hierusalem, and to an innumerable company of Angels:

23 To the generall assembly, and Church of the first borne which are written in heauen, and to God the iudge of all, and to the spirits of iust men made perfect:

24 And to Iesus the Mediator of the new conenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things then that of Abel.

25 See that ye refuse not him that speaketh: for if they escaped not, whorfused him that spake on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turne away from him that speaketh from heauen.

26 Whose voyce then shooke the earth: but now

TO THE HEBREWS.

he hath promised, saying, Yet once more I shake not the earth onely, but also heauen.

27 And this word, Yet once more, signifieth the remouing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things which cannot be shaken, may remaine.

28 Wherfore we receiving a kingdome, which cannot be moued, let vs haue grace, whereby we may serue God acceptably with reverence and godly feare.

29 For our God is a consuming fire.

C H A P. XIII.

1 Divers admonitions to charity and other vertues,
2; The conclusion of the Epistle.

L Et brotherly loue continue.

2 Be not forgetfull to entertaine strangers, for thereby some haue entertained Angels vnawares,

3 Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them, and them which suffer aduersity, as being your selues also in the body.

4 Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers, and adulterers God will iudge.

5 Let your conuersation be without covetousnes, and be content with such things as ye haue: For he hath said, I will never leaue thee, nor forsake thee.

6 So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not feare what man shall doe vnto me.

7 Remember them which haue the rule ouer you, who haue spoken vnto you the word of God, whose faith follow, considering the end of their conuersation.

8 Iesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever.

9 Be not carried about with diuers and strange doctirines: for it is a good thing that the heart be establisht with grace, not with meates, which haue not profited them that haue beeene occupied therein.

10 We haue an altar whereof they haue no right to eate, which serue the Tabernacle.

11 For the bodies of those beasts, whose blood is brought into the Sanctuary by the high Priest for

CHAP. XIII.

sinne, are burnt without the campe.

12 Wherefore Iesus also, that he might sanctifie the people with his owne blood, sufficed without the gate,

13 Let vs goe foorth therefore vnto him without the campe, bearing his reproach.

14 For here haue we no continuing city, but wee sticke one to come.

15 By him therefore let vs offer the sacrifice of prayse to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips, giuing thankes to his Name.

16 But to doe good, and to communicate, forget not; for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

17 Obey them that haue the rule ouer you, and submit your selues: for they watch for your soules; as they that must gine account, that they may doe it with ioy, and not with griefe: for that is vnprofitable for you.

18 Pray for vs: for we trust we haue a good conscience in all things, willing to liue honestly.

19 But I beseech you the rather to doe this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.

20 Now the God of peace, that brought againe from the dead our Lord Iesus, that great Shepheard of the theape, through the blood of the euerlasting Couenant,

21 Make you perfect in every good worke to doe his will, working in you that which is well pleasing in his sight, through Iesus Christ, to whom be glory for euer and euer, Amen.

22 And I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word of exhortation, for I haue written a letter unto you in few words.

23 Know ye, that our brother Timothy is set at liberty, with whom if hee come shortly, I will see you.

24 Salute all them that haue the rule ouer you, and all the Saints. They of Italy salute you.

25 Grace be with you all. Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrewes, from
Italy by Timothy.

The generall Epistle of Iames.

C H A P. I.

We must reioice under the croffe, 5 aske patiance
at God, 19 heare the word and doe the easier.

Iames a seruant of God , and of the
Lord Iesus Christ, to the twelve tribes
which are scattered abroad, greeting.

2 My bretheren, count it all joy, when
ye fall into diuers temptacions.

3 Knowing this, that the trying of your faith, wor-
keth patience.

4 But let patience haue her perfect worke, that
ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.

5 If any of you lacke wisdome, let him aske it of
God , that giveth to all men libertally, and vprai-
deth not, and it shall be givien him.

6 But let him aske in faith, nothing waverings; for
he that wanereth, is like a waue of the sea, driven
with the wind, and tossed.

7 For let not that man thinke that hee shall re-
ceiuie any thing of the Lord.

8 A double minded man is unstable in all his waies,

9 Let the brother of low degree reioice in that he
is exalted.

10 But the rich , in that hee is made low : because
as the floute of the grasse he shall passe away.

11 For the Sunne is no sooner risen with a burning
heat, but it withereth the grasse; and the floute there-
of falleth, & the grace of the iathion of it periiheth,
so also shall the rich man fade away in his wayes.

12 Blessed is the man that endureth temptation :
for when he is tryed , he shall receiuie the crowne of
life, & the Lord hath promised to them that loue him.

13 Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tem-
pted of God : for God cannot be tempted with euill,
neither tempteth he any man.

14 But every man is tempted, when he is drawen
away of his owne lust, and enticed.

15 Then when lust hath conceiued, it bringeth
forth sinne : and sinne, when it is finisched, bringeth
forth death.

16 Doe not erre, my beloved brethren.

17 Euery good gift ; and euery perfect gift is
from aboue, and cometh downe from the Father of
lights,

C H A P. I L

lights, with whom is no variablenesse, neither shadowe of turning.

18 Of his owne will begate he vs, with the word of Trueth, that we should be a kind of first fruits of his creatures.

19 Wherefore my beloved brethren, let euery man be swift to heare, slow to speake, slow to wrath.

20 For the wrath of man worketh not the righteousnesse of God.

21 Wherefore lay apart all filthinesse and superfluitie of naughtinesse, and receiuie with meekenesse the engrasted word, which is able to save your soules.

22 But be ye doers of the wortd, and not hearers only, deceiuing your owne soules.

23 For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like vnto a man beholding his natural face in a glasse:

24 For he beholdeth himselfe, and goeth his way, and straight way forgetteth what manner of man he was.

25 But who so looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetfull hearer, but a doer of the worke, this man shalbe blessed in his deed.

26 If any man among you seeme to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiuethe his owne heart, this mans religion is vaine.

27 Pure religion, and undefiled before God and the Father, is this, To visit the fatherlesse and widowes in their affliction, and to keepe himselfe unspotted from the world.

C H A P. II.

Christians must not regard the rich, and despise the poore. 14 Faith without works. 17 is a dead faith.

MY brethren haue not y^e faith of our Lord Iesus Christ, the Lord of glory w^t respect of persons.

2 For if there come vnto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poore man in vile raiment:

3 And yee haue respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say vnto him, Sit thou heere in a good place: and say to the poore, Stand thou there, or sit here vnder my foottoole:

4 Are ye not then partiall in your selues and are become

I A M E S.

become judges of evill thoughts ?

5 Hearken my beloved brethren , Hath not God chosen the poore of this world , rich in faith , and heires of the kingdome , which he hath promised to them that loue him ?

6 But yee haue despised the poore . Doe not rich men oppresse you , and draw you before the iudgement seats ?

7 Doe not they blaspheme that worthy Name , by the which ye are called ?

8 If ye fulfill the roiall Law , according to the Scripture , Thou shalt loue thy neighbour as thy selfe , ye doe well .

9 But if yee haue respect of persons , yee commit sin , and are contiyned of the Law , as transgessors .

10 For whosoever shall keepe the whole Law , and yet offend in one point , he is guilty of all .

11 For he that said ; Do not commit adultery , said also , Doe not kill . Now if thou commit no adultery , yet if thou kill , thou art become a transgessour of the Law .

12 So speake ye , and so doe , as they that shall bee iudged by the Law of liberty .

13 For he shall haue iudgement without mercy , that hath shewed no mercy , and mercy rejoyceth against iudgement .

14 What doeth it profit , my brethren , though a man say , he hath faith ; and haue not worke ? can faith save him ?

15 If a brother or sister be naked , and destitute of dayly food ;

16 And one of you say vnto them ; Depart in peace , be you warmed and filled : notwithstanding ye gine them not those things that are needfull to the body : what doeth it profit ?

17 Euen so faith , if it hath not worke , is dead being alone .

18 Yea , a man may say , Thou hast faith , and I haue works : shew me thy faith without thy works , and I will shew thee my faith by my works .

19 Thou beleeuest that there is one God , thou doest well : the devils also beleeue and tremble .

20 But wilt thou know , O vaine man , that faith without works is dead ?

C H A P. III.

21 Was not Abraham our father iustified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son vpon the Altar?

22 Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?

23 And the Scripture was fulfilled, which saith, Abraham belieued God, & it was imputed vnto him for righteousness: & he was called the friend of God.

24 Ye see then, how that by works a man is iustified, and not by faith onely.

25 Likewise also, was not Rahab the harlot iustified by works, when shee had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way?

26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

C H A P. III.

5 *The tongue must be bridled.* 13 *They that are truly wise, be mild, & peaceable without envying and strife.*

MY brethren, be not many matters, knowing

6 *we shall receive the greater condemnation.* 2 For in many things we offend all. If any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, and able also to bridle the whole body.

3 Behold, we put bits in the horses mouths, y^e they may obey vs, and we turne about their whole bodie.

4 Behold also the shippes, which though they be so great, and are driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a very small helme, whithersoever the governour listeth.

5 Euen so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things: behold how great a matter a little fire kindleth.

6 And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and it is set on fire of hell.

7 For every kind of beasts, and of birds, and of serpents, and things in the sea is tamed, and hath beene tamed of mankind.

8 But the tongue can no man tame, it is an unruly euill, full of deadly poysone.

9 Therewith blesse we God euen the Father: and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God.

10 Out of the same mouth procedeth blessing and cursing

I A M E S.

cusing: my brethren, their things ought not so to be,

11 Doeth a fountaine send forth at the same place
sweet water and bitter?

12 Can the figtree, my brethren, beare olive ber-
ries either a vise figs? so can no fountaine both
yeeld salt water and fresh.

13 Who is a wise man and endued with know-
ledge amongst you? let him shew out of a good con-
versation his works with meeknesse of wisedome.

14 But if ye haue bitter enuyng and strife in your
hearts, glory not, and lie not againt the trueth.

15 This wisedome descended not from aboue, but
is earthly, sensuall devillish.

16 For where enuyng and strife is, there is con-
fusion, and euery euill worke.

17 But the wisedome that is from abone, is first
pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easie to be entre-
ted, full of mercy, and good fruits without partiality,
and without hypocrisie.

18 And the fruit of righteosnesse is sowne in
peace, of them that make peace.

C H A P. I I I.

1 Against covetousnesse, 4 intemperance, 5 pride,
11 detraction and rash censuring.

FROM whence come warres, and fightings among
you? come they not hence, euen of your lusts, that
war in your members?

2 Ye lust, and haue not: ye kill, and desire to haue,
and cannot obteine: ye fight and warre, yet ye haue
not, because ye aske not.

3 Ye aske and receive not, because ye aske amisse,
that ye may consume it vpon your lusts.

4 Ye adulterers, and adulteresses, know ye not that
the friendship of the world is enmity with God,
whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world, is
the enemy of God.

5 Doe ye thinke that the Scripture saith in vaine,
The Spirit that dwelleth in vs lusteth to enuyg

6 But he giueth more grace: wherefore he saith, God
refleth the proud, but giveth grace vnto the humble.

7 Submit your selues therefore to God, resist the
devill, and he will flee from you.

8 Draw nigh to God, and hee will draw nigh to
yon: cleanse your hands, ye sinners, and purifie your
hearts, ye double minded.

9 Bee

C H A P. V.

9 Be afflicted, and mourne, and weepe : let your laughter be turned into mourning , and your joy to heauineise.

10 Humble your selues in the sight of the Lord , and he shall lift you vp.

11 Speake not euill one of another (brethren) he that speaketh euill of his brother , and iudgeth his brother, speaketh euill of the Law , and iudgeth the Law : bnt if thou judge the Law, thou art not a doer of the Law, but a ludge.

12 There is one Law-giver , who is able to save, and to destroy : who art thou that iudgeth another?

13 Goe to now, yee that say, To day or to morrow we will goe into such a city, and continue there a yeere, and buy, and sell, and get gaine :

14 Wheras ye know not what shalbe on the morrow : for what is your life ? It is even a vapour that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheith away.

15 For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live and doe this or that.

16 But now ye reioyce in your boastings : all such reioycing is euill.

17 Therefore to him that knoweth to doe good, and doeth it not, to him it is sinne.

C H A P. V.

1 Of wicked rich men. 7 Of paientee. 12 To forbeare fweating.

G Oe to now, ye rich men, woepe and howle for your miseries that shall come vpon you.

2 Your riches are corrupted , and your garments mothateen :

3 Your gold and siluer is cankered, and the rust of them shall be a witnesse against you , and shall eat your flesh as it were fire : ye haue heaped treasure together for the last dayes.

4 Behold the hire of the labourers , which haue reaped downe your fields, which is of you kept backe by fraud, crieth: And § cries of them which haue reaped, are entered into the eates of the Lord of Sabbath.

5 Yee haue liued in pleasure o : the earth , and been wanton : ye haue nourished your hearts , as in a day of slaughter.

6 Ye haue condemned, and killed the iust, and he doeth not resist you.

I A M E S.

7 Be patient therefore brethren, vnto the comming of the Lord : behold , the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth , and hath long patience for it , vntill hee receiue the early and latter raine.

8 Be ye also patient : stablish your hearts : for the comming of the Lord draweth nigh.

9 Grudge not one against another, byethren , lest ye be condemned : behold, the ludge standeth before the doore.

10 Take, my brethren, the Prophets , who haue spoken in the Name of the Lord , for an ensample of suffering affliction, and of patience.

11 Behold , we count them happy, which endure, Ye haue heard of the patience of Iob, and haue scene the end of the Lord : thit the Lord is very pitifull, and of tender mercy.

12 But abone all things, my brethren, sweare not, neither by heauen, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea, be yea, and your nay, nay: lest you fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted ? let him pray. Is any merry ? let him sing Psalmes.

14 Is any sicke among you ? let him call for the Elders of the Church , and let them pray ouer him, anointing him with oyle in the Name of the Lord :

15 And the prayer of faith shall sauе the sicke, and the Lord shall raise him vp : and if he haue committed sinnes, they shall be forgiuen him.

16 Confesse your faultes one to another , and pray one for another, that ye may be healed : the effectual seruent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

17 Elias was a man subiect to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not raine: and it rained not on the earth by the space of three yeeres and sixe moneths.

18 And he prayed againe , and the heauen gaue raine, and the earth brought forth her fruit.

19 Brethren, if any of you doe erre from the truthe, and one convert him,

20 Let him know , that he which converteth the sinner from the erroure of his way, shall sauē a soule from death, and shall hide a multitude of sinnes.

The first Epistle generall of Peter.

C H A P. I.

He blesseth God for his spirituall graces. 10 Saluati-
on in Christ prophesied of old.



Eter an Apostle of Iesus Christ, to the
strangers scattered throughout Pontus,
Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, & Bithynia,

2 Elect, according to the foreknow-
ledge of God the Father, through san-
ctification of the spirit vnto obedience, & sprinkling
of the blood of Iesus Christ : Grace vnto you , and
peace be multipliyed.

3 Blessed be the God, and Father of our Lord Iesus
Christ , which according to his abundant mercy,
hath begotten vs againe vnto a lively hope, by the
resurrection of Iesus Christ from the dead,

4 To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled,
and that fadeth not away, reserved in heauen for you;

5 Who are kept by ſ power of God through faith
vnto salvation, ready to be revealed in the laſt time,

6 Wherein ye greatly reioyce , though now for a
ſeason(if need be)ye are in heauineſſe through mani-
fold temptations :

7 That the tryall of your faith, being much more
precious then of gold that perisheth , though it be
tryed with fire, might be found vnto praise, and ho-
nor, and glory at the appearing of Iesus Christ:

8 Whom hauing not ſcene, yee loue , in whom
though now ye ſee him not yet beleeuing, ye reioyce
with ioy vnspeakable, and full of glory,

9 Receiving the end of your faith, euē the ſal-
uation of your ſoules :

10 Of which ſaluation the Prophets haue enqui-
red, and ſearched diligently, who prophesied of the
grace that ſhould come vnto you.

11 Searching what , or what manner of time the
ſpirit of Christ which was in them, did ſignifie, when
it teſtified beforehand the ſufferings of Christ, and
the glory that ſhould follow.

12 Vnto whō it was revealed, that not vnto them-
ſelues, but vnto vs, they did minister the things w̄ are
now reported vnto you, by them that haue preached
the Gospell vnto you with the holy Ghost ſent downe
from heauen, which things the Angels deſire to look
into.

13 Where-

I. P E T E R.

13 Wherefore gird vp the loynes of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end, for the grace that is to be brought vnto you at the revelation of Iesus Christ:

14 As obedient children, not fathioning your selues according to the former lusts in your ignorance:

15 But as he which hath called you, is holy, so be ye holy in all maner of conuersation:

16 Because it is written, Bee ye holy, for I am holy.

17 And if ye call on ſe Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to euery mans worke, passe the time of yont ſojourning here in feare,

18 Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as siluer and gold, from your vaine conuersation received by tradition from your fathers;

19 But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a Lambe without blemish, and without spot:

20 Who verely was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times ſt you:

21 Who by him do beleue in God that raised him vp from the dead, and gaue him glory that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Seeing you haue purified your ſoules in obeying the truthe through the Spirit, vnto vnfained loue of the brethren: ſee that ye loue one another with a pure heart fervently;

23 Being borne againe, not of corruptible ſeed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God; which liueth, and abideth for ever.

24 For all fleſh is as grasse, and all the glory of man as the floure of grasse, the grasse withereth, and the floure thereof falleth away.

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever: and this is the word which by the Gospel is preached vnto you.

C H A P. II.

Hee doth them from breach of charity, & ſhowing that Christ is the foundation.

WHerefore, laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocriſies, and enuies, & euill speakings.

2 As new borne babes, desire the ſincere milke of the word, that ye may grow thereby,

C H A P. III.

3 If so be ye haue tastid that the Lord is gracious.

4 To whom comming *as* vnto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious.

5 Ye also as lively stones, are built vp a spirituall house, an holy Priesthood, to offer vp spirituall sacrifice acceptable to God by Iesus Christ.

6 Wherefore it is contained in the Scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chiefe corner stone, elect, precious, & he y^e beleueth on him, shall not be confounded.

7 Vnto you therefore which beleue, he is precious, but vnto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner,

8 And a stome of stumbling, and a rocke of offence, *even to them* which stumble at the word, being disobedient, whereunto also they were appointed.

9 But ye are a chosen generation, a royall Priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people, that yee should shew forth the praises of him, who hath called you out of darkenesse into his marueilous light:

10 Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now haue obtained mercy.

11 Dearely beloued, I beseech you, as strangers and pilgrims, abstaine from fleshly lustes, which warre against the soule,

12 Hauing your conuersation honest among the Gentiles, that whereas they speake against you as euill doers, they may by your good warkes which they shall behold, gloriifie God in the day of visitation.

13 Submit your selues to every ordinance of man, for the Lords sake, whether it be to the King, as supreme,

14 Or vnto gouernours, as vnto the n^t, that are sent by him for the punishment of euill doers, and for the praise of them that doe well.

15 For so is the will of God, that with well doing ye might put to silence the ignorance of foolish men.

16 As free, and not vsing your liberty for a cloake of malicioufnesse, but as the seruants of God.

17 Honour all men. loue the brotherhood. Feare God. Honour the King.

18 Seruants, be subiect to your masters w^t all feare,
not

I. P E T E R.

not only to thy good & gentle, but also to the froward,

19 For this is thanke-worthy, if a man for confor-
mity toward God endure grieve, suffering wrongfully,

20 For what glory is it, if when ye be buffeted for
your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if when ye
doe well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently: this
is acceptable with God.

21 For euen hercunto were yee called: because
Christ also suffered for vs, leauing vs an example
that ye should follow his steps.

22 Who did no sinne, neither was guile found in
his mouth.

23 Who when he was reviled, reviled not againe:
when he suffered, he threatned not, but committed
himselfe to him that iudgeth righteouslly.

24 Who his owne selfe bare our sinnes in his owne
body on the tree, y we being dead to sins, should live
vnto righteousness, by whose stripes ye were healed.

25 For ye were as sheepe going astray, but are now
returned vnto the Shepherd & Bishop of your soules.

C H A P. III.

1 The dueties of wiues and husbands each to other,
8 An exhortation to unity.

L ikewise ye wiues, be in subiection to your owne
husbands, that if any obey not the word, they
also may without the word be wonne by the conuer-
sation of the wiues,

2 While they behold your chaste conuersation
coupled with feare.

3 Whose adorning, let it not bee that outward
adorning, of plaighting the haire, and of wearing of
gold, or of puttynge on of apparell:

4 But let it bee the hidden man of the heart, in that
it is not corruptible, *suen the ornameſt* of a meek and
quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.

5 For after this maner as the old time, the holy
women also who trusted in God, adorned them-
selves, being in subiection to their owne husbands,

6 Euen as Sara obeyed Abraham, calling him
Lord, whose daughters ye are as long as ye doewell,
and are not afraid with any amazement.

7 Likewise ye husbands, dwell with them accor-
ding to knowledge, giving honour vnto the wife, as
vnto the weaker vessell, & as being heires together of
the

C H A P. III.

the grace of life, that your prayers be not hindred.

8 Finally be ye all of one minde, hauing compas-
sion one of another, loue as brethren, be pitifull, be
courteous.

9 Not rendring euill for euill, or railing for rai-
ling: but contrariwise, blessing, knowing that ye are
therunto called, that ye shoulde inherit a blessing

10 For he that will loue life, and see good dayes,
let him restraine his tongue from euill, and his lips
that they speake no guile;

11 Let him eschew euill and doe good, let him
seeke peace and ensue it.

12 For the eyes of the Lord are ouer the righteous,
and his eares are open vnto their prayers: but the
face of the Lord is against them that doe euill.

13 And who is he that will harme you, if ye be
followers of that which is good?

14 But and if ye suffer for righteouesesse sake, hap-
py are ye, and be not afraid of their terror, neither
be troubled:

15 But sanctifie the Lord God in your hearts, and
be ready alwayes to give an answere to every man
that asketh you a reason of the hope that is in you,
with meekenesse and feare:

16 Having a good conscience, ywheras they speak
euill of you, as of euill doers, they may be ashamed
that falsly accuse your good conuersation in Christ.

17 For it is better if the will of God be so, that ye
suffer for well doing, then for euill doing.

18 For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, y iust
for the vniust, that he might bring vs to God, being
put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit.

19 By which also he went and preached, vnto the
spirits in prison,

20 Whiche sometime were disobedient when once
the long suffering of God waited in the daies of No-
ah, while the Arke was a preparing: wherin few,
that is, eight soules were sau'd by water.

21 The like figure whereto, even Baptisme, doth
also now saue vs, (not the putting away of the filth
of the flesh, but the answere of a good conscience
toward God) by the resurrection of Iesus Christ:

22 Who is gone into heauen, and is on the right
hand of God, Angels, and authorities, and powers,
being made subject vnto him.

C H A P.

L P E T E R.
C H A P. I I I.

1 He exhorteth to cease from sinne; 12 and comforteth them against persecution.

F Orlasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for vs in his flesh, arme your selues likewise w^t the same mind: for he y^t hath suffered in his flesh, hath ceased from sin:

2 That he no longer should live y^t rest of his time in the flesh, to his lusts of men, but to the will of God.

3 For the time past of our life may suffice vs to haue wrought the wil of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciuionines, lusts, excesse of wine, revellings, banquettings, and abominable idolatries.

4 Wherein they thinke it strange, y^t you run not w^t them to y^t same excesse of riot, speaking enijl of you:

5 Who shall give account to him that is ready to judge the quicke and the dead.

6 For, for this cause was the Gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might bee judged according to men in the flesh, but live according to God in the Spirit.

7 But the end of all things is at hand: bee yee therefore sober and watch vnto prayer.

8 And above all things, haue fervent charity among your selues: for charity shall cover the multitude of sinnes.

9 Use holpitality one to another without grudging.

10 As euery man hath receiued the gift, even so minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man speake, let him speake as the oracles of God: If any man minister, let him doe it as of the ability which God giueth, that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom bee praise and dominion for euer and euer. Amen.

12 Beloued, thinke it not strange concerning the fiery tryall, which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened vnto you.

13 But reioyce, in as much as ye are partakers of Christs sufferings, that when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding ioy.

14 If ye be reproached for the Name of Christ, happy are ye, for the Spirit of glory and of God resteth vpon you: on their part he is euill spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

15 But

C H A P. V.

15 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or as a thief, or as an euill doer, or as a busibody in other mens matters.

16 Yet if any man suffer as a Christian let him not be ashamed, but let him glorie God on this behalfe

17 For the time is come & iudgement must begin at the house of God: & if it first begin at vs, what shall the end be of them that obey not the Gospell of God?

18 And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the vagodly and the sinner appeare?

19 Wherefore, let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit the keeping of their soules to him in well doing, as unto a faithfull recreator.

C H A P. V.

1 He exhorteth the Elders to feed their flockes, & the younger to obey: 9 To resist the devill.

T He Elders w^e are among you I exhort; who am also an Elder, & a witnes of the sufferings of Christ and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed.

2 Feed the flocke of God which is among you, taking the oueright thereof, not by constraint, but willingly: not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind:

3 Neiher as being lords ouer Gods heritage, but being entamples to the flocke.

4 And when the chiefe thepheard shall appeare, ye shall receive a crowne of glory that fadeth not away.

5 Likewise ye younger submit your selues unto the elder: yea, all of you be subiect one to another, and be clothed with humility: for God resisteth the proud, and giueth grace to the humble.

6 Humble your selues therefore vnder the mighty hand of God that he may exalt you in due time,

7 Casting all your care vpon him, for he careth for you.

8 Be sober, be vigilant: because your aduersary the devill, as a roaring lyon walketh about, seeking whom he may deuoure.

9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethen that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace, who hath called vs into his eternall glory by Christ Iesus, after that ye haue suffered a while, make you perfect, establish strengthen, settle you.

II. P E T E R.

11 To him be glory and dominion for ever and
ever, Amen.

12 By Siluanus a faithfull brother vnto you, (as I
supposed) I have written briefly, exhorting & testifying,
y this is the true grace of God wherein ye stand.

13 The Church that is at Babylon elected together
with you, saluteth you, and so doth Marcus my son.

14 Greet ye one another with a kisse of charity:
Peace be with you all that are in Christ Iesus, Amen.

¶ The second Epistle generall of Peter,

C H A P. I.

1 He confirmeth them, 5 and exhorteth them to
make their calling sure.



Simon Peter a servant and an Apostle of
Iesus Christ to them that haue obtained
like precious faith with vs, through
the righteousnesses of God and our Sa-
uer Iesus Christ,

2 Grace & peace be multiplied vnto you, through
the knowledge of God, and of Iesvs our Lord,

3 According as his diuine power hath giuen vs
to vs all things that pertaine vnto life and godlines,
through the knowledge of him that hath called vs
to glory and vertue.

4 Whereby are given vnto vs exceeding great
and precious promises, that by these ye might be par-
takers of the diuine nature, haing escaped the cor-
ruption that is in the world through lust.

5 And besides this giuing all diligence, add to
your faith, vertue, and to vertue, knowledge,

6 And to knowledge, temperance, and to tempe-
rance, patience, and to patience, godlinesse,

7 And to godlinesse, brotherly kindnesse, and to
brotherly kindnesse, charity.

8 For if these things be in you, and abound, they
make you that ye shal neither be barren, nor unfruit-
full in the knowledge of our Lord Iesus Christ.

9 But he that lacketh these things, is blind, and
cannot see farre off, and hath forgotten that he was
purged from his old sinnes.

10 Wherfore, the rather, brethren, give diligence
to make your calling and election sure: for if ye doe
these things, ye shall never fall,

11 For

C H A P. II.

11 For so an entrance shall be ministred vnto you abundantly, into the euerlasting kingdome of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ.

12 Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you alwayes in remembrance of these things, though yee know them and be established in the present truth.

13 Yea, I thinke it meete, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stirre you vp, by putting you in remembrance:

14 Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, euен as our Lord Iesus Christ hath shewed me.

15 Moreouer, I will endeavour, that you may be able after my decease, to haue these things alwayes in remembrance.

16 For we haue not followed cunningly, devised fables when wee made knowne vnto you the power and comming of our Lord Iesus Christ, but were eyewitnesse of his Maiestie.

17 For he received from God the Father, honor, and glory, when there came such a voyce to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Sonne in whom I am well pleased.

18 And this voyce which came from heauen, wee heard when we were with him in the holv mount.

19 We haue also a more sure word of prophecie, whereunto yee doe well that ye take heed, as vnto a light that shineth in a darke place, vntill the day dawne, and the day starre arise in your hearts:

20 Knowing this first, that no prophecie of the Scripture is of any priuate interpretation:

21 For the prophecie came not in olde time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moued by the holy Ghost.

C H A P. II.

1 He foretelleth thos of false teachers.

Bvt there were falseprophets also among the peple, euен as there shall be false teachers among you, who priuily shall bring in damnable heresies, euен denying the Lord that bought them, and bring vpon themselves swift destruction.

2 And many shall follow their pernicious wayes, by reason of whom the way of truel shall be coul] spoken of;

II. PETER.

3 And through covetousnesse shall they with fained words, make merchandize of you, whose judgement now of a long time linge[n]geth not, & their damnation flumbreth not.

4 For if God spared not the Angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and deliuerte[n] them into chaines of darknes, to be referred vnto iudgement:

5 And spared not the old world, but saued Noah, the eight person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood vpon the world of the vngodly:

6 And tairning the cities of Sodome and Gomor[gha] into ashes, condemned them with an overthrow, making the an ensample vnto those that after should liue vngodly:

7 And deliuered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conuersation of the wicked:

8 (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing & hearing, vexed his righteous soule from day to day, with their vnlawfull deeds.)

9 The Lord knoweth how to deliuere the godly out of temptacions, and to reserue the vniust vnto the day of iudgement to be punished:

10 But chiefly them that walke after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise gouernment. For sumptuous are they; selfewilled: they are not afraid to speake euill of dignities:

11 Whereas Angels which are greater in power and might bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord.

12 But these as naturall bruite beasts made to bee taken and destroyed, speake euill of the things that they understand not, and shall vtterly perish in their owne corruption,

13 And shal receive the reward of vngentlemanes, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time: spots they are & blemishes, sporting themselves with their owne deceiuings, while they feast with you:

14 Hauing eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sinne, beguiling vnstable soules; an heart they haue exercised, with covetous practises: cursed children:

15 Which haue forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam *she sonne of Bosor*, who loued the wages of vngentlemanes,

16 But

C H A P. III.

16 But was rebuked for his iniqutiy : the dumbe
asse speaking with mans voyce, forbade the madnesse
of the Prophet.

17 These are wels without water, clouds that are
caried with a tempest, to whom the mist of darke-
nesse is referred for euer.

18 For when they speake great swelling words of
vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh,
through much wantonnesse, those that were cleane
escaped from them who liue in errore.

19 While they promise them liberty, they them-
selves are the seruants of corruption : for of whom
aman is overcome, of the same is hee brought in
bondage.

20 For if after they haue escaped the pollutions of
theworld, through the knowledge of the Lord and
Saviour Iesus Christ, they are againe intangled there-
in, and ouercome, the later end is worse with them
then the beginning.

21 For it had beeene better for them not to haue
knowne the way of righteousness, then after they
haue knowne it to turne from the holy comande-
ment delivered vnto them.

22 But it is happened vnto them according to the
true prouerbe : The dog is turned to his owne vo-
mite againe, and the sow that was washed, to her
wallowing in the mire.

C H A P. III.

The certaintie of Christ's coming to iudgement.

¶ His second Epistle (behold) I now write vnto
you, in both which I stirre vp your pure minds
by way of remembraunce:

3 That ye may bee mindfull of the words which
were spoken before by the holy Prophets, and of the
commandement of vs the Apostles of the Lord and
Saviour:

3 Knowing this first, that there shall come in the
last dayes, scotlers, walking after their owne lusts.

4 And saying, Where is the promis of his coming?
For since the fathers fell asleepe, all things continue
as they were from the beginning of the creation.

5 For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by
the word of God the heauens were of old, and the
earth standing out of the water, and in the water.

II. P E T E R.

6 Whereby the world that then was, being o-
uerflowed with water, perished.

7 But the heauens and the earth which are now,
by the same word are kept in store, reserued vnto fire
against the day of iudgement, and perdition of vs
godly men.

8 But (beloued) be not ignorant of this one thing,
that one day is with the Lord as a thousand yeeres,
and a thousand yeeres as one day.

9 The Lord is not slacke concerning his promise,
(as some men count slacknesse) but is long suffering
to vs ward, not willing that any shoulde perish, but
that all shoulde come to repentance.

10 But the day of the Lord will come as a thief
in the night, in the which the heauens shall passe
away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt
with fervent heate, the earth also and the works that
are therein shall be burnt vp.

11 Seeing then that all these things shall bee di-
solued, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all
holie conuinciation and godlinesse.

12 Looking for, and hasting vnto the comming of
the day of God, wherein the heauens being on fire
shall bee dissolved, and the elements shall melt with
fervent heate?

13 Neare thelesse wee, according to his promise,
ooke for new heauens, and a new earth, wherein
dwelleth righteousnesse.

14 Wherefore (beloued) seeing that ye looke for
such things, bee diligent, that ye may be found of
him in peace, without spot, and blamelesse.

15 And account that the long suffering of the Lord
is saluation, euen as our beloued brother Paul also,
according to the wisedome given vnto him, hath
written vnto you.

16 As also in all his Epistles, speaking in them of
these things, in which are some things hard to be un-
derstood, whiche they that are vnlearned and vna-
stable wreke, as they doe also the other Scriptures vnto
their owne destruction.

17 Ye therefore, beloued, seeing yee know these
things before: , beware lest yee also being led away
with the errorre of the wicked, fall from your owne
stedfastnesse,

C H A P. I.

18 But grow in grace , and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Iesus Christ ; to him be glory both now and for ever. Amen.

¶ The first Epistle generall of Iohn.

C H A P. I.

1 He describeth the person of Christ, 2 in whom is eternall life. 3 A communion with God.

 That which was from the beginning, which we haue heard, which we haue seene with our eyes , which wee haue looked vpon, and our hands haue han- dled of the word of life :

2 (For the life was manifested , and we haue seene it , and beare witnesse, and shew vnto you that eternall life which was with the Father, and was manifested vnto vs ,)

3 That which wee haue seene and heard, declare we vnto you , that ye also may haue fellowship with vs , and truely oþr fellowship is with the Father, and with his Sonne Iesus Christ.

4 And these things write we vnto you , that your joy may be full.

5 This then is the message which we haue heard of him, and declare vnto you , that God is light, and in him is no darknesse at all.

6 If wee say that we haue fellowship with him, and walke in darknesse, we lie, and doe not the truth:

7 But if we walke in the light , as hee is in the light, we haue fellowship one with another, and the blood of Iesus Christ , his Sonne cleanseth vs from all sinne.

8 If we say that we haue no sinne, we deceiuie our selues, and the truth is not in vs .

9 If wee confesse our sinnes, hee is faithfull and iust to forgiue vs our sinnes , and to cleanse vs from all vngighteousnesse.

10 If wee say that wee haue not sinned , we make him a lier, and his word is not in vs .

C H A P. II.

3 To know God is to keepe his Commandements.

MY little children, these things I write vnto you that ye sin not. And if any man sin, we haue an Advocate with the Father, Iesus Christ y righteou-

I. I O H N.

2 And he is the propitiation for our sins: and not
for ours only, but also for the sins of the whole world.

3 And hereby wee doe know that we know him,
if we keepe his Commandements.

4 He that faith, I know him, and keepeth not his
Commandements, is a liar, & the trath is not in him.

5 But whoso keepeth his word, in him verely is
the loue of God perfected: hereby know we that we
are in him.

6 He that faith he abideth in him, ought him selfe
also so to walke, euen as he walked.

7 Brethren, I write no new commandement vnto
you, but an old commandement which ye had from
the beginning: the old commandement is the word
which ye haue heard from the beginning.

8 Againe a new commandement I write vnto you,
which thing is true in him and in you: because the
darkenesse is past, and the true light now shineth.

9 He that faith he is in the light, and hateth his
brother, is in darkenesse euen vntill now.

10 He that loueth his brother, abideth in the light,
and there is none occasion of stumbling in him.

11 But he that hateth his brother, is in darkenesse,
and walketh in darkenesse, & knoweth not whither he
goeth, because that darkenesse hath blinded his eyes.

12 I write vnto you, little children, because your
sinnes are forgiuen you for his Names sake.

13 I write vnto you, fathers, because yee haue
knowne him that is from the beginning. I write vnto
you, young men, because yee haue overcome the
wicked one. I write vnto you, little children, be-
cause yee haue knowne the Father.

14 I haue written vnto you, fathers, because yet
haue knownen him that is from the beginning. I haue
written vnto you, young men, because yee are strong,
and the word of God abideth in you, and yee haue
overcome the wicked one.

15 Loue not the world, neither the things that are
in the world. If any man loue the world, the loue of
the Father is not in him.

16 For all that is in the world, the lust of the
fleish, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not
of the Father, but is of the world.

17 And the world passeth away, and the last there-
of,

C H A P. I I I.

¶ but he y doth the will of God, abideth for ever.

18 Little children, it is the last time : and as yee have heard that Antichrist shall come, even now are there many Antichrists, whereby we know that it is the last time.

19 They went out from vs, but they were not of vs: for if they had bee of vs, they would no doubt haue continued with vs: but *they wens ou* that they might be made manifest, that they were not all of vs.

20 But ye haue an vniōn from the holy One, and ye know all things.

21 I haue not wrirten unto you, because ye know not the trueth: but because yett know it, and that no lie is of the truth.

22 Who is a liar, but he that denieth that Iesus is the Christ? He is Antichrist, that denieth the Father and the Sonne.

23 Whosoever denieth the Sonne, that same hath not the Father: *but he shas acknowledgēsh the Sonne, bath the Father also.*

24 Let that therefore abide in you, which ye haue heard from the beginning: if that which yee haue heard from the beginning shall remaine in you, ye also shall continue in the Sonne, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promise that he hath promised vs, *euen* eternall life.

26 These things haue I written vnto you concerning them that seduce you.

27 But the anointing which yee haue received of him, abideth in you: and yee need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is trueth, and is no lie: and euen as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in him.

28 And now, little children abide in him, that when he shall appeare, we may haue confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his comming.

29 If ye know that hee is righteous, ye know that every one which doth righteoues, is borne of him.

C H A P. I I I.

God manifesteth his loue in making vs his Sonnes.
Behold what manner of loue the Father hath bestowed vpon vs, that wee shal bee called the sonnes of God: therefore the world knoweth vs not, because it knew him not.

I. I O H N.

2 Beloued, now are wee the sonnes of God, and it doth not yet appeare what wee shall be : but we know that when we shall appeare , wee shall be like him : for we shall see him as he is.

3 And euery man that hath this hope in him purifieth himselfe, euen as he is pure.

4 Whosoever committeth sinne transgresseth also the Law: for sinne is the transgression of the Law.

5 And yee know that hee was manifested to take away our sinnes, and in him is no sinne.

6 Whosoever abideth in him, sinneth not: whosoever sinneth, hath not seen him, neither knowne him.

7 Little children, Let no man deceive you : he that doth righteousnesse, is righteous, euen as hee is righteous.

8 Hee that committeth sinne, is of the devill : for the devill sinneth from the beginning : for this purpose the Son of God was manifested , that he might destroy the workes of the devill.

9 Whosoever is borne of God , doeth not commit sinne : for his seed remaineth in him, and hee cannot sinne, because he is borne of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devill ? whosoever doth not righteousnesse, is not of God, neither he that loueth not his brother .

11 For this is the message that yee heard from the beginning, that we should loue one another.

12 Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one ; and slew his brother : and whetfore slew he him ? because his owne workes were evill, and his brothers righteous.

13 Maruell not my brethren, if the world hate you,

14 We know that we haue passed from death unto life, because we loue the brethren : he that loueth not his brother abideth in death.

15 Whosoever hateth his brother is a murtherer, and ye know that no murtherer hath eternall life abiding in him.

16 Hereby perceine wee the loue of God, because he laid downe his life for vs, and wee ought to lay downe our liues for the brethren.

17 But whoso hath this worlds good, and seeth his brother hath need, & shutteth vp his bowels of com-

C H A P . I I I .

compassion from him ; how dwelleth the love of God in him ?

18 My little children , let vs not loue in word , neither in tongue , but in deed , and in truth .

19 And hereby we know that we are of the truthe , and shall attirre our hearts before him .

20 For if our heart condemne vs , God is greater then our heart , and knoweth all things .

21 Beloued , if our heart condemne vs not , then haue we confidence towards God .

22 And whatsoeuer wee aske , wee receive of him , because we keepe his commandement and doe those things that are pleasing in his sight .

23 And this is his commandement , that we should beleeue on the Name of his Sonne Iesus Christ , and loue one another , as he gaue vs commandement .

24 And he that keepeth his commandements , dwelleth in him , & he in him : & hereby we know that he abideth in vs , by the Spirit which he hath ginen vs .

C H A P . I I I I .

1 He warueth them not to beleeue all teachers , but so try them by the rules of the Catholske faith .

B eloved , beleeue not euery spirit , but try the spirits whether they are of God : because many false prophets are gone out into the world .

2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God : every spirit that confesseth that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh , is of God .

3 And euery spirit that confesseth not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh , is not of God : and this is that spirit of Antichrist , whereof you haue heard , y it should come , & euen now already is it in the world .

4 Ye are of God , little children , and haue ouercome them : because greater is he that is in you , then he that is in the world .

5 They are of the world : therefore speake they of the world , and the world heareth them .

6 We are of God : he that knoweth God , heareth vs : hee that is not of God , heareth not vs : hereby know we the spirit of truthe , & the spirit of error .

7 Beloued , let vs loue one another : for loue is of God : and euery one that loueth is borne of God , & knoweth God .

8 He that loueth not , knoweth not God , for God is loue .

I. I O H N.

9 In this was manifested the loue of God toward vs, because that God sent his onely begotten Sonne into the world, that we might live through him.

10 Herein is loue, not that we loued God, but that he loued vs, and sent his sonne to be the propitiation for our sinnes.

11 Beloued, if God so loued vs, we ought also to loue one another.

12 No man hath seene God at any time. If we loue one another God dwelleth in vs, and his loue is perfected in vs.

13 Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in vs, because he hath giuen vs of his Spirit.

14 And we haue seene, and doe testifie, that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world.

15 Whosoeuer shall confesse that Jesus is the Sonne of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God.

16 And wee haue knowne and beleued the loue that God hath to vs. God is loue, and he that dwelleth in loue, dwelleth in God, and God in him.

17 Herein is our loue made perfect, that we may haue boldnesse in the day of iudgement, because as he is, so are we in this world.

18 There is no feare in loue: but perfect loue casteth out feare, because feare hath torment; he that feareth is not made perfect in loue.

19 We loue him: because he first loued vs.

20 If any man say, I loue God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar. For he that loueth not his brother whom he hath seene, how can he loue God whom he hath not seene?

21 And this commandement haue we from him, that he who loueth God, loue his brother also.

C H A P. V.

1 He that loueth God loueth his children, and keepeth his Commandements.

W Hosoeuer beleeveth that Jesus is the Christ, is borne of God: and every one that loueth him that begat, loueth him also that is begotten of him.

2 By this wee know that wee loue the children of God, when we loue God, and keepe his Commandements.

3 For this is the loue of God, that we keepe his Commandements, and his Commandements are not grieuous.

4 For

C H A P. V.

4 For whatsoeuer is borne of God, ouercommeth the world, and this is the victory that ouercommeth the world, euen our faith.

5 Who is he that ouercommeth the world, but he that belieueth that Iesus is the Sonne of God?

6 This is he that came by water and blood, euen Iesus Christ, not by water onely, but by water and blood: and it is the Spirit that beareth witnesse, because the Spirit is trueth.

7 For there are three that beare record in heauen, the Father, the Word, and the holy Ghost: and these three are one.

8 And there are three that beare witnesse in earth, the Spirit, and the Water, and the blood, and these three agree in one.

9 If we receive the witnesse of men, the witnesse of God is greater: for this is the witnesse of God, which he hath testisid of his Sonne.

10 He that belieueth on the Son of God, hath the witnesse in himselfe: hee that belieueth not God hath made him a liar, because he believeth not the record that God gane of his Sonne.

11 And this is the record, that God hath ginen to vs eternall life, and this life is in his Sonne.

12 He that hath the Sonne, hath life, and he that hath not the Sonne, hath not life.

13 These things haue I written vnto you that belieue on the Name of the Sonne of God, that ye may know that ye haue eternall life, and that ye may belieue on the Name of the Sonne of God.

14 And this is the confidence that wee haue in him, that if we aske any thing according to his will, he heareth vs.

15 And if we know that he heare vs, whatsoeuer we aske, we know that we haue the petitions that we desired of him.

16 If any man see his brother sinne a sin which is not vnto death, he shall aske, & he shall giue him life for them that sinne not vnto death. There is a sinne vnto death: I do not say that he shall pray for it.

17 All vnrighteousnesse is sin, and there is a sinne not vnto death.

18 We know that whosoever is borne of God sinneth not: but he that is begotten of God, keepeth his commandments.

II. I O H N.

himselfe, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

19 And wee know that wee are of God, and the whole world lyeth in wickednesse.

20 And we know that the Sonne of God is come, and hath giuen vs an vnderstanding that we may know him that is true : and wee are in him that is true, *even* in his Sonne Iesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternall life.

21 Little children, keepe your selues from Ideoles, Amen.

¶ The second Epistle of Iohn.

Exhortation to persuere in Christian loue and beliue,
8 lest they loose the reward of their profession.

HE Elder vnto the elect Lady and her children, whom I loue in the truthe: & not I onely, but also all they that have knownen the truthe :

2 For the truthe sake which dwelleth in vs, and shall be with vs for ever :

3 Grace be with you, mercy and peace, from God the Father, and from the Lord Iesus Christ, the Son of the Father in truthe and loue.

4 I reioyced greatly, that I found of thy children walking in truthe, as wee haue receiuied a commandement from the Father.

5 And now I beseech thee Lady, not as though I wrote a new commandement vnto thee: but y which we had frō the beginning, that we loue one another.

6 And this is loue, that we walke after his commandements. This is the commandement, that as ye haue heard frō the beginning, ye shoulde walke in it.

7 For many deceiuers are entred into the world, who confesse not that Iesus Christ is come in the flesh, This is a deceiver and an Antichrist.

8 Looke to your selues, that wee loose not those things which we haue wrought, but that we receive a full reward.

9 Whosoeuer transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God: he that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Sonne.

10 If there come any vnto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed.

11 For

III. I O H N.

11 For he that biddeth him God speed, is partaker
of his euill deeds.

12 Having many things to write vnto you, I
would not write with paper and inke, but I trust to
come vnto you, and speake face to face, that our ioy
may be full.

13 The children of thy elect sister greet thee, Amen.

¶ The third Epistle of Iohn.

*Gaius commended for piety, 5 and hospitality, 7 to
true preachers; 9 Diotrephes dispraised for ambition.
He Elders unto the welbeloued Gaius,
whom I loue in the truth:*

1 Beloved, I wish abone all things
that thou mayest prosper, and bee in
health, euen as thy soule prospereth.

2 For I rejoyced greatly when the brethren came
and testified of the truth that is in thee, euen as thou
walkest in the truth.

3 I haue no greater ioy, then to heare that my
children walke in truth.

4 Beloved, thou doft faithfully whatsoeuer thou
doest to the brethren, and to strangers:

5 Which haue borne witnesse of thy charity be-
fore the Church: who if thou bring forward on their
journey after a godly sort, then shalt doe well:

6 Because that for his Names sake they went forth,
taking nothing of the Gentiles.

7 We therefore ought to receive such that wee
might be fellow helpers to the truth.

8 I wrote vnto the Church, but Diotrephes who
loneth to haue the preeminence among them, recei-
veth vs not.

9 Wherefore if I come, I will remember his
doeds which he doth, prating against vs with mali-
cious words: and not content therewith, neither
doeth hee himselfe receive the brethren, and for-
biddeth them that would, and casteth them out of
the Church.

10 Beloved, follow not that which is euill, but
that which is good. Hee that doth good is of God: but he that doth euill, hath not seene God.

11 Demetrius hath good report of all men, and
of the truthe it selfe: yea, and we also beate record
and .

I V D E.

and yee know that our record is true.

13 I had many things to write, but I will not
with ynde and pena write vnto thee.

14 But I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we shall
speake face to face. Peace bee to thee. Our friends
salute thee. Greet the friends by name.

The generall Epistle of Iude.

2 An exhortation to constancie in faith. 13 Horrible
punishments prepared for false teachers.

Iude the seruant of Iesus Christ, and brother
of Iames, to them that are sanctified
by God the Father, and preserved in Ies-
sus Christ, and called.

2 Mercy vnto you, and peace, and loue be mul-
tiplied.

3 Beloued, when I gaue all diligence to write vnto
you of the common saluation: it was needfull for
me to write vnto you, and exhort you that ye should
earnestly contend for the faith which was once deli-
vered vnto the Saints.

4 For there are certaine men crept in vnawares,
who were before of old ordained to this condemna-
tion, vngodly men, turning the grace of our God in-
to lasciuionsnesse, and denying the onely Lord God,
and our Lord Iesus Christ.

5 I will therefore put you in remembrance; though
ye once knew this, how that the Lord hauing
saued the people out of the land of Egypt, afterward
destroyed them that beleevned not.

6 And the Angels which kept not their first estate,
but left their owne habitation, he hath reserved
in everlasting chaines vnder darkenesse, vnto the
judgement of the great day.

7 Even as Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities
about them, in like maner giuing themselues ouer to
fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth
for an example, suffering of vengeance of eternall fire.

8 Likewise also these filthie dreamers defile the
flesh, despise dominion, and speake euill of dignities.

9 Yet Michael the Archangel, when contending
with the devill, he disputed about the body of Moses,
durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but
said, The Lord rebuke thee;

I V D E.

10 But these speake euill of those things, whiche
they know not: but what they know naturally, as
bruit beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves,

11 Woe vnto them, for they haue gone in the way
of Cain, and ranne greedily after the error of Bal-
am for reward, & perished in sygainesaying of Core.

12 These are spots in your feasts of charitie, when
they feast with you, feeding themselues without
feare: clouds they are without water, carried about
of windes, trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit,
twice dead, plucked vp by the rootes:

13 Raging waues of the Sea, foming out their
owne shaine, wandring Starres, to whom is reserved
the blackenesse of darkenesse for euer.

14 And Enoch the seuenth from Adam, pro-
phesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord commeth,
with ten thousands of his Saints,

15 To execute iudgement vpon all, and to con-
uince all that are vngodly among them of all their
vngodly deeds, which they haue vngodly commit-
ted, and of all their hard speeches which vngodly
sinners haue spoken against him.

16 These are murmurers, complainers, walking
after their own lusts, and their mouth speaketh great
swelling words, hauing mens persons in admiration
because of aduantage.

17 But beloved, remember yee the words which
were spoken before of the Apostles of our Lord Ie-
sus Christ:

18 How that they told you there shoulde be mock-
ers in the last time, who shoulde walke after their
owne vngodly lusts.

19 These be they who separate themselves, sensu-
all, hauing not the Spirit.

20 But yee beloved, building vp your selues on
your most holy faith, praying in the holy Ghost.

21 Keepe your selues in the loue of God, looking
for the mercy of our Lord Iesus Christ vnto eternall
life.

22 And of some haue compassion, making a dif-
ference:

23 And others saue with feare, pulling them out of
the fire: hating eu'en the garment spotted by the flesh.

24 Now vnto him that is able to keepe you from
falling,

REVELATION.

falling, and to present you faultlesse before the presence of his glory with exceeding joy.

25 To the only wise God our Saviour, be glory and majesty, dominion and power, now and euer, Amen.

The Reuelation of S. Iohn *the Diumt.*

C H A P. I.

4 He writeth to the seven Churches of Asia. 7 The comming of Christ 24 His power and Majestie.

TH E Reuelation of Iesus Christ, which G O D gave vnto him, to shew vnto his seruants things which must thorly come to passe : and he sent and signified i. by his Angel, vnto his seruant Iohn ;

2 Who bare record of the word of God, & of the testimonie of Iesus Christ, & of all things vpon he law.

3 Blessed is hee that readeth, and they that heare the words of this prophesie, and keepe those things which are written therein : for the time is at hand,

4 John, to the seven Churches in Asia ; Grace bee vnto you, and peace , from him which is, and which was, and which is to come, and from the seuen spiris which are before his Throne :

5 And from Iesus Christ, who is the faithfull witness, & the first begotten of the dead, and the Prince of the Kings of the earth : vnto him that loned vs, and washed vs from our sinnes in his owne blood,

6 And hath made vs Kings and Priests vnto God and his Father : to him be glory and dominion for euer and euer, Amen.

7 Behold hee commeth with clouds , and every eye shall see him , and they also which pierced him : and all kinreds of the earth shall waile because of him : euен so. Amen.

8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty.

9 I Iohn , who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation , and in the kingdome and patience of Iesus Christ, was in the Isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimonie of Iesus Christ,

10 I was in the Spirit on the Lords day , and heard

C H A P. II.

1 And behind me a great voyce as of a trumper,
2 Saying, I am Alpha and Omega, the first and
the last, and what thou spest write in a booke, and
send it vnto the seuen Churches which are in Asia,
vnto Ephesus, and vnto Smyrna, and vnto Perga-
num, and vnto Thyatira, and vnto Sardis, and Phi-
ladelphie, and vnto Laodicea.

3 And I turned to see the voyee that spake with
me. And being turned I saw seuen golden Can-
dlesticke.

4 And in the midst of the seuen Candlestickes,
was like vnto the Sonne of man, clothed with a ga-
ment downe to the foot, and girt about the paps
with a golden girdle.

5 His heade, and his haires were white like wooll,
as white as snow, & his eyes were as a flame of fire.

6 And his feet like vnto fine braffe, as if they
burned in a furnace: and his voyee as the sound of
many waters.

7 And hee had in his right hand seuen starres,
and out of his mouth went a sharpe two edged
sword: and his countenance was as the Sunne shiueth
in his strenght.

8 And when I saw him, I fell at his feet as dead:
and he laid his right hand vpon me, saying vnto me,
feare not, I am the first and the last.

9 I am he that lieth, and was dead: and behold,
I am aliue for euermore, Amen, and have the keyes
of hell, and of death.

10 Write the things which thou hast seene, & the
things w^rare, & the things which shall be hereafter.

11 The mystery of the seuen Starres which thou
sawest in my right hand, and the seuen golden Can-
dlestickes. The seuen Starres are the Angels of the
seuen Churches: and the seuen Candlestickes which
thou sawest, are the seuen Churches.

C H A P. II.

1 What is to be written to the Angels of the seuen
Churches.

V Nto the Angel of the Church of Ephesus, write
2 These things saith hee that holdeth the seuen
starres in his right hand, who walketh in the midst
of the seuen golden Candlestickes:

3 I knew thy workes, and thy labour, and thy
patience,

R E V E L A T I O N .

patience, and how thou canst not beare them whiche
are euill, and thou haft tried them which say they are
Apostles, and are not, and haft found them liars.

3 And haft borne, and haft patience, and for my
Names sake haft laboured, and haft not fainted.

4 Neuerthelesse, I have *somewhaſes* against thee,
Because thou haſt left thy ſirſt loue.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fal-
len, and repente, and doe the firſt workes, or else I will
come vnto thee quickly, and will remoue thy Ca-
dleſtiche out of his place, except thou repente.

6 But this thou haſt, that thou hateſt the deeds of
the Nicolaitans, which I alſo hate.

7 Hee that hath an eare, let him heare what the
Spirit faith vnto the Churches : To him that ouer-
commeth will I giue to eat of the tree of life, whiche
is in the midſt of the Paradise of God.

8 And vnto the Angel of the Church in Smyrna,
write, These things faith the firſt and the laſt, which
was dead, and is aliue,

9 I know thy workes, and tribulation, and po-
vertie, but thou art rich, and I know the blaſphemie
of them which say they are lewes and are not, but are
in the Synagogue of Satan.

10 Fear none of those things which thou ſhall
ſuffer : behold, the deuill ſhall caſt ſome of you into
prison, that ye may be tried, and ye thall haue tribu-
lation ten dayes. be thou faithfull vnto death, and I
will giue thee a crowne of life.

11 Hee that hath an eare, let him heare what the
Spirit faith vnto the Churches. Hee that ouercom-
meth ſhall not be hurt of the ſecond death.

12 And to the Angel of the Church in Pergamos,
write, These things faith hee, which hath the ſharpe
ſword with two edges :

13 I know thy workes, and where thou dwelleſt,
~~even~~ where Satans ſeate is, and thou holdeſt fast my
Name, and haſt not denied my faith, ~~even~~ in thoſe
dayes, wherein Antipas ~~was~~ my faithfull Martyr, who
was ſlaine among you, where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I hate a few things againſt thee, because
thou haſt there them that hold the doctrine of Ba-
laam, who taught Balac to caſt a ſtumbling blocke
before the children of Israel, to eate things ſacrificed

CHAP. II.

vnto idoles, and to commit fornication.

15 So haft thou also them that hold the doctrine
of the Nicolaitans, which thing I hate.

16 Repent, or else I will come vnto thee quickly, &
will fight against them with the sword of my mouth

17 Hee that hath an eare, let him heare what the
Spirit saith vnto the Churches. To him that ouer-
commeth will I give to eate of the hidden Manna,
and will give him a white stome, and in the stome a
new name written, which no man knoweth, sauing
he that receiueth it.

18 And vnto the Angel of the Church in Thyati-
ra, write, These things saith the Sonne of God, who
hath his eyes like vnto a flame of fire, and his teete
like fine braffe :

19 I know thy workes, and charity, and seruice,
and faith, and thy patience, and thy workes, and the
last to be more then the first.

20 Notwithstanding I haue a few things against
thee, because thou suffereſt that woman Iczabel,
which calleth herſelfe a prophetesse to preach and to
ſeduce my ſervants to commit fornication, and to
eat things ſacrificed to idoles.

21 And I gaue her ſpace to repent of her fornicati-
on, and ſhe repented not.

22 Behold, I will caſt her into a bed, and them
that commit adultery with her, into great tribulati-
on, except they repente of their deedes.

23 And I will kill her children with death, and
all the Churches ſhall know that I am hee which
ſearcheth the reines and hearts : and I will giue vnto
every one of you according to your workes.

24 But vnto you I ſay, and vnto the rest in Thyati-
ra, as many as haue not this doctrine, and which
haue not knownen the depths of Satan, as they ſpeakē,
I will put vpon you none other burthen :

25 But that which yee haue already, hold fast till
I come.

26 And hee that ouercommeth, and keepeth my
workes vnto the end, to him will I giue power ouer
the nations :

27 (And hee ſhall rule them with a rod of yron :
as the vefels of a potter that they be broken to ſhi-
uers :) euē as I received of my Father,

28 And

R E V E L A T I O N .

28 And I will give him the morning starre.

29 He that hath an eare , let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

C H A P . III .

3 *The Angel of the Church of Sardis reprooued.*

And vnto ^{the} Angel of ^{the} Church in Sardis, write These things saith he that hath ^{the} seuen spirits of God, and the seuen staires ; I know thy workes, that thou hast a name that thou liuest, and art dead.

3 Bewatchfull, and strengthen the things which remaine , that are ready to die: for I haue not found thy workes perfect before God.

3 Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard , and hold fast and repent If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thiefe, and thou shalt not know what houre I will come vpon thee.

4 Thou hast a few names even in Sardis, which haue not defiled their garments, and they shall walke with me in white : for they are worthy.

5 He that ouercommeth , the same shall be clothed in white rayment , and I will not blot out his name out of the booke of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his Angels.

6 He that hath an eare , let him heare what the Spirit saith vnto the Churches.

7 And to the Angel of the Church in Philadelphia, write, These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath ^{the} key of Dauid, he that openeth, and no man shutteth, & shutteth, & no man openeth:

8 I know thy workes, behold, I haue set before thee an open doore, and no man can shut it : for thou hast a little strength , and haft kept my word, and haft not denied my Name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the Synagogue of Satan, which say they are Iewes, and are not, but doe lie : behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I haue loued thee.

10 Because thou haft kept the word of my patience, I also will keepe thee from the houre of temptation, which shall come vpon all the world , to try them that dwell vpon the earth.

11 Behold, I come quickly , hold that fast which thou haft, that no man take thy crowne,

12 Him

C H A P. III.

12 Him that overcommeth , will I make a pillar
in the Temple of my God , and he shall goe no more
out : & I will write vpon him the Name of my God ,
and the name of the citie of my God , *wh ch* is new
Iesusalem, which commeth down out of heaven from
my God : and *I will write vpon him* my new Name.

13 He that hath an eare , let him heare what the
Spirit saith vnto the Churches .

14 And vnto the Angel of the Church of the
Laodiceans, write ; These things saith the Amen, the
faithful and true witness, the beginning of the crea-
tion of God :

15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold
nor hote, I would thou wert cold or hote.

16 So then because thou art luke-warme, and nei-
ther cold nor hote, I wil spue thee out of my mouth :

17 Because thou sayest, I am rich , and increased
with goods, and haue need of nothing : and know-
est not that thou art wretched , and miserable, and
poore, and blind, and naked.

18 I counsell thee to buy of mee gold tried in the
fire, that thou mayest be rich, and white raiment, that
thou mayest be clothed , and that the shame of thy
nakednesse doe not appear , and anoint thine eyes
with eye-salve, that thou mayest see.

19 As many as I loue , I rebuke and chasten, be
zealous therefore and repent.

20 Behold, I stand at the doore and knocke: if any
man heare my voyce, and open the doore, I will come
in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.

21 To him that overcommeth , will I grant to sit
with me in my Throne, euen as I also overcame, and
am set downe with my Father in his Throne.

22 He that hath an eare , let him heare what the
Spirit saith vnto the Churches .

C H A P. IV.

1 John seeth the throne of God in heauen.

A fter this I looked , and behold, a doore was o-
pened in heauen : and the first voyce which I
heard, was as it were of a trumpet, talking with me :
which said , C me vp hither , and I will shew thee
things which must be hereafter.

2 And immediately I was in the Spirit: & behold, a
Throne was set in heauen, & one sat on the Throne.

3 And

R E V E L A T I O N .

3 And he that sate was to looke vpon like a Jasper, and a Sardine stone, and there was a rainbow round about the Throne, in sight like to an Emerald.

4 And round about the Throne were foure and twenty seates, and vpon the seates I saw foure and twenty Elders sitting, cloathed in white raiment, and they had on their heads crownes of gold.

5 And out of the Throne proceeded lightnings, and thunderings, and voyces, and there were seven lampes of fire burning before the Throne, which are the seven Spirits of God.

6 And before the Throne there was a sea of glasse like vnto Chrystall: and in the midst of the Throne, and round about the Throne, were foure beasts full of eyes, before and behind,

7 And the first beast was like a Lyon, and the second beast like a calfe, & the third beast had a face as a man, and the fourth beast was like a flying eagle.

8 And the foure beasts had each of them six wings about him, and they were full of eyes within, & they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holly, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come.

9 And when those beasts giue glory, and honour, and thankes to him that sate on the Throne, who liueth for euer and euer.,

10 The foure and twenty Elders fall downe before him that sate on the Throne, and worship him that liueth for euer and euer, and cast their crownes before the Throne, saying,

11 Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory, and honour, and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created.

C H A P . V .

1 The booke with seven seales: 9 not to be opened but by the Lambe slaine.

A Nd I saw in the right hand of him that sate on the Throne, a booke written within, and on the backside sealed with seven seales.

2 And I saw a strong Angel, proclaiming with a loude voyce, Who is worthy to open the booke, and to loose the seales thereof?

3 And no man in heauen nor in earth, neither vnder the earth, was able to open the booke, neither to looke theron,

4 And

C H A P . V.

4 And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open, and to reade the booke, neither to looke thereon.

5 And one of the Elders saith vnto mee, Weepe not; behold, the Lyon of the tribe of Iuda, the root of Dauid hath preuailed to open the booke, and to loose the seuen seales thereof.

6 And I beheld, and loe, in the middest of the Throne, and of the fourre beasts, and in the middest of the Elders stood a Lambe as it had beeene slaine, hauing seuen horns, and seuen eyes, which are the seuen spirits of God, sent forth into all the earth.

7 And he came, and tooke the booke out of the right hand of him that sate vpon the Throne.

8 And when hee had taken the booke, the fourre beasts, and foure and twenty Elders fell downe before the Lambe, hauing every one of them harpes, and golden vials full of odours, which are the pray-ers of Saints.

9 And they sung a new song, saying, Thou art worthy to take the booke, and to open the seales thereof: for thou wast slaine, and hast redeemed vs to God by thy blood, out of euery kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation:

10 And hast made vs vnto our God, Kings and Priests, and we shall raigne on the earth.

11 And I beheld, and I heard the voyce of many Angels round about the Throne, and the beasts and the Elders, & the number of them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands of thousands,

12 Saying with a loud voice, Worthy is the Lambe that was slain, to receiue power, & riches, & wisdome, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.

13 And ebery creature which is in heauen, and on the earth, and vnder the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I, saying, Blessing, honour, glory, and power, be vnto him that sitteth vpon the Throne, and vnto the Lambe for euer and euer.

14 And the fourre beasts said, Amen. And the fourre and twenty Elders fell downe and worshipped him that liueth for euer and euer.

C H A P . VI.

1 The opening of the seales in order, & what followed.
And

REVELATION.

¶ And I saw when the Lambē opened one of the seales, and I heard as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts, saying, Come and see.

¶ 2 And I saw, and behold, a white horse, & he that sat on him had a bow, and a crowne was giuen vnto him, and he went forth conquering, and to conquer,

¶ 3 And when hee had opened the second seale, I heard the second beast say, Come and see.

¶ 4 And there went out another horse that was red, & power was giuen to him that sat thereon, to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another, & there was giuen vnto him a great sword,

¶ 5 And when hee had opened the third seale, I heard the thrid beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and loe, a blacke horse : and hee that sat on him, had a paire of ballance in his hand.

¶ 6 And I heard a voyce in the midst of the four beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny, and see thou hurt not the oyle and the wine.

¶ 7 And when hee had opened the fourth seale, I heard the voyce of the fourth beast say, Come & see,

¶ 8 And I looked, and behold, a pale horse, and his name that sat on him was death, and hell followed with him : and power was giuen to them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, & with death & with the beasts of the earth,

¶ 9 And when he had opened the fist seale, I saw vnder the Altar the soules of them that were slaine for the word of God, and for the testimony whiche they held,

¶ 10 And they cryed with a lond voyce, saying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, doest thou not judge & avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

¶ 11 And white robes were giuen vnto everyone of them, and it was said vnto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, vntill their fellow seruants also, and their brethren that should be killed as they were, should be fulfilled.

¶ 12 And I beheld, when hee had opened the fist seale, and loe, there was a great earthquake, and the Sunne became blacke as fackcloth of haire, and the Moone became as blood.

¶ 13 And the stars of heauen fell vnto the earth, even as a figtree casteth her vnitimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind,

¶ 14 And

C H A P. VII.

14 And the heauen departed as a scroule when it is rolled together , and every mountaine and lland were mooved out of their places.

15 And \S kings of the earth, & the great men, and the rich men, & the chiefe captaines, & \S mighty men, and every bondman, & every freeman hid themselues in the dennes, and in the rockes of the mountaines.

16 And said to the mountaines and rockes , Fall on vs, and hide vs from the face of him that sitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lambe :

17 For the great day of his wrath is come, and who shall be able to stand.

C H A P. VII.

3 The seruants of God sealed. 4 The number of the tribes that were sealed.

And after these things, I saw four Angels standing on the foure corners of the earth , holding the foure winds of the earth, that \S wind should not blow on the earth, nor on the sea, nor on any tree.

3 And I saw another Angel ascending from the East , hauing the scale of the living God : and haue cryed with a loud voice to the foure Angels, to whom it was giuen to hurt the earth and the sea,

3 Saying Hurt not the earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we haue sealed the seruants of our God in their foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of them \S were sealed 3 and there were sealed an hundred and forty & foure thousand of all the tribes of the children of Israel.

5 Of \S tribe of Iuda were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Reuben were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Gad were sealed twelve thousand.

6 Of the tribe of Aser were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Nephthali were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Manasses were sealed twelve thousand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Leui were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Issachar were sealed twelve thousand.

8 Of the tribe of Zabulon were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Joseph were sealed twelve thousand. Of the tribe of Benjamin were sealed twelve thousand.

R E V E L A T I O N.

9 After this I beheld, and loe, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations and kin-
gods, and people, & tongues, stood before the throne, and before the Lambe, clothed with white robes, and
palmes in their hands:

10 And cryed with a loud voyce, saying Salvation
to our God, which sitteth vpon the Throne, and unto
the Lambe.

11 And all the Angels stood round about the
Throne, and about the Elders, and the foure beasts,
and fell before the Throne on their faces, and wor-
shipped God,

12 Saying, Amen : Blessing, and glory, and wise-
dom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and
might, be vnto our God for euer and euer, Amen.

13 And one of the Elders answered, saying unto
me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes?
and whence came they?

14 And I said vnto him, Sir, Thou knowest. And
he said to me, These are they which came out of great
tribulation, and haue washed their robes, and made
them white in the blood of the Lambe.

15 Therefore are they before the throne of God,
and serue him day and night in his Temple : and hee
that sitteth on the Throne shall dwell among them.

16 They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any
more, neither shall y Sun light on them, nor any heat.

17 For the Lambe which is in the middest of the
Throne, shal feed them, & shall lead them vnto living
fountaines of waters : and God shall wipe away all
teares from their eyes.

C H A P. VIII.

1 At the opening of the seventh seale, 2 seuen trumpets are giuen to seven Angels.

A Nd whē he had opened y seventh seale, there was
silence in heauen about y space of half an houre.

2 And I saw the seuen Angels which stood before
God, and to them were giuen seuen trumpets.

3 And another Angel came and stood at the Altar, hauing a golden censer, and there was giuen vnto
him much incense, that hee shoulde offer it with the
prayers of all Saints vpon the golden Altar which
was before the Throne.

4 And the smoke of the incense which came
with

C H A P. IX.

with the prayers of the Saints, ascended vp before God, out of the Angels hand.

5 And the Angel tooke the censer, and filled it with fire of the Altar, and cast it into the earth: and there were voyces, and thunderings, and lightnings, and an earthquake:

6 And the seven Angels which had the seuen trumpets, prepared themselves to sound.

7 The first Angel sounded, and there followed a noise, and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast vpon the earth, and the third part of trees was burnt vp, and all greene grasse was burnt vp.

8 And the second Angel sounded, and as it were a great mountaine burning with fire, was cast into the sea, and the third part of the Sea became blood.

9 And the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died, and the third part of the ships were destroyed.

10 And the third Angel sounded, and there fell a great starre from heauen, burning as it were a lampes, and it fell vpon the third part of the rivers, and vpon the fountaines of waters:

11 And the name of the starre is called Wormwood, and the third part of the waters became Wormewood, and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.

12 And the fourth Angel sounded, and the third part of the Sunne was smitten, and the third part of the Moone, and the third part of the starres, so as the third part of them was darkeued: and the day shone not for a third part of it, and the night likewise.

13 And I beheld, and heard an Angel flying throughe the midst of heauen, saying with a loud voyce, Woe, woe, woe to the inhabitors of the earth, by reason of the other voyces of the trumpet of the three Angels which are yet to sound.

C H A P. X.

1 The fifth Angel sounding, a starre falleth from heauen, to whom is given the keye of the bottomlesse pit.

A nd the fifth Angel sounded, and I saw a starre fall from heauen to the earth: and to him was given the keye of the bottomlesse pit.

2 And he opened the bottomlesse pit, and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a

R E V E L A T I O N.

great furnace, and the Sunne and the ayre were daikened, by reason of the smoake of the pit.

3 And there came out of the smoake locusts vpon the earth, and vnto them was giuen power as the Scorpions of the earth haue power.

4 And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grasse of the earth, neither any greene thing, neither any tree; but onely those men which haue not the seale of God in their foreheads.

5 And to them it was giuen that they should not kill them, but that they should bee tormented five moneths, and their torment was as the torment of a Scorpion, when he striketh a man.

6 And in those dayes shall men seeke death, and shall not finde it, and shall desire to dye, and death shall flee from them.

7 And the shapes of the locusts were like vnto horses prepared vnto battell and on their heads was as it were crownes like gold, and their faces were the faces of men.

8 And they had haire as the haire of women and their teeth were as the teeth of Lions.

9 And they had breast plates, as it were brasstones of yron, & the sound of their wings was as the sound of chariots of many horses running to battell.

10 And they had tayles like vnto Scorpions, and there were stings in their tayles, and their power was to hurt men five moneths.

11 And they had a King ouer them, which is the Angel of the bottomlesse pit, whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the Greek tongue hath his name Apollyon.

12 One woe is past, and behold there come two woes more hereafter.

13 And the fixt Angel sounded, and I heard a voyce from the foure hornes of the golden Alter which is before God,

14 Saying to the fixt Angel which had the trumpet, Loose the foure Angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.

15 And the foure Angels were loosed, which were prepared for an houre, and a day, and a moneth, and a yeare, for to slay the third part of men.

16 And the number of the army of the horsemen,
was

C H A P. X.

were two hundred thousand thousands : and I heard the number of them.

17 And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and them that sat on them, having breast-plates of fire, and of jacinet and brimstone, and the heads of the horses were as the heads of lyons, and out of their mouthes issued fire and smoake, and brimstone.

18 By these three was the third part of men killed by the fire, and by the smoake, and by the brimstone which issued out of their mouthes.

19 For their power is in their mouth, and in their tales : for their tales were like unto Serpents, and had heads, and with them they doe hurt.

20 And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues, yet repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idoles of gold and siluer, and braffie, and stone, and wood, which neither can see, nor heare, nor walke :

21 Neither repented they of their murtherers, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.

C H A P. X.

An Angel appeareth with a booke open. ¶ John is commanded to take the looke.

¶ And I saw another mighty Angel come downe from heauen, clothed with a cloud, and a rainbow was vpon his head, and his face was as it were the Sunne, and his feet as pillars of fire.

2 And he had in his hand a little booke open : and he set his right foot vpon the Sea, and his left foot on the earth,

3 And cryed with a loud voyce, as when a lyon mareth : and when he had cryed, seuen thunders uttered their voyces.

4 And when the seuen thunders had uttered their voyces, I was about to write : and I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto me, Seale vp those things which the seuen thunders uttered, & write them not.

5 And the Angel vchich I saw stand vpon the sea, and vpon the earth, lifted vp his hands to heauen,

6 And sware by him ylineth for euer & euer, who created heauen & the things ytherein are, & the earth, and the things ytherein are, & the sea, and the things which are therein, ythere should be time no longer.

R E V E L A T I O N.

7 But in the dayes of the voyce of the seventh Angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should bee finished, as hee hath declared to his seruants the Prophets.

8 And the voyce which I heard from heaven, spake vnto me againe, and said, Goe and take the little booke which is open in the hand of the Angel, which standeth vpon the sea, and vpon the earth.

9 And I went vnto the Angel, and said vnto him, Giue mee the little booke. And hee said vnto mee, Take it and eate it vp, and it shall make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth sweet as honie.

10 And I tooke the little booke out of the Angels hand, and ate it vp, and it was in my mouth sweet as honie: and as soone as I had eaten it, my belly was bitter.

11 And he said vnto me, Thou must prophesie again before many peoples, & nations, and tongues, & kings.

C H A P. XI.

12 Two witnesses prophesie. They have power to shut heaven, that it raine not. 14 The second woe is past.

13 And there was given me a reed like vnto a rod, and the Angel stooed, saying, Rise, and measure the Temple of God, and the Altar, and them that worship therein.

14 But the Court which is without the Temple, leave out, and measure it not: for it is giuen vnto the Gentiles, and the holy City shall they tread under foot forty and two moneths.

15 And I will giue power vnto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesie a thousand two hundred and threescore dayes clothed in sackecloth.

16 These are the two Olive trees, and the two candlestickes standing before the God of the earth:

17 And if any man wil hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth: & devoureth their enemies: & if any man will hurt them, he must in this maner be killed.

18 These haue power to shut heaven, that it raine not in the dayes of their prophecies: and haue power ouer waters to turne them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will.

19 And when they shall haue finished their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomlesse pit, shall make warre against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them.

20 And

C H A P. XI.

8 And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great citie, which spiritually is called Sodome, and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified.

9 And they of the people, and kindreds, & tongues, and nations, shall see their dead bodies three dayes and an halfe, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in granes.

10 And they that dwell vpon the earth, shall rejoyce ouer them, and make merry, and shall send gits one to another: because these two Prophet tormentted them that dwelt on the earth.

11 And after three dayes and an halfe the Spirit of life from God entred into them: and they stood vpon their feet, and great feare fell vpon them & lay them.

12 And they heard a great voyce from heauen, saying into thern, Come vp hither. And they ascended vp to heauen in a clond, and their enemies beheld them.

13 And by same hour was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fel, & in the earthquake were slaine of men seuen thousand, and the remnant were affrighted, & gaue glory to the God of heauen.

14 The second woe is past, and behold, the third woe commeth quickly.

15 And the feuenth Angel sounded, and there were great voyces in heauen, laying, The kingdomes of this world are become the kingdomes of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he shall reigne for ever and ever.

16 And the fourte and twenty Elders which sat before God on their seates, fell vpon their faces, and worshipped God.

17 Saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and wast, and art to come, because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.

18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should bee judged, and that thou shouldest give reward vnto thy servants the Prophets, and to the Saints, and them that feare thy Name, small and great, and shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth.

19 And the Temple of God was opened in heauen, and there was seene in his Temple, the Ark of his Testament, and there were lightnings, and voyces, and thundring, and an earthquake, and greathale.

REVELATION.

CHAP. XII.

2 A woman clothed with the Sun, travailith, & The dragon standeth ready to devour her childe.

3 And there appeared a great wonder in heauen, A woman clothed with the Sun, and the Moone vnder her feete, and vpon her head a crowne of twelue starres:

4 And shes being with childe, cryed, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivred.

5 And there appeared another wonder in heauen, and behold, a great red dragon having seuen heads, and ten hornes, and seuen crownes vpon his heads.

6 And his taile drew the third part of the starres of heauen, & did cast them to the earth, and the dragon stood before the woman w^e was ready to be delivred, for to devoure her child as soone as it was born.

7 And shee brought forth a man childe, who was to rule all nations with a rod of yron: and her child was caught vp vnto God, and to his throne.

8 And the woman fled into the wildernes, where she hath a place prepared of God, t^y they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore dayes.

9 And there was warre in heauen, Michael, and his Angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels,

10 And prevailed not, neither was their place found any more in heauen.

11 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the devill and Satan, which deceiueth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

12 And I heard a lowd voyce, saying in heauen, Now is come saluation, and strength, and the kingdome of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast downe, which accused them before our God day and night.

13 And they ouercame him by the blood of the Lambe, and by the word of their testimony, and they loued not their liues vnto the death.

14 Therefore reioyce yee heavens, and ye y dwel in them, Woe to the inhabitors of the earth, & of y^e sea: for the devill is come downe vnto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth y^e he hath but a short time.

15 And when the dragon saw that hee was cast

C H A P. XIII.

vnto the earth, hee persecuted the woman which brought forth the man childe.

14 And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might flee into the wilderness into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times and halfe a time, from the face of the serpent.

15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman: that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood.

16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed vp the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.

17 And the dragon was wrath with the woman, and went to make warre with the remnant of her seed, which keepe the commandements of God, and haue the Testimony of Iesus Christ.

C H A P. XIII.

1 The beast with many heads describ'd 11 The other beast rising out of the earth, 14 giueth power.

And I stood vpon the sand of the Sea: and saw a beast rise vp out of the sea, having seven heads and ten hornes, and vpon his hornes ten crownes, and vpon his heads the name of blasphemy.

2 And the beast which I saw was like vnto a Leopard, and his feete were as the feete of a Beare, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority.

3 And I saw one of his heads as it were mortised to death, and his deadly wound was healed, and all the world wondered after the beast.

4 And they worshipped the dragon which gave power vnto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like vnto the beast? Who is able to make warre with him.

5 And there was given vnto him a mouth, speaking great things, and blasphemies, and power was given vnto him to continue forty and two moneths.

6 And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God to blaspheme his Name, and his Tabernacle, and them that dwelt in heauen.

7 And it was given vnto him to make warre with the Saines, and to ouercome them: and power was given him ouer all kinreds, and tongues and nations.

8 And all that dwell vpon the earth, shall worship

REVELATION.

him, whose names are not written in the booke of life, of the Lamb slaine from the foundation of the world.

9 If any man haue an eare, let him heare:

10 He that leadeth into captivity shall goe into captivity: Hee that killeth with the sword, must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the Saints.

11 And I beheld another beast comming vp out of the earth, and he had two hornes like a lambe, and he spake as a dragon.

12 And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth & them that dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.

13 And he doth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come downe from heaven on the earth in the sight of men.

14 And deceiueth them that dwell on the earth, by the meanes of these miracles which he had power to doe in the sight of the beast, saying to them y dwelle on the earth, that the shalld make an image to the beast which had the wound by a sword, and did live.

15 And he had power to give life vnto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speake, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast, should be killed.

16 And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poore, free and bond, to receive a marke in their right hand, or in their foreheads.

17 And that no man might buy or sell, saue hee that had the marke or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wisedome. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man, and his number is, sixe hundred threescore and sixe.

C H A P. XIII.

1 The Lambe with his company standeth on mount Sion. 6 An Angel preacheth the Gospel.

A nd I looked, and loe, a Lambe stood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred fourtie and soure thousand, having his Fathers name written in their foreheads.

2 3 And I heard a voice from heauen, as the voice of many

C H A P. XIIII.

many waters, & as the voyce of a great thunder: and I heard the voyce of harpers, harping with their harpes.

5 And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the Elders, and no man could learne that song, but the hundred and forty and four thousand which were redeemed from the earth.

6 These are they which were not defiled with women: for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lambe whithersoever he goeth: These were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits unto God and to the Lambe.

7 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

8 And I saw another Angel flee in the middest of heaven, hauing the euerlasting Gospel, to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people,

9 Saying with a loud voyce, Feare God, and give glory to him, for the houre of his judgement is come: and worship him that made heauen and earth, and the sea and the fountaines of waters.

10 And there followed another Angel, saying, Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she made all nations drinke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.

11 And the third Angel followed them, saying, with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast & his image, and receive his marke in his forehead, or in his hand,

12 The same shal drinke of the wine of the wrath of God, which is powred out without mixture into the cup of his indignation, and hee shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy Angels, and in the presence of the Lambe:

13 And the smoake of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever. And they haue no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the marke of his name.

14 Here is the patience of the Saints: Here are they which keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Iesus.

15 And I heard a voyce from heauen, saying vnto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord, from henceforth, yea, saith the Spirit, that

they

REVELATION.

they may rest from their labours, and their works doe follow them.

14 And I looked, and behold, a white cloud, and upon the cloud one sate like unto the Sonne of man, having on his head a golden crowne, and in his hand a sharpe sickle.

15 And another Angel came out of the Temple, crying with a loud voyce to him that sate on the cloud: Thrust in thy sickle, and reape, for the time is come for thee to reape, for the haruest of the earth is ripe.

16 And he that sate on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth, and the earth was reaped.

17 And another Angel came out of the Temple which is in heauen, he also having a sharpe sickle.

18 And another Angel came out from the Altar, which had power ouer fire, and cryed with a loud cry to him that had the sharpe sickle, saying, Thrust in thy sharpe sickle, and gather the clusters of the wine of the earth, for her grapes are fully ripe.

19 And the Angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the wine of the earth, and cast it into the great winepresse of the wrath of God.

20 And the winepresse was troden without the citie, and blood came out of the winepresse, even unto the horse bridles, by the space of a thousand and sixe hundred furlongs.

C H A P. XV.

1 The seven Angels, with the seven last plagues. 7 The seuen vials full of the wrath of God.

A nd I saw another signe in heauen great and marueilous, seuen Angels having the seuen last plagues, for in them is filled vp the wrath of God.

2 And I saw as it were a sea of glasse, mingled with fire, and them that had gotten the victory ouer the beast, and ouer his image, and ouer his marke, and ouer the number of his name, stand on the Sea of glasse, having the harpes of God.

3 And they sing the Song of Moses the seruant of God, and the song of the Lambe, saying, Great and marueilous are thy workes, Lord Ged Almighty, just and true are thy wayes, thou king of Saints.

4 Who shall not feare thee, O Lord, and gloriifie thy Name? for thou only art holy: for all nations shall come and worship before thee, for thy iudgements are made manifest.

3 And

C H A P. X VI.

5 And after þ I looked, & behold þ Temple of the tabernacle of the Testimony in heauen was opened:

6 And the seuen Angels came out of the Temple, having þ seven plagues, clothed in pure and white linnen, and hauing their breasts girded w golden girdles.

7 And one of the loue beasts gaue vnto the seuen Angels, seuen golde vials, full of the wrath of God, who lieth for ever and ever.

8 And the Temple was filled with smoake from the glory of God, and from his power, and no man was able to enter into the Temple, till the seuen plagues of the seuen Angels were fulfilled.

C H A P. X V I.

3 The Angels powre out their vials of wrath. 6 The plagues that follow thereupon.

A nd I heard a great voyce out of þ Temple, saying to þ seuen Angels, Goe your wayes, & power out the vials of the wrath of God vpon the earth.

2 And the first went, and powred out his viall vpon the earth, and there fell a noysome and grievous sore vpon the men which had the marke of the beast, and vpon them which worshipped his image.

3 And the second Angel powred out his viall vpon the sea, and it became as the blood of a dead man: and every living soule died in the sea.

4 And the third Angel powred out his vials vpon the rivers and fountaines of waters, and thy became blood.

5 And I heard the Angel of the waters say, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and waſt, and ſhalt be, because thou haſt iudged thus:

6 For they haue ſhed the blood of Saints and Prophets, and thou haſt giuen them blood to drinke for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the Altar ſay, Even ſo, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous are thy iudgements.

8 And the fourth Angel powred out his viall vpon the Sun, & power was giuen to him to ſcorche men with fire.

9 And men were ſcorched w great heat, and blaſphemed the Name of God, w hath power over these plagues: and they repented not, to giue him glory.

10 And the fifth Angel powred out his viall vpon the

R E V E L A T I O N.

the seate of the beast , and his kingdome was full of darkness; and they gnawed their tongues for paine,

11 And blasphemed the God of heauen , because of their paines , and their sores , and repented not of their deeds .

12 And the sixt Angel powred out his viall upon the great riuer Euphrates , and the water thereof was dried vp , that the way of the kings of the East might be prepared .

13 And I saw three vncleane spirits like frogges come out of the mouth of the dragon , and out of the mouth of the beast , and out of the mouth of the false prophet .

14 For they are the spirits of devils , working miracles , which goe forth vnto the kings of the earth , and of the whole world , to gather them to the battell of that great day of God Almighty .

15 Behold , I come as a thief : Blessed is hee that watcheth and keepeth his garments , lest hee walke naked and they see his shame .

16 And hee gathered them together into a place , called in the Hebrew tongue , Armageddon .

17 And the seventh Angel powred out his viall into the ayre , and there came a great voyce out of the Temple of heauen , from ſy Throne , ſaying , It is done .

18 And there were voyces and thunders , and lightnings : and there was a great earthquake , ſuch as was not ſince men were vpon the earth , ſo mighty an earthquake and ſo great .

19 And ſy great City was diuided into three parts , and the cities of the nations fell : and great Babylon came in remembrance before God , to giue vnto her the cup of the wine of the fiercenesse of his wrath .

20 And euery Island fled away , and the mountaines were not found .

21 And there fell vpon men a great haile out of heauen , every flone about the weight of a talent , and men blasphemed God , because of the plague of the haile : for the plague thereof was exceeding great .

C H A P . XVII .

3-4 A woman arrayed in scarles , with a golden cup in her hand ſitteth on the beast . 5 Which is Babylon .

A Nd there came one of the ſeven Angels , w had the ſeven vials , and talked w me , ſaying unto me , Come

C H A P. XVII.

Come hither, I will shew vnto thee the iudgment of the great whore, that sitteth vpon many waters:

2 With whom the Kings of the earth haue committed fornication, and the Inhabiters of the earth haue bin made drunke w^t the wine of her fornication.

3 So hee carried me away in the Spirit into the wildernesse: and I saw a woman sit vpon a scarlet-coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, hauing seuen heads and ten horns.

4 And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold, and precious stonye and pearlles, hauing a golden cup in her hand, full of abominations and filthinesse of her fornication.

5 And vpon her for^t head was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS, AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH.

6 And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the Saines, and with the blood of the Martyrs of Iesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration.

7 And the Angel said vnto me, Wherfore diddest thou marneile? I will tell thee the mysterie of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth her, which hath the seuen heads and ten horns.

8 The beast that thou sawest, was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the bottomleſſe pit, and goe into perdition, and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, (whose names were not written in the booke of life from the foundation of the world) when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And heere is the minde which hath wisedome, The seuen heads are seuen mountaines, on which the woman sitteth.

10 And there are seuen Kings, five are fallen, and one is, and the other is not yet come, and when he commeth, he must continue a short space.

11 And the beast that was, and is not, euen he is the eight, and is of the seuen, and goeth into perdition.

12 And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten Kings, which haue received no kynge domē as yet: but receiue power as Kings one houre with the beast.

13 These haue one minde, and shall give their power and strength vnto the beast.

REVELATION.

14 These shall make war with the Lambe, and the Lambe shall ouercome them: For hee is Lord of lords, and King of kings, and they that are with him, are called, and chosen, and faithfull.

15 And he saith vnto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And y^e ten hornes wh^e thou sawest vpon y^e beast, these shall hate the whore, & shall make her desolate & naked & shall eat her flesh, & burne her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfill his will, and to agree, and giue their kingdom vnto the beast, vntill the word of God shall be fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou sawest, is y^e great citie, which reigneth ouer the Kings of the earth.

C H A P. XVII.

2 Babylon is fallen. 4 The people of God commanded to depart out of her.

A Nd after these things, I saw another Angel come downe from heaven, having great power, and the earth was lightened with his glory.

2 And he cryed mightily w^e a strong voyce, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foole spirit, and a cage of euery vncleane and hatefull bird:

3 For all nations haue drunke of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the Kings of the earth haue committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxen rich through the abundance of her delicacies.

4 And I heard another voyce from heaven, saying, Come out of her my people, y^e ye be not partakers of her sinnes and that ye receive not of her plagues:

5 For her sinnes haue reached vnto heauen, and God hath remembred her iniquities.

6 Reward her euell as shee rewarded you, and double vnto her double according to her workes: in the cup which shee hath filled, fill to her double.

7 How much shee hath glorified her selfe, and liued deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for shee saith in her heart, I sit a queene, and am no widow, and shall see no sorrow.

8 Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine, and shee shalbe vtterly

C H A P. XVIII.

utterly burnt with fire , for strong is the Lord God , who iudgeth her .

9 And the kings of the earth who have committed fornication , and liued deliciously with her , shall bewail her , and lament for her , when they shall see the smoke of her burning :

10 Standing a far off for the feare of her torment , saying , Alas alas , that great city Babylon , that mighty city : for in one houre is thy judgement come .

11 And the merchants of the earth shall weepe and mourn ouer her , for no man buyeth their merchandize any more :

12 The merchandize of gold , and siluer , and precious stones , and of pearles , and fine linnen , and purple and filke , and scarlet , and all Thine wood and all manner vessels of yvory & all manner vessels of most pretious wood , and of brasse , and yron , and marble ,

13 And Cinamome , and odours , and oynments , and frankincense , and vine , and oyle , and fine floure , and wheate , and beasts , and sheepe , and horses , and dories , and flaues , and soules of men .

14 And the fruits that thy soule lusted after , are departed from thee , and all things which were daintie , and goodly , are departed from thee , and thou shalt find them no more at all .

15 The merchants of these things which were made rich by her , shall stand afarre off for the feare of her torment , weeping and wailing .

16 And saying , Alas alas , that great citie , that was clothed in fine linnen , and purple , and scarlet , and decked with gold , and precious stones , and pearles :

17 For in one houre so great riches is come to nought . And euery ship-master , and all the company a shippes , and sailers , and as many as trade by sea , stood afarre off .

18 And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning , saying , What citie is like vnto this great city ?

19 And they cast dust on their heads , & cried , weeping & wailing , saying , Alas alas , y great city wherein we made rich all y had shippes in the sea , by reason of her stoleneesse , for in one houre is she made desolate .

20 Rejoyce ouer her , thou heaven & ye holy Apostles and Prophets , for God hath auenged you on her .

21 And a mighty Angel tooke vp a stone like a great

R E V E L A T I O N.

great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great citie Babylon bee throwne downe, and shall be found no more at all.

22 And the voyce of harpers and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpetters, shall be heard no more at all in thee: and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft he be, shall be found any more in thee: and the sound of a milstone shall be heard no more at all in thee:

23 And the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee: and the voyce of the bridegroome and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee: for thy merchants were the great men of the earth: for thy sorceries were all nations deceived.

24 And in her was found the blood of Prophets, and of Saints, & of all that were slaine vpon the earth.

C H A P. XIX.

x God praised for iudging the whore, and avenging the blood of his Saints. 7 The marriage of the Lamb.

A Nd after these things, I heard a great voyce of much people in heauen, saying, Alleluia: salvation, and glory, and honour, and power vnto the Lord our God.

2 For true and righteous are his Judgements, for he hath iudged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath auenged the blood of his servants at her hand.

3 And againe they said, Alleluia: and her smoke rose vp for euer and euer.

4 And the fourte and twenty Elders, and the four beasts fell downe, and worshipped God that sate on the throne, saying Amen, Alleluia.

5 And a voyce came out of the throne, saying, Praise our God, all yee his seruants, and yee that fear him, both small and great.

6 And I heard as it were the voyce of a great multitude, and as the voyce of many waters, and the voyce of mighty thunderings, saying, Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

7 Let vs bee glad and reioyce, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made her selfe ready.

8 And to her was granted, that shee should bee rayed in fine linnen, cleane and white, for the fine linnen is the righteousness of Saints.

5 And

C H A P. XIX.

9 And he saith vnto mee, Write, Blessed are they that are called vnto the mariage Supper of the Lambe. And hee saith vnto mee, These are the true sayings of God.

10 And I fell at his feet to worship him : And hee said vnto mee, See thou doe it not : I am thy fellow seruant, and of thy brethren, that haue the testimony of Iesus , worship God : for the testimony of Iesus is the spirit of prophecie.

11 And I saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse, and he that sate vpon him, was called faithfull, and true, and in righteousness doeth judge and make warre.

12 His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crownes, and he had a name written, that no man knew but he himselfe.

13 And hee was cloath'd with a vesture dipt in blood, and his name is called, The word of God.

14 And the armies which were in heaven followed him vpon white horses, cloathed in fine linnen, white and cleane.

15 And out of his mouth goeth a sharpe swerd that with it he should smite the nations : and he shall rule them w^t a rod of yront and he treadeth the wine-press of the fiercenesse & wrath of Almighty God.

16 And hee hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, KING OF KINGS, AND LORD OF LORDS.

17 And I saw an Angel standing in the Sun, & he cryed with a lowd voyce, saying to all the fowles that fly in the midst of heauen, Come, and gather your selues together vnto the Supper of the great God :

18 That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captaines, & the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of herkes, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men both free and bond, both small and great.

19 And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies gathered together to make warre against him that sate on the horse, & against his army,

20 And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had receiuied the marke of the beast, and them which worshipped his image. They both were cast aliuie into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.

21 And,

REVELATION.

21 And the remnant were slaine with the sword of him that sat vpon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth, and all the fowles were filled with her flesh.

C H A P. X X.

2 Satan bound for a thousand yeeres. & The first resurrection. 12 The last and generall resurrection.

A Nd I saw an Angel come downe from heauens, having the key of the bottomlesse pit, and a great chaine in his hand.

2 And he laid hold on the dragon that old serpent, which is the deuill and Satan, and bound him a thousand yeeres,

3 And cast him into the bottomlesse pit, & shut him vp, and set a seale vpon him y he should deceiue the nations no more, till the thousand yeeres shal bee fulfilled: and after y he must be loosed a little season.

4 And I saw thrones, and they sate vpon them, and judgement was giuen vnto them: and I saw the soules of them that were beheaded for the witnesse of Iesu, and for the word of God, & which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his marke vpon their foreheads, or in their hands, and they lived & reigned with Christ a thousand yeeres.

5 But the rest of the dead liued not againe vntill the thousand yeeres were finisched. This is the first resurrection.

6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection, on such the second death hath no power, but they shall bee Priests of God, and of Christ, and shall reigne with him a thousand yeeres.

7 And when the thousand yeeres are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison;

8 And shall goe out to deceiue the nations, which are in the foure quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battell: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.

9 And they went vp on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the campe of the Saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came downe from God out of heaven, and devoured them.

10 And the deuill that deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false Prophet are, and shalbe tormented day and night for euer and euer.

11 And

C H A P. XXI.

11 And I saw a great white Throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there was found no place for them.

12 And I saw the dead, small and great stand before God, and the booke were opened : and another booke was opened, which is *the booke of life* : and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the booke, according to their workes.

13 And the Sea gave vp the dead which were in it: and death and hell delivered vp the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their workes.

14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire: this is the second death.

15 And whosoever was not found written in the booke of life, was cast into the lake of fire.

C H A P. XXI.

1 *A new heauen and a new earth, 10 The heavenly Hierusalem. 23 Shee needeth no Sunne.*

A Nd I saw a new heauen, and a new earth: for the first heauen and the first earth were passed away, and there was no more Sea.

2 And I John saw the holy citie, new Hierusalem comming downe from God out of heauen, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

3 And I heard a great voyce out of heauen, saying, Behold, the Tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shalbe his people, and God himselfe shalbe with them *and be* their God.

4 And God shall wipe away all teares from their eyes: and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there bee any more paine: for the former things are passed away.

5 And he that satte vpon the throne, said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said vnto me, Write: for these wordes are true and fauful.

6 And hee said vnto me, It is done: I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end: I will give vnto him that is a thirst, of the fountaine of the water of life freely.

7 He that overcommeth, shall inherite all things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my sonne.

8 But the fearefull and vnbelieving, and the abominable, and murthrcis, and whortmongers, and forgers,

REVELATION.

ēers, and idolaters, and all lyers, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone : which is the second death.

9 And there came vnto me one of the seuen Angels, which had the seuen vials full of the seuen last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will shew thee the Bride the Lambe's wife.

10 And he carried me away in the spirit to a great & high mountaine, & shewed me that great City the holy Hierusalem descending out of heauen from God

11 Having the glory of God : and her light was like vnto a stone, most precious, even like a Jasper stone, cleere as Crystall ;

12 And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve Angels and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel.

13 On the East three gates, on the North three gates, on the South three gates, and on the West three gates.

14 And the wall of the citie had twelve foundations: and in them the names of the twelve Apostles of the Lambe.

15 And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the citie, and the gates thereof, and the wal thereof.

16 And the citie lieth foure square, and the length is as large as the bredth : and he measured the citie with the reed twelve thousand furlongs : the length, and the bredth, and the height of it are equall.

17 And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and foure cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the Angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was of Jasper, and the citie was pure gold, like vnto cleere glasse.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the citie were garnished with all manner of precious stones. The first foundation was Jasper, the second Saphire, the third a Chalcedony, the fourth an Emzauld,

20 The fifth Sardonix, the sixt Sardius, the seuenth Chrysolite, the eighth Beryl, the ninth a Topas, the tenth a Chrysoprasus, the eleuenth a Iacinct, the twelft an Amethyst.

21 And the twelve gates were twelve pearls: e
very

C H A P. XXII.

very severall gate was of one pearle, and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transpatant glasse.

22 And I saw no Temple therein : For the Lord God Almighty, and the Lambe, are the Temple of it.

23 And the city had no need of the Sun neither of the Moone to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lambe is the light thereof.

24 And the nations of them which are sauued, shall walke in the light of it : and the Kings of the earth doe bring their glory and honour into it.

25 And the gates of it shall not bee shut at all by day : for there shall be no night there.

26 And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defileth, neither whatsoeuer worketh abomination, or maketh a lie : but they which are written in the Lambes booke of life.

C H A P. XXIII.

1 *The riuer of the water of life.* 5 *The light of the City of God is himselfe.*

And he shewed me a pure riuer of water of life, A cleare as chrystall, proceeding out of the throne of God, and of the Lambe.

2 In the middest of the street of it, and of either side of the riuer was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yeelded her fruit every moneth : and the leaues of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

3 And there shall be no more curse, but the throne of God, and of the Lambe shall bee in it, and his seruants shall serue him.

4 And they shall see his face , and his Name shall be in their foreheads.

5 And there shall bee no night there , and they need no candle , neither light of the Sunne , for the Lord God giueth them light , and they shall reigne for euer and euer.

6 And hee said vnto mee, These sayings are faithfully and true. And the Lord God of the holy Prophets sent his Angel , to shew vnto his seruants the things which must shortly be done.

7 Behold, I come quickly : blessed is he that keepeþ the sayings of the prophecie of this booke.

8 And

R E V E L A T I O N.

8 And I John saw these things, and heard them, And when I had heard and seen, I fell downe, to worship before the feet of the Angel, which shewed me these things.

9 Then saith he vnto me, See thou doe it not; for I am thy fellow servant, and of thy brethren the Prophets, and of them which keepe the sayings of this booke: worship God.

10 And he saith vnto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophesie of this booke: for the time is at hand.

11 He that is vnjust, let him bee unjust still: and hee which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him bee righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still.

12 And behold, I come quickly, and my rewards with mee, to give every man according as his work shall be.

13 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last.

14 Blessed are they that doe his commandement, that they may haue right to the tree of life, and may enter in thorow the gates into the city.

15 For without are dogges, and faycerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever longeth and maketh a lie.

16 I Jesus haue sent mine Angel to testifie unto you these things in the Churches. I am the root and off-spring of David, & the bright & morning Star.

17 And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him that heareth, say, Come. And let him that is athirst, come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

18 For I testifie vnto every man that heareth the words of the prophesie of this booke, If any man shall add vnto these things, God shall adde vnto him the plagues, that are written in this booke.

19 And if any man shall take away from the words of the booke of this prophesie, God shall take away his part out of this booke of life, & out of the holy City, and from the things which are written in this booke.

20 He which testifieth these things, saith, Surely, I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come Lord Jesus.

21 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all, Amen.

F I N I S,

them,
e, to
newed

t not:
en the
ings of

ings of
hand.
I : and
ne that
ne that

ward's
work

ng and

ments,
and may

, and
rs, and

the VINE
not and
g Star.
. And
m that
ake the

with the
in shall
im the

words
e away
y City,
books.
urely,
s.
ge with